

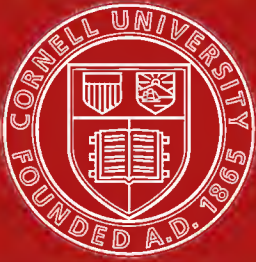


OLIN  
PB  
2121  
S89  
1909a

CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



3 1924 068 919 905



# Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in  
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in  
the United States on the use of the text.











PUBLICATIONS OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER

CELTIC SERIES

No. I.

*An Introduction to Early Welsh*

SHERRATT & HUGHES

Publishers to the Victoria University of Manchester

Manchester: 34 Cross Street

London: 33 Soho Square W.

AN  
INTRODUCTION  
TO  
EARLY WELSH

BY  
THE LATE JOHN STRACHAN, LL.D.,  
*Professor of Greek and Lecturer in Celtic  
in the University of Manchester*

MANCHESTER  
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS  
1909

UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER PUBLICATIONS  
No. XL.

## PREFACE

---

THIS book is the outcome of the courses of lectures on Welsh grammar and literature given by the late Professor Strachan at the University of Manchester during the sessions 1905-6 and 1906-7. Indeed, the Grammar is in the main an expansion of notes made for these lectures. For the numerous quotations from early Welsh literature contained in the Grammar, as well as for the Reader, Strachan made use not only of published texts, notably those edited by Sir John Rhys and Dr. J. Gwenogvryn Evans, but also of photographs specially taken for the purpose, and of advance proofs of the edition of the *White Book* and of the photographic facsimile of the *Black Book of Chirk*, about to be published by Dr. Evans, both of which were lent by him to Strachan. The Reader includes Middle Welsh Texts selected as likely to be of most value for illustration or of special interest. The very valuable work done by Dr. Evans in relation to these texts was of the greatest assistance to Professor Strachan, and as an expression of gratitude for the help thus given, as well as in recognition of the services rendered to Welsh scholarship by Dr. Evans, it was the intention of the author to dedicate his book to him.

The idea of working up his notes into a book that might serve as an introduction to the study of older Welsh seems first to have occurred to Strachan in the spring of 1907. On the fifth of April he wrote to Mr. R. I. Best, the Secretary of the School of Irish Learning in Dublin: "I have been thinking of drawing up a little primer of Early Welsh. With that the language of Middle-Welsh prose should be child's play

to learn. However, that may or may not come off.” And to his old friend Dr. P. Giles of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, he wrote on the same day: “I think I must draw up and print outlines of Middle-Welsh grammar. I cannot well teach without some book, and the beginner is lost in the wilderness of the *Grammatica Celtica*.” His original intention evidently was to publish a mere sketch of the grammar, somewhat like his *Old-Irish Paradigms*. But at the suggestion of his friend and colleague, Professor T. F. Tout, he decided to expand the Grammar on the larger and fuller lines of the present volume. At the same time the plan of adding a Reader of excerpts from mediæval Welsh literature took concrete shape in the course of conversations and correspondence with Dr. Evans. On both these tasks he began to work during the Summer Term of 1907. With what amazing rapidity he must have toiled to have all but completed the work by the end of the following August! Giving up a visit to Germany to which he had long been looking forward, he devoted the whole long vacation to the preparation and printing of his book. At the moment of his death, on the 25th of September, both the Grammar and Reader were in type, and he had read a first, and in some cases a second, proof. Writing to Professor Thurneysen a week before his death, he says that he had then only the notes and vocabulary to add.

After Professor Strachan’s death, at the request of the Publications Committee of the Manchester University, Professor Kuno Meyer of the University of Liverpool kindly undertook the task of reading final proofs of the Grammar and Reader, and of adding a Glossary, an Index and a list of contents. In this task, which involved very considerable labour, he obtained the assistance of Mr. Timothy Lewis, who had worked for two years under Professor Strachan, and who returned

from Berlin whither he had gone to continue his studies with Professor Zimmer, and devoted the winter to help with the completion of the book. Mr. Lewis verified the quotations in the Grammar where this was possible; drew up the Glossary, prepared the Index, and revised proofs. An old student of Professor Meyer's, the Rev. Owen Eilian Owen, placed his collection of Old and Middle-Welsh words at his disposal for the elucidation of rare and difficult vocables, while both Mr. Owen and Mr. J. Glyn Davies read proofs of the whole book, many valuable suggestions being due to them. But Professor Meyer and Mr. Lewis are solely responsible for the Glossary.

There can be no doubt that if Strachan had lived to complete the book himself, he would have made alterations and additions in several places both in the Grammar and Reader, and would have still further normalised the spelling in his critical versions of sections IV. and V. in the Reader. It will be observed that his treatment of the texts varies greatly. Except in the sections just mentioned, he does not seem to have aimed so much at the construction of a critical text as at the presentation of a clear, precise, and intelligible version, which would at the same time serve to introduce the student to the characteristic features of Middle Welsh orthography. In the Corrigenda some necessary emendations<sup>1</sup> have been indicated by Professor Meyer

1. From a collation of the poems printed from the Red Book with the original, it appears that the following corrections should be made :—

P. 233, l. 4, *for dŏg read dŏng*

ib., l. 19, *for aghaeat read agkaeat*

P. 235, l. 29, *for gŏawr read gŏaŏr*

P. 236, l. 2, *for can read kan*

P. 237, l. 22, *for uvulldaŏt read uvulltaŏt*

P. 238, l. 9, *for dyrnaŏt read dyrnnaŏt*

ib., l. 11, *for diffirth read diffyrth*

ib., l. 18, *for vedissyawt read vedyssyaŏt*

ib., l. 20, *for adneil read atneil*

who has also added some further variants (marked *a*, *b*, &c.) in the foot-notes.

Strachan had left behind no material for the Glossary except a first rough list of words. In drawing it up use was made of a letter to Thurneysen, in which he expressed his intention to arrange the words according to their actual sounds. His only doubts were about the phonetic value of final *c*, *t*, *p*. On this point he wrote: "Of course final *b* is common, also certain of my texts write *d* for *d*. But none of them have *g* for final *g*." In accordance with modern pronunciation, Professor Meyer considered it desirable to substitute the letter *g*, though the period at which final *c* became voiced has not yet been established.

No notes to the texts were found among Strachan's papers. He had brought back from Peniarth, from MSS. No. 22, 44, 45, and 46, a large number of variants to the Story of Lear and that of Arthur, which he would no doubt have used for his notes. Those to Lear have been printed in an Appendix; but the Peniarth versions of Arthur seem to differ so much from those of the *Red Book* and the Additional MS. 19,709 that they would have to be printed in full.

Since the great work of Zeuss, this is the first attempt to write a grammar of Early Welsh on historical principles. It was the hope of the author expressed in letters to friends that his work would stir up Welsh scholars to investigate more thoroughly than they have done hitherto the history of their language. But no one was more conscious of the gaps still left by his work than Strachan himself. "It is only a beginning," he wrote to Thurneysen. "I hope people will make some allowance for the difficulties of the work and the scanty amount of trustworthy material. One is continually finding out something new." References to the need of further investigation will be found in many places throughout the Grammar. His own discoveries



of the functions of *ry*, of the relative forms of the verb, and his account of the uses of the verbal prefixes *a* and *yδ* point out the way to future investigators in this neglected field of research. To these discoveries he was led by his unrivalled knowledge of Irish grammar, so intimately connected in its origins with that of Welsh that he believed no true progress possible without their parallel study. "It is absurd to think," he once wrote to Mr. Best, "that either branch of Celtic can be satisfactorily studied apart from the other;" and to Mr. Giles: "Without the knowledge of Irish early Welsh grammar is rather like a book sealed with seven seals."

The circumstances under which this book has been produced having been thus indicated, it remains to express acknowledgement of the work of the scholars who have contributed towards the result: first to those whose assistance to Professor Strachan in his lifetime he would specially have desired to recognise; in particular to Dr. Evans who furnished the editions both published and unpublished of the Welsh texts which were used in compiling the Reader; to the late Mr. Wynne of Peniarth who freely gave access to the MSS. in his possession; and to Sir John Rhys (joint editor of the *Red Book* and of other texts) and to the Fellows of Jesus College, Oxford, who afforded every facility in their power; secondly to those who since the author's death have enabled his work to be presented to the public, especially to Professor Tout who initiated the idea of preparing the book for publication and undertook the arrangements for it; to Professor Kuno Meyer, whose long and intimate association with Strachan in his Celtic studies specially fitted him to undertake the duty of revising the whole work and seeing it through the press; to Mr. Lewis in assisting Professor Meyer particularly in the preparation

of the Glossary; and to Mr. O. Eilian Owen and Mr. J. Glyn Davies for their help in reading proofs. The title of the book was chosen by Strachan himself.

It has been the earnest wish of those who have taken part in preparing this work for publication that it should appear in a form worthy of the reputation and memory of the distinguished scholar whose career was cut short so sadly in the midst of his full literary activity, and that the results of his devoted labours and profound learning should not be lost to students of the Welsh language.

*February, 1909.*

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
Preface - - - - -	v
List of Abbreviations - - - - -	xv

## GRAMMAR

The numbers refer to the paragraphs.

### Sounds and sound changes 1—22.

Vowels and diphthongs 1; vowel quantity 2; accented vowels 2A; unaccented 2A; consonants classified 3; orthographical variations 3; accent 4; changes of vowels 5; changes of vowels due to *i* vowel preserved 6; changes due to a lost vowel 7; vowel variation due to accent 8; prothetic vowel 9; epenthetic vowel 10; consonantal changes 11; sound changes within the sentence 12; table of consonant mutations 13; vocalic mutation or lenation 14; general exceptions to rules of lenation 15; lenation of noun and adjective 16; lenation of pronoun 17; lenation of verb 18; nasal mutation 19-20; spirant mutation 21; *h* in sentence construction 22.

### The Article 23-24.

### The Noun 25-29.

Numbers and cases 25; syntax of the cases 26; formation of plural 27-28; collective nouns 29.

### The Adjective 30—39.

Gender 30; formation of plural 31; concord 32; number 33; order in sentence 34; predicative noun and adjective with *yn* 35; adjectival phrases 36; comparison 37; construction of comparative and superlative 38; the equative 39.

### The Adverb 40.

### The Numerals 41—44.

Cardinals and ordinals 41; syntax of cardinals and ordinals 42; distributives 43; multiplicatives 44.

### The Pronoun 45—90.

Personal pron. 45—51; independent pron. 45—47; infixed pron. 48—51; pron. with preposition 52—54; possessive pron. 55-56; possessive adjs. 57—59; *hun*, *human* etc. 60; demons. pron. 61-62; article + substantive + adverb 63; indefinite prons. and adjs. 64—72; substantives in a pronominal function 73—78; interrog. prons. 79—81; relat. prons. 82—89; expression of case in the relative 86—89; substitutes for the relative 90.

## Preverbal particles 91—97.

The particle *yd* 91—94; the particle *ry* 95—97.

## The Verb 98—161.

Conjugation of the verb 98—126: verbal classes 98; voice 99; number 100—101; person 102—3.

The moods 104; the indicative 105—109; present 106; imperfect 107; preterite 108; pluperfect 109.

The subjunctive 110—114: formation of subj. 110; tenses 111; usages of subj. 112—114.

The imperative 115.

The participle passive in *-edic* 116; verbal in *-adwy* 117.

The verbal noun: formation of 118—119; usage 120—126.

Paradigm of the regular verb 127—139: types 127; pres. and fut. indic. 128—130; imperf. indic. and conditional 131; pret. and perf. indic. act. 132; pret. and perf. indic. pass. 134; plupf. indic. 135—136; imperat. 137; pres. subjunctive 138; past subj. 139.

Irregular verbs: *mynet* 140; *dyvot* 141; *gwneuthur* 142; *gwybot* 143; *adnabot* 144; *caffel* 145; *rodi* 146; *tawr* 147; *moes* 148; *hwde* 149; *med* 150; *heb* 151.

The substantive verb: paradigm 152; remarks on subst. vb. 154; on copula 155—158; position of copula 159.

Compounds of *bot* 160—161.

## The Preposition 162—197.

## The Conjunction 198—234.

## Negative particles 235—238.

## Interrogative particles 239—240.

## Responsive particles 240—241.

## The Interjection 243—244.

## READER

	PAGE
I. Lear and his Daughters	139
From <i>Ystorya Brenhined y Brytanyeit</i> , printed in <i>Red Book of Hergest</i> , ed. J. Rhŷs and J. G. Evans, vol. ii, pp. 64—69. The variants are from Brit. Mus. MSS. Add. 19,709.	
II. The Story of Arthur	145
From the same source, pp. 184—232.	
III. The Hunting of Twrch Trwyth	193
An excerpt from the story of <i>Kulhwch and Olwen</i> . Chapters 1—6 are from the <i>White Book of Rhydderch</i> (Peniarth MS. 4), with variants from the <i>Red Book</i> (Rhŷs-Evans, vol. i, pp. 126—128); chapters 7—25 from the <i>Red Book</i> (ib. p. 128, l. 13—p. 142, l. 19).	

IV. The Procedure in a Suit for Landed Property	208
From the oldest copy of the Laws of Howel Dda contained in the <i>Black Book of Chirk</i> (Peniarth MS. 29). The variants are from Aneurin Owen's <i>Ancient Laws of Wales</i> , vol. i, pp. 142—156. The text in the right-hand columns is a critical edition with normalised spelling by Strachan.	
V. The Privilege of St. Teilo	222
From Evans-Rhŷs, <i>Liber Landavensis</i> , p. 118. The text in the right-hand columns is a critical edition with normalised spelling by Strachan.	
VII. Moral Verses	225
From the <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1031, printed in Skene's <i>Four Ancient Books of Wales</i> , vol. ii, pp. 249—250.	
VII. Doomsday	227
From the Book of Taliessin, printed in <i>Four Ancient Books</i> , vol. ii, pp. 118—123. Strachan has made no use of the variants printed in <i>Myvyrian Archaeology</i> , p. 72 ff.	
VIII. To Gwenwynwyn	233
From the <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1394, where it comes after several poems ascribed to Llywelyn Vardd; printed in <i>Myvyrian Archaeology</i> , p. 176a, where it is ascribed to Cynddelw.	
IX. Cynddelw to Rhys ab Gruffudd	234
(a) from <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , ed. J. G. Evans, fo. 39b; (b) from <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1436.	
X. A Religious Poem	237
From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 20a, and from <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1159.	
XI. A Dialogue between Ugnach Uab Mydno and Taliessin	239
From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 51a.	
XII. Winter	241
From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 45a.	
Glossary	243
Appendix	277
Index	279
Corrigenda	293



## LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

- Anc. Laws. Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales, edited by Aneurin Owen. 1841.
- Arch. Archiv für celtische Lexikographie.
- Arch. Cambr. Archaeologia Cambrensis.
- BB. Black Book of Carmarthen, edited by J. G. Evans. Oxford. 1888.
- BCh. Black Book of Chirk.<sup>1</sup>
- Bezz. Beitr. Bezzenberger's Beiträge zur Kunde der indogermanischen Sprachen.
- Bret. Breton.
- CM. Ystorya de Carolo Magno, from the Red Book of Hergest, edited by Thomas Powell. 1883.
- Corn. Cornish.
- Cymrod. Y Cymmrodor, embodying the Transactions of the Cymmrodorion Society of London. 1877 ff.
- CZ. Zeitschrift für celtische Philologie.
- E. Lh. Archæologia Britannica, by Edward Lhuyd. Oxford. 1707.
- Eng. English.
- Eriu The Journal of the School of Irish Learning, Dublin.
- FB. The Four Ancient Books of Wales by W. F. Skene. Edinburgh. 1868.
- Gaul. Gaulish.
- Hg. Selections from the Hengwrt Mss. edited by Robert Williams, vol. I. 1876 ; vol. II. London. 1892.
- Ir. Irish.
- KZ. Kuhn's Zeitschrift für vergleichende Sprachforschung.
- LA. The Elucidarium and other tracts in Welsh from Llyvyr Agkyr Llandewivrevi, edited by J. Morris Jones and John Rhys. Oxford. 1894.

1. The references in the Grammar are to the pages of the photographic facsimile about to be published by J. G. Evans.

Lat. Latin.

Laws, see Anc. Laws.

Leg. Wall. Cyfreithjeu Hywel Dda ac eraill, seu Leges Wallicae,  
edited by W. Wotton. Londini. 1730.

Lhuyd, see E. Lh.

Lib. Land. Liber Landavensis, edited by J. G. Evans and  
J. Rhŷs. Oxford. 1893.

Loth Mab. Les Mabinogion traduits en entier par J. Loth.  
Paris. 1889.

MA. The Myvyrian Archaeology of Wales. Denbigh. 1870.

Mart. Cap. The Old-Welsh Glosses on Martianus Capella edited  
by Wh. Stokes in the *Archaeologia Cambrensis* for 1873,  
p. 1 ff. and in *Beiträge zur vergl. Sprachforschung* VII.  
p. 385 ff.

Mid. Middle.

Mod. Modern.

O. Old.

Ox. gl. Glossae Oxonienses, edited in Zeuss-Ebel, *Grammatica  
Celtica*, p. 1052 ff. Berlin. 1871.

Pughe A Dictionary of the Welsh Language by W. Owen Pughe.  
2. ed. Denbigh. 1832.

RB. The Red Book of Hergest edited by J. Rhŷs and J. G.  
Evans, vol. I. (Mabinogion), Oxford. 1887; vol. II.  
(The Bruts), Oxford. 1890.

Rev. Celt. Revue Celtique.

Rhŷs, Celt. Heath. J. Rhŷs, Lectures on the Origin and Growth  
of Religion as illustrated by Celtic Heathendom. 3. ed.  
1898.

Rhŷs, Lect. J. Rhŷs, Lectures on Welsh Philology. 2. ed.  
London. 1879.

WB. The White Book of Rhydderch.<sup>1</sup>

1. The references in the Grammar are to the pages of the edition  
about to be published by J. G. Evans.



## SOUNDS AND SOUND-CHANGES.

### VOWELS AND DIPHTHONGS.

I. Middle Welsh has the following system :—

Vowels :—**a, e, i, o, u, w, y.**

Diphthongs :—**ae, oe, ei, eu, aw, ew, iw, yw, wy.**

NOTE.—The following are the more important orthographical variations :

(a) **u** is written **u** or **v**, e.g. **un** or **vn** *one*. That **u** already in O.W. approached to an **i** sound is shown by the spelling **Dinoot** (from Lat. **Donatus**) in Bede for what in O.W. would be normally **Dunaut**, later **Dunawt**.

(b) **w** (= **u** in sound) is in Mid.W. commonly written **w** or **6**; in O.W. it is written **u**, and in some Mid.W. MSS. **u** or **v**, e.g. O.W. **crunn** *round*, later **crunn**, **crvnn**, **cr6nn**, **crwnn**. The same applies to **w** in diphthongs, e.g. O.W. **dui** *two*, later **duy**, **dvý**, **d6y**, **dwy**; O.W. **bleu** *hair*, later **bleu**, **bleu**, **bleu**.

(c) **y** is in O.W. written **i**, in Mid.W. MSS. **i**, **e**, **ý**, **y**, e.g. O.W. **hinn** *these*, later **henn**, **hýnn**, **hynn**.

(d) The diphthongs **ae**, **oe**, are in O.W. **ai**, **oi**, later **ai**, **ay**, **ae**; **oi**, **oy**, **oe**, e.g. O.W. **air** *slaughter*, later **ayr**, **ayr**, **aer**; O.W. **coit** *wood*, later **coýt**, **coyt**, **coet**.

(e) The diphthong **eu** appears in O.W. as **ou**, e.g. **aperthou** *offerings*, later **abertheu**. In final position in Mid.W. **-eu** sometimes appears as **-e**, e.g. **minhe** *on my part* = **minheu**; in Mod.W. it is written **-au**, e.g. **pennau** *heads* = Mid.W. **pennneu**.

(f) For **wy**, **oy** and **oe** are also found, e.g. **boý** = **bwy** *he may be*, **moe** = **mwý** *greater*.

### VOWEL QUANTITY.

2. The quantity of vowels depends not on their prehistoric quantity, but on the nature of the syllables in which they stand. Apart from dialectal variation, the following may serve as approximate rules, at least for the period subsequent to the shifting of the accent (§ 4).

## A. Accented vowels are :—

## (a) Long.

(α) In monosyllables ending in a vowel, e.g. **tŷ** *house*.(β) In monosyllables ending in a single consonant, e.g. **dŷn** *man* (= O.Ir. *duine*), **gwlād** *country* (= O.Ir. *flaith*), **māb** *son*, **glān** *pure* (= O.Ir. *glan*), **glās** *green* (= O.Ir. *glas*), **crŷch** *curly*.

NOTE.—**s** always goes back to an earlier **ss**; **ch**, **th**, **ff** (= **f** in sound) to an earlier double consonant, e.g. **crŷch** *curly* = Gaul. *Crixos*, *brith* *variegated* = Ir. *mrecht*, *clōff* *lame* = Low Lat. *cloppus*; here the reduction to a single consonant was prior to the operation of the above law. In Mod.W. a vowel is short before final **c**, **t**, **p**; these final sounds occur only in late borrowings.

(b) Half-long, in open syllables of polysyllabic words, e.g. **dī-nas** *city*: **dīn** *fortress* (= Ir. *dūn*), **tā-deu** *fathers*: **tād** *father*.

## (c) Short.

(α) In monosyllables originally ending in a double consonant (with the above exceptions), e.g. **pěnn** *head* (= Ir. *cenn*), **trŷm** *heavy* (= Ir. *tromm*), **pārth** *part* (from Lat. *part-em*).(β) In closed syllables of polysyllabic words, e.g. **pěnn** *heads*: **pěnn**, **ūndeb** *unity*: **ūn** *one* (= Ir. *ōen*). The vowel is somewhat shorter in polysyllables like **penneu** than in monosyllables like **penn**.

B. Unaccented vowels are short. This rule also applies to proclitic words like **heb** *without*, **fy** *mine*, **dy** *thine*.

## THE CONSONANTS.

## 3. The consonants may be classified :—

	Explosives.		Spirants.		Nasals.	
	Voiceless.	Voiced.	Voiceless.	Voiced.	Voiceless.	Voiced.
Gutturals	<b>c</b>	<b>g</b>	<b>ch</b>	(3)	<b>ngh</b>	<b>ng</b> (= <i>ŋ</i> )
Dentals	<b>t</b>	<b>d</b>	<b>th</b>	<b>ð</b>	<b>nh</b>	<b>n</b>
Labiodentals			<b>ff</b> (= <b>f</b> )	<b>v</b>		
Labials	<b>p</b>	<b>b</b>			<b>mh</b>	<b>m</b>

Liquids. Voiceless :—ll, rh; voiced :—l, r.

Semivowels :—y, w.

Sibilant :—s.

Breath :—h.

NOTE.—The following are the more important orthographical variations :—

(a) For O.W. c = k, both c and k found in Mid.W., c particularly at the end of a word; e.g. O.W. *cimadas fitting*, Mid.W. *kyvadas* and *cyvadas*. In Mid.W. sc, sp became sg, sb, e.g. *kysgu* by *kyscu* to *sleep*, *ysbryd* from Lat. *spiritus*.

(b) With regard to the graphic representation of the mediæ the following may be noted. In Old British the symbols c, t, p were taken over from Latin with their Latin values. In the course of time, before the loss of final syllables, c, t, p, when they stood between vowels, or after a vowel and before certain consonants, became in sound mediæ g, d, b, but continued in O.W. to be usually written c, t, p, e.g. *trucarauc compassionate* = Mid.W. *trugarawc*, Mod.W. *trugarog*, *dacr tear* = Mid.W. *dagyr*, *atar birds* = Mid.W. *adar*, *datl gl. foro* = Mid.W. *dadyl*, *etn bird* = Mid.W. *edyn*, *cepistyr halter* (from Lat. *capistrum*) = Mid.W. *kebystyr*. In Mid.W. g, d, b are regularly written in the interior of a word (except that c, t, p may appear in composition, e.g. *rac-ynys fore-island*, *kyt-varchogyon fellow-horsemen*, *hep-cor to dispense with*, or in inflexion and derivation under the influence of the simple word, e.g. *gwlatoed*, by *gwladoed countries*: *gwlat*, *gwaet-lyt bloody*: *gwaet*). But final g is regularly expressed by c, and final d by t (except in certain MSS. such as BB. which express d regularly by d and use t to express the spirant *đ*). Final p for b is not so universal; there are found, e.g. *pawp*, *pop*, *everyone*, *every* by *pawb*, *pob*, and *mab son*, *heb said*.

(c) The spirant f is in O.W. written f, and this orthography survives in Mid.W., but the usual Mid.W. symbol is ff or ph. In O.W. the tenuis is sometimes traditionally written for the spirant, e.g. *cilcet gl. tapiseta* (from Lat. *culcita*) = Mod.W. *cylched*.

(d) With regard to the graphic representation of the voiced spirants the following may be noted. g, d, b, m were taken from Latin with their Latin values. In time, between vowels and before and after certain consonants, they became spirants ȝ, đ, v, but continued to be written g, d, b, m, e.g. *scamnegint gl. levant* = later *ysgavneynt*, *colginn gl. aristam* = Mod.W. *colyn sting*, *cimadas fitting* = Mod.W. *cyfaddas*, *abal apple* = later *aval*. In O.W. the spirant g had already been lost in part, e.g. *nertheint gl. armant* by *scamnegint*, *tru wretched* = Ir. *truag wretched*. In Mid.W. the spirant g has disappeared. The spirant đ, which in Mod.W. is written dd, is in Mid.W. usually expressed by d, e.g. *rodi to give* = Mod.W. *rhoddi*, except in certain MSS. such as BB. which use the symbol t, e.g. *roti* = *rhoddi*. The spirant v in Mid.W. is written u, uu, v, fu, f, the last particularly at the end of a word, (e.g. *cyuadas*, *cyvadas*, *cyfuadas*, *cyfadas fitting* = O.W. *cimadas*, Mod.W. *cyfaddas*), in Mod.W. f; in certain MSS. however, such as BB. it is expressed by w, e.g. *calaw reeds* = *calaf*. In O.W. final v has been already lost in part, e.g. *lau hand* = Ir. *lām*, and in the course of time it tends more and more to disappear, e.g. in Mid.W. the superlative ending -af appears also as -a.

(e) The guttural nasals *ng* (i.e. *ŋ* as in Eng. *sing*) and *ngh* are often written *g* and *gh*, e.g. *llog*=*llong ship*, *agheu death*=*angheu*.

(f) The voiceless *l* is in O.W. written *l* at the beginning of a word, e.g. *lau hand*=Mid.W. *llaw*, elsewhere *ll*, e.g. *mellhionou gl. violas*. In Mid.W. it is in all positions written *ll* or *ll*. For the voiceless *r*=Mod.W. *rh*, Early Welsh has no special symbol; it is written *r*.

(g) The semivowel *y* is in O.W. written *i*, e.g. *iechuit gl. sanitas*, *mellhionou gl. violas*: in Mid.W. it is expressed by *i*, e.g. *ieith speech*, or *y*, e.g. *engyllyon angels*. In the initial combinations *hw* (from an earlier *sv*), which in Mid.W. appears as *chw* or dialectally as *hw*, and *gw* (from an earlier *w*), *w* is in O.W. expressed by *u*, e.g. *hui you*=Mid.W. *chwi*, *guin wine* (from Lat. *vinum*)=Mid.W. *gwin*; in Mid.W. it is commonly written *o*, *w*, but in some MSS. *u*, *v*, e.g. *gōynn*, *guynn*, *gvynn white*; but in Mid.W. O.W. initial *guo-* becomes *go-*. In other positions in Mid.W. *w* is expressed by *o*, *w*, sometimes by *u*, *uu*, *v*; here it comes from O.W. *gu*, e.g. O.W. *neguid new*=Mid.W. *newyd*, *neuyd*, *neuuyd*, *nevyd*, O.W. *petguar four*=Mid.W. *petwar*, *petuar*, *petvar*. It is to be noted that initial *gw* from an earlier *w* does not form a syllable even before a consonant; thus *gwlad country* from *\*ulatis*=Ir. *flaith kingdom* is monosyllabic.

#### THE ACCENT.

4. In accented words in Mod.W. the accent, with certain exceptions, falls on the penult, e.g. *pechádur sinner*, *tragywyddol eternal*. This accentuation, however, has replaced an earlier system which was common to all the British dialects and is still preserved in the Breton dialect of Vannes, according to which the accent fell on the last syllable, e.g. *parawt ready*. The effect of this earlier accentuation is seen in the weakening of vowels in syllables that according to the later system would have borne the accent, e.g. *pechadúr sinner* from Lat. *peccātōrem*: *pechawt sin* from Lat. *peccātum*, O.W. *Dimét*, Mid.W. *Dyvet*: *Demetae*, O.W. *hinhám*, Mid.W. *hynhaf oldest*: *hen old*, Mid.W. *llynghes fleet*: *llong ship*, O.W. *cilchét*, Mid.W. *cylchet* from Lat. *culcita*, Mid.W. *drysseu doors*: *drws door*. The date of the change of accent has not yet been accurately fixed; with it seems to be connected the change of *aw* to *o* in final syllables, e.g. Mid.W. *pechawt*=Mod.W. *pechod*, of which there are sporadic instances in early Mid.W., e.g. *rýmdýwod* (= *rym dywawt*), BB. 28<sup>a</sup> 13.

## CHANGES OF VOWELS.

## Changes due to a vowel which follows or which originally followed.

5. The quality of a vowel is liable to be influenced by the vowel of the following syllable. Sometimes the infecting vowel remains, e.g. *Ceredic* from Old British *Coroticus*, *eyt goes* = O.W. *egit* by O.W. *agit*, *menegi to show* by *managaf I show*. Sometimes the infecting vowel has been lost, e.g. *trom f.* by *trwm m. heavy* from *\*trummā*, *\*trummos* (where it will be seen that the short vowel of the masculine exerted no influence, while the long vowel of the feminine did), *brein ravens* (by *bran raven*) from *\*branī*, earlier *\*branoi*, *cyrn horns* (by *corn horn*) from *\*cornī*, earlier *\*cornoi*, *dreic dragon* (by pl. *dragon*) from *\*dracī*, from *\*dracū* from Lat. *dracō*, *ceint I sing* (by *cant he sang*) from *\*cantī*, from *\*cantū*, from *\*cantō*, *Meir* from Lat. *Māria*, *yspeil spoil* from Lat. *spolium*. The infection may extend back more than one syllable e.g. *menegi: managaf, deveit sheep: davat a sheep*. The following are the changes of the kind which are important for inflection:—

A. CHANGES DUE TO AN *i* VOWEL PRESERVED.

6. *a > e*, e.g. *ederyn a bird: adar birds, peri to cause: paraf I cause, edewis he promised: adaw to promise, cerit was loved: caru to love, llewenyd, O.W. leguenid joy: llawen joyous*.  
*ae > ei*, e.g. *meini stones: maen stone, seiri artisans: saer*.

## B. CHANGES DUE TO A LOST VOWEL.

7. (a) The lost vowel is *ā*.  
*y > e*, e.g. *berr f.: byrr m. short*. The variation in *brith*, f. *braith variegated* is of the same kind; *brith* comes from *\*mric̄tos*, *braith* from *\*mrectā*, *\*mric̄tā*.  
*w > o*, e.g. *trom f.: trwm m. heavy*.  
 (b) The lost vowel is *ī* (of various origin).  
*a > ei*, e.g. *meib sons: mab son, meneich monks: manach*

*monk; geill is able: gallaf I am able, gweheird he forbids: gwahardaf I forbid, ceint I sang: cant he sang.*

*ae > ei, e.g. mein stones: maen stone, Seis Saxon (from \*Saxī, \*Saxū, Saxō): Saeson (from Saxōnes).*

*Final aw > eu, y, e.g. teu is silent: tawaf I am silent, edeu, edey, edy leaves: adawaf I leave.*

*e > y, e.g. hyn older: hen old, cestyll castles: castell castle, gwyl sees: gwelaf I see, gweryt helps: gwaret to help.*

*o > y, e.g. pyrth gates: porth gate, escyb bishops: escob bishop, tyrr breaks: torraf I break, egyr opens: agoraf I open, try turns: troaf I turn.*

*oe > wy, e.g. wyn lambs (from \*ognī): oen lamb (from \*ognos).*

*w > y, e.g. bylch gaps: bwlch gap, yrch roebucks: ywrch roebuck.*

NOTE 1.—In the 3 sg. pres. indic. act. of the verb the prehistoric ending is uncertain; *geill* might come phonetically from either \**gallit* or \**gallyet*. In verbs containing radical *o*, infection is found only in the 3 sg. pres. indic. act., e.g. *tyrr he breaks*, but *torri to break*, *torrynt they broke*, *torrir is broken*. In shaping the conjugation of these verbs analogy seems to have played a large part, but the details of the development are obscure.

NOTE 2.—It will be observed that in the case of *i* infection the infection extends back to a preceding *a*, e.g. *deveit, edewis, egyr*.

NOTE 3.—There is also a variation between *ae* and *eu, ei*, e.g. *caer city: pl. ceuryd, ceuryd; aeth he went: euthum I went*.

### Vowel Variation due to Accent.

8. Celtic *ā* became in British *ō*; the *ō* stage is seen in Bede's *Dinoot* from Lat. *Donātus*, and in early Irish loanwords which came from Latin through Britain, e.g. *trindōit Trinity* from Lat. *trinitātem*. In Welsh, during the period of the older accentuation this *ō* became in accented syllables *aw*, e.g. *Dunawđ, trindawđ*, in unaccented syllables *o*. To this are due variations like O.W. *cloriou* gl. *tabellae*: sg. *clawr*, Mid.W. *marchogyon* *horsemen*: *marchawc* *horseman*, *moli to praise*: *mawl praises*, and the proclitic *pob every* (= Ir. *cäch*): accented *pawb everyone* (= Ir. *cäch*). After the shifting of the accent from the ultima to the penult, *aw* in accented words of more than one syllable became *o*,

e.g., Mod.W. *márchog* = Mid.W. *marchawc*, but Mod.W. *paŵb* = Mid.W. *paŵb*. For other instances of vowel weakening in unaccented syllables see § 4.

#### PROTHETIC VOWEL.

9. Before words which in O.W. began with *s* + consonant there developed in the Mid.W. period a prothetic *y*, e.g. *ysgriven* *writing*: O.W. *scribenn*, *ystavell* *chamber*: O.W. *stabell*, *ystrodur* *packsaddle*: O.W. *strotur*, *yspeil* *spoil*: O.W. *\*speil*, from Lat. *spolium*.

#### EPENTHETIC VOWEL.

10. Before a final liquid, nasal, or *v*, an epenthetic vowel is often written, which, however, does not count metrically as a syllable.

(a) Consonant + *l*, e.g. *mynwgyl* by *mynwgl* *neck* = Mod.W. *mynwgl*; *kenedel*, *kenedyl* by *kenedl* *race* = O.W. *cenetl*, Mod.W. *enedl*; *kwbwl*, *kwbyl* by *kwbl* *whole* = Mod.W. *cwbl*; *tavyl* *sling* = Mod.W. *tafl*.

(b) Consonant + *r*, e.g. *hagyr* by *hagr* *ugly* = Mod.W. *hagr*; *lleidyr* by *lleidr* *robber* = Mod.W. *lleidr*; *llestyr* *vessel* = O.W. *llestr*, *llestir*, Mod.W. *llestr*; *dwvyr*, *dwvwr* by *dwvr* *water* = Mod.W. *dwfr*.

(c) Consonant + *m*, e.g. *talym* *space* = Mod.W. *talm*.

(d) Consonant + *n*, e.g. *gwadyn* by *gwadn* *sole* = Mod.W. *gwadn*; *dwvyn* *deep* = Mod.W. *dwfn*.

(e) Consonant + *v*, e.g. *dedyf* *custom* = Mod.W. *deddf*; *baraf*, *baryf* *beard* = Mod.W. *barf*; *twrwf*, *twryf* by *twrf* *noise*.

#### CONSONANTAL CHANGES.

11. The following changes of consonants in combination are of importance for accidentence :—

(a) In the Indo-Germanic parent language *d* or *t* + *t* became *t't*, and *t't* in Celtic became *ss*, e.g. W. *llas* *was killed* = Ir. -*slass* from *\*slat'tos*: *llad* *kill* = Ir. *slaidid* *hews*.

(b) **act** > **aeth**, or, with *ī* infection, > **eith**; **ect** > **eith**; **wct** > **wyth**; **wcn**, **wgn** > **wyn**, e.g. **aeth** *he went* from \***act**, but **imdeith** *I travelled* from \***actī** (earlier \***actū**, \***actō**): Mid.W. **eyd goes** = O.W. **egit**, **agit**; **dyrreith** *he returned*, from \*-**rekt**: √**reg-**; **amwyth** *he defended* from \***amukt**: **amwgaf** *I defend*, of which the verbal noun is **amwyn** from \***amucn**...

(c) **rt** > **rth**, e.g. **cymmerth** *he took* from \***com-bert**: **cymmeraf** *I take*.

(d) Before a labial **n** becomes **m**, e.g. **y maes** *in the field* from **yn maes**.

(e) **nd**, **mb** > **nn**, **mm**, e.g. **vyn nyvot**, **vy nyvot** *my coming* from **vyn dyvot**; **ym mwyt**, **y mwyt** *into food* from **yn bwyt**.

(f) **nc**, **nt**, **mp**. At the end of a word **nc**, **mp** remained, e.g. **ieuanc** *young*, **pump** *five*; **nt** remained in accented monosyllables, e.g. **dant** *tooth* (but proclitic **can**, **gan** *with* = O.W. **cant**); in words of more than one syllable it appears as **nt** or **n**, e.g. **ugeint** and **ugein** *twenty*, **carant** and **caran** *they love*. In the interior of a word **nc**, **nt**, **mp** develop regularly in the penultimate syllable to **ng**, **nn**, **mm**, in the antepenult to **ngh**, **nh**, **mh**, e.g. **tranc** *cessation*: **trengi** *to cease*; **angen** *necessity* (from \***ancen** = Ir. **ēcen**): **anghenawc** *necessitous*; O.W. **hanther** *half*, later **hanner**; **dant** *tooth*: **danned** *teeth*: **danhedawc** *toothed*; O.W. **pimphet** *fifth*, later **pymmet**; **cymmell** *compulsion* (from Lat. *compello*): pl. **cymhellyon**. The regular development, however, is liable to be affected by analogy.

NOTE 1.—The cause of the different treatment in the penult and the antepenult is the accent. In early W. the accent was on the last syllable (§ 4); the syllable immediately preceding the accent would be most weakly accented, the syllable before that would have a secondary accent, e.g. **ānghenawc**, **dānhedawc**, **cŷmhellyón**.

(g) Before **h**—

(a) **g**, **d**, **b** become *tenues*, e.g. **teckaf** *most beautiful* from \***teg-haf**: **tec** (phonetically **teg**) *beautiful*, **tebycko** from \***tebyg-ho** *he may think*: **tebygu** *to think*, **plyckau** *to fold* from \***plyg-hau**: **plyc** (phonetically **plyg**) *fold*; **calettaf** *hardest* from \***caled-haf**: **calet** (phonetically **caled**) *hard*, **cretto** *he may believe* from \***cred-ho**:



**credu** to *believe*, **bwyta** to *eat* from \***bwyd-ha** : **bwyt** (phonetically **bwyd**) *food*; **cyvelyp** *most like* from \***cyvelyb-haf** : **cyvelyp** (phonetically **cyvelyb**) *like*, **attepo** from \***ad-heb-ho** *he may answer* : **attebu**, **digaplo** *he may cease to calumniate* from \***digabl-ho** : **digablu**, **llwyprawt** from \***llwybr-hawt** *will course* : **llwybraw** *to course*.

- (β) **đ** becomes **th**, e.g. **diwethaf** *last* from \***diwedđ-haf** : **diwed** *end*, **rotho** *he may give* from \***rođ-ho** : **rodi** *to give*, **rythau** *to set free* from \***ryđ-hau** : **ryd** *free*.
- (γ) **v** becomes **f**, e.g. **tyffo** *he may grow* from \***tyv-ho** : **tyvu** *to grow*, **dyffo** *he may come* : **dyvod** *to come*, **coffau** *to remember* from \***cov-hau** : **cof** *memory*.

NOTE 2.—Instances of **ff** from **v-h** are not numerous, they have commonly been replaced by analogical forms, e.g. **araf-hau** *to make gentle*, **digrif-af** *most entertaining*. So **th** from **đ + h** becomes rarer and rarer in Mid. W., where e.g. **rotho** is replaced by **rodho** and **rodo**; the old forms are most persistent in the case of the *tenues* **c**, **t**, **p**. (cf. § 110)

(f) **th + đ** > **th**, e.g. **athiffero** *who may defend thee* from **ath-differo**. But here commonly the **đ** is written etymologically.

(g) **d + đ** became apparently **d**, e.g. **adyn** *wretch* from **ad-dyn** (**ad** = Ir. **aith**, with sense of Lat. **re**-).

#### SOUND-CHANGES WITHIN THE SENTENCE.

12. Within the sentence closely connected word groups are liable to changes similar to those that take place within individual words. As within the word vowel-flanked consonants were reduced, e.g. **cegin** *kitchen* from Lat. *coquina*, **niver** *number* from Lat. *numerus*, so in a word group, e.g. \***tōtā mārā** *great people* became **tud vawr**. As within the word **nc** became **ngh**, **nt** became **nh**, **mp** became **mh** (§ 11), **nd** became **nn**, e.g. **crwnn** *round* by Ir. **cruind**, **mb** became **mm**, e.g. **camn** *crooked* from Old British **cambos**, so in word groups, e.g. **vyn cyngbor** *my counsel* became **vy ghyngbor**, **vyn penn** *my head* became **vym penn**, **vy mhenn**, **vyn dyvot** *my coming* became **vyn nyvot**, **yn bwyt** *into food* became **ym mwyt**, **y mwyt**. But, on the one hand, a

particular mutation may spread analogically, if it becomes connected with some grammatical function; thus in Welsh it became the rule that after all feminine nouns in the singular a following adjective was mutated, though in Celtic only certain classes of feminine nouns ended in a vowel. On the other hand, the change may analogically disappear altogether, or the mutation may be restricted to certain phrases as in the case of the nasal mutation after numerals (§ 20c). In sound groups there are three kinds of initial change (1) vocalic mutation or lenation, which originated from cases where the preceding member of the group originally ended in a vowel, (2) nasal mutation where the preceding member originally ended in *n*, (3) spirant mutation where the preceding member ended in certain consonants, most commonly *s* but also *c*.

NOTE.—In reading Early Welsh texts the student must be careful not to be misled by the orthography, which does not consistently express the initial changes. Thus if he should meet with, e.g. *y gwlat the country* for *y wlat*, or *vyn dyvot* for *vyn nyvot*, that is only an archaistic or etymological orthography which is no evidence of the actual sound at the time.

### 13. Table of Consonant Mutations.

		radical		vocalic		nasal		spirant	
Tenues	{	<b>c</b> ...	corn	...	<b>g</b> orn	...	<b>ng</b> horn	...	<b>ch</b> orn
		<b>t</b> ...	tat	...	<b>d</b> at	...	<b>nh</b> at	...	<b>th</b> at
		<b>p</b> ...	<b>pr</b> enn	...	<b>br</b> enn	...	<b>mh</b> renn	...	<b>ph</b> renn
Mediae	{	<b>g</b> ...	<b>gw</b> r	...	<b>w</b> r	...	<b>ngw</b> r		
		<b>d</b> ...	<b>dy</b> n	...	<b>ð</b> yn	...	<b>ny</b> n		
		<b>b</b> ...	<b>ba</b> ryf	...	<b>va</b> ryf	...	<b>ma</b> ryf		
Liquids	{	<b>ll</b> ...	<b>ll</b> aw	...	<b>l</b> aw				
		<b>rh</b> ...	<b>rh</b> an	...	<b>r</b> an				
Nasal		<b>m</b> ...	<b>ma</b> m	...	<b>va</b> m				

NOTE 1.—In vocalic mutation *g* became first the spirant *ɣ*, which was early lost (§ 3d). From the fact that initial *g* was thus lost, many words which originally began with a vowel in time assume an initial *g*; e.g. *y* ord *his hammer* (=Ir. ord) resembled externally *y wr his man*, and this superficial resemblance led to *gord* (for *ord*) like *gwr*. The principle is the same as in the development of initial *f* before a vowel in Mid.Ir.

NOTE 2.—As in Mid.W. the spirant is commonly written *d* (§ 3d), the vocalic mutation of initial *d* is not discernible in writing.

NOTE 3.—In Mid.W. initial *rh* is written *r*, so that the unmutated and the mutated forms are indistinguishable (§ 3f).

## Vocalic Mutation or Lenation.

14. The history of Welsh lenation has still to be written. In some respects, particularly with regard to lenation after the verb, the subject is full of difficulty. In the development of lenation analogy played a large part, so that to some extent the usage would differ at different periods. And the fixing of the rules of lenation for a particular period is complicated by the fact that the mutation is not consistently expressed in writing. The following are the chief facts about lenation in Mid. W. prose; the material is taken from the Red Book of Hergest.

15. General exception to the rules of lenation. After final **n** and **r** initial **ll** and **rh** were regularly unmutated, e.g. **yn llawen** *gladly*, **y llaw** = O.W. *ir lau* *the hand*. For **rh** the rule is seen in Mod.W., e.g. **yn rhydd** *freely*, **y rhan** *the part*. As **rh** was not written in Mid. W. this distinction is not discernible there.

## A. LENATION OF NOUN AND ADJECTIVE (INCLUDING NOMINAL ADJECTIVAL PRONOUNS).

## 16. (a) After the article.

After the article in the sg. fem. the initial consonant of a following noun or adjective is lenated, e.g. **y gaer** *the city*, **yr dref** *to the town*, **y vrenhines** *the queen*. But **y llaw** *the hand* (§ 15).

## (b) After the noun.

(a) After a noun in the feminine singular or the dual an adjective is lenated, e.g. **morwyn benngrech velen** *a curlyhaired auburn maid*, **deu vilgi vronwynnyon vrychyon** *two whitebreasted brindled hounds*. Also when the adjective is separated from the noun, e.g. **kaer uawr** *a welynt*, **vwyhaf** or *byt they saw a large town, the largest in the world*.

NOTE 1.—After the masc. sg. and the plur. lenation of the comparative is found in sentences of the following type: **ny welsei dyn eiryoet llw degach** . . . *noc oed hwnnw* *no man had ever seen a host fairer than that* R.B. 90, 13; **na welsynt llongeu gyweiryach y hansawd** *noc wynt that they had not seen ships better equipped than they* R.B. 27, 3.

(β) After a noun in the fem. sg. or the dual a following genitive is lenated when it is equivalent to an adjective, e.g. **kist vaen** *a stone chest*; **deu vaen vreuan** *two millstones*.

NOTE 2.—The genitive is lenated after **meint**, **ryw**, **kyvryw** and **sawl** (§ 76-7), e.g. **y veint lewenyd** *the amount of gladness*; **pa ryw wysc** *what kind of dress?* **kyvryw wr** *such a man*; **y sawl vrenhined** *all the kings*. Further, the genitive of proper names is lenated after certain nouns, e.g. **Cadeir Vaxen** *Mazen's Seat*; **Caer Vyrddin** *Carmarthen*; **Llan badarn lit.** *Padarn's Church*; **Ynys Von** *Island of Mon*; **Eglwys Veir** *Mary's Church*; **Gwlat Vorgan** *the land of Morgan*; **pobyl Vrytaen** *the people of Britain*; **ty Gustenin** *the house of Custenin* (cf. Mod. W. **ty Dduw**); **mam Gadwaladyr** *mother of Cadwaladr*; **Branwen verch Lyr** *Branwen daughter of Llyr*; **gwreic Vrutus** *wife of Brutus*; **deu vab Varedud** *two sons of Maredud*.

(γ) After proper nouns there is lenation of a following noun or adjective denoting a characteristic of a person, e.g. **Llud vrenhin** *King Lluð*, **Peredur baladyrhir** *Peredur of the long spear*.

NOTE 3.—The initial consonants of **mab son** and **merch daughter** are lenated, e.g. **Pryderi uab Pwyll** *Pryderi son of Pwyll*, **Aranrot verch Don** *Aranrod daughter of Don*.

NOTE 4.—Further instances of lenation in apposition are, e.g. **ewythred Arthur oedynt**, **urodyr y nam** *they were uncles of Arthur, his mother's brothers*, **Giluaethwy ac Euyd . . . y nyeint**, **ueibion y chwaer** *Gilvaethwy and Euyð his nephews, his sister's sons*. **Aranrot uerch Don dy nith**, **uerch dy chwaer Aranrot** *daughter of Don thy niece, thy sister's daughter*.

(δ) Lenation is found in the genitive of the verbal noun, particularly when it is separated from the governing word, e.g. **menegi uot y crydyon wedy duunaw** *declaring that the cobblers had united*; **a dyuot . . . yn y vedwl uynet y hela** *and it came into his mind to go to hunt*; **a ryuedu o Owein yr mackwy gyuarch gwell idaw** *and Owein wondered that the youth should greet him*.

### (c) After the adjective.

(a) When an adjective in the positive degree precedes, the noun is lenated, e.g. **brawdoryawl garyat** *brotherly love*, **dirvawr wres** *excessive heat*, **amryuaelyon gerdeu** *divers songs*. So after the pronominal adjective **holl all**, e.g. **holl gwn** *all the dogs*, **holl wraged** *all the women*.

NOTE 5.—For the comparative the material to hand from R.B. is scanty; with lenation: **yn llei boen** *less pain* 146, without lenation: **mwy gobeith** *greater hope* 95, **muscrellach gwr** *a more helpless man* 13. In R.B. II.

there are some instances of lenation after *mwy* *more*. After the superlative in RB. non-lenation seems to be the rule; in RB. II. lenation is more frequent.

NOTE 6.—In Celtic, when the adjective preceded the noun, it formed a compound with it, e.g. *hen-wrach* *old hag* (§ 34a), and in composition the lenation of the second element was regular, e.g. *eur-wisc* *golden dress*, *bore-vwyf* *morning-food, breakfast*. In Welsh, when the adjective came to be used freely before the noun, the lenation of the old compounds was retained in the positive.

NOTE 7.—On the analogy of lenation in compound words and of lenation of the noun following the adjective, in poetry, when the genitive precedes the noun, it may lenate, e.g. *byd lywyadwr* *the ruler of the world*, *o Gymry* *werin of the host of the Cymry*.

(β) When an adjective is repeated, e.g. *mwy vwy vyd* *greater and greater will be*.

(d) After YN forming adverbs, and with predicative nouns and adjectives (§ 35), e.g. *yn vynyf* *often*, *yn borth* *as a help*, *yn wreic* *as a wife*. But *yn llawen* *gladly* (§ 15).

NOTE 8.—With regard to their influence upon a following word it is necessary to bear in mind that predicative *yn* lenates, that *yn* in is followed by the nasal mutation (§ 20b) and that *yn* with the verbal noun, e.g. *yn mynet* *going* (§ 126a), does not affect a following consonant.

(e) After numerals.

(α) After cardinal numbers.

*un* *one*. After the fem., lenation seems to be regular, e.g. *un wreic* *one woman*, *un vil* *one thousand*, *yr un gerdet* *the same going*. Initial *ll* is regularly uninfected, e.g. *un llynges* *one fleet*. After the masc. the usage seems to vary, e.g. *vn geir* *one word* RB. 197 = WB. 123, but *vn eir* RB. II. 222, *yr un march* *the same horse* RB. 9, but *neb vn varchawc* *any horseman* RB. II. 278, *yn un uaes* *in one field* RB. 114.

NOTE 9.—In Irish, *ōin* regularly mutates a following consonant. According to Rowlands, Mod. W. *un* mutates in the fem.

*deu*, *dwý* *two*. After these lenation is regular, e.g. *deu barchell* *two pigs*, *deu lu* *two hosts*, *dwý verchet* *two daughters*. But *deu cant* *two hundred* RB. II. *passim*.

*chwech*, *chwe* *six*:—*chwech wraged* *six women* RB. 18, 16; but *chwe blyned* *six years* RB. II. 387, 404.

*seith* *seven*: *seith gantref* *seven cantreds* RB. 25, 44, *seith gelfydyt* *seven arts* RB. II. 200, *seith wystyl* *seven hostages* RB.

II. 327. But usually without lenation **seith cantref**, **seith cuppyt** *seven cubits*, **seith cant** *seven hundred*, **seith punt** *seven pounds*, **seith meib** *seven sons*.

**wyth eight**: **wyth drawst** *eight beams* RB. III, 21, **wyth gant** *eight hundred* RB. II. 386, but **wyth cant** 39, 40, 230, 257, 258, 385, **wyth temyl** *eight temples* 101, **wyth tywyssawc** *eight chiefs* 14.

**naw nine**. After this lenation is occasionally found, e.g. **naw rad** *nine ranks* LA. 17.

**mil thousand**: **mil verthyr** *a thousand martyrs* RB. II. 199.

10.—In **pumwyr** *five men*, **seithwyr** *seven men*, **nawwyr** *nine men*, **canwr** *a hundred men*, there seems to be composition.

(β) After ordinal numbers.

After the feminine ordinals from *three* onwards there is lenation, e.g. **y dryded geinc** *the third branch*, **y seithvet vlwydyn** *the seventh year*, **yr vgeinuuet vlwydyn** *the twentieth year*.

11.—The same rule seems to hold with *eil* *other, second*, e.g. **yr eil marchawc** *the second horseman*, but **yr eil vlwydyn** *the second year*, and with *neill* *one of two*, e.g. **y neill troet** *the one foot*, but **y neill law** *the one hand*.

(f) After the pronoun.

(a) After the possessives **dy** *thy* and **y** *his*, e.g. **dy davawt** *thy tongue*, **ath lu** *and thy host*; **y benn** *his head*, **ae rud** *and his cheek*.

(β) After interrogatives, e.g. **pa le**, **py le** *where?* **pa beth** *what thing?*

(γ) In apposition, e.g. **ynteu Bwyll** *he Pwyll*, **hitheu wreic** *Teirnon she the wife of Teirnon*; **ef Vanawydan** *he Manawydan*; on *hachaws* **ni bechaduryeit** *because of us sinners*.

(g) After the verb.

(a) After the verb lenation is found not only of the object but also of the subject, whether the verb immediately precedes the lenated form or is separated from it, e.g. **mi a wnn gyghor** *da I know good counsel*, **y gwelynt uarchawc** *they saw a horseman*, **ny mynnei Gaswallawn** *y lad ynteu Caswallawn did not desire to slay him*. The proportion of lenation to non-lenation differs

in different parts of the verb. After certain parts of the verb lenation is absent or exceptional. Such are 3 sg. and 3 pl. pres. ind. act., 3 sg. pres. subj. act. and the passive forms. After the 3 sg. of the pret. ind. act. non-lenation of the subject is the rule; in RB. lenation of the object is occasionally found when it directly follows the verb, e.g. **y kavas Uendigeit** *Uran he found Bendigeit Vran*, frequently when the subject precedes it, e.g. **y lladawd Peredur wyr** *yr iarll Peredur slew the earl's men*.

(β) After most of the forms of the verb "to be" lenation is found, most consistently in the predicate from its close connexion with the verb, but also in the subject whether it follows the verb immediately or is separated from it, e.g. **ot wyt uorwyn** *if thou art a maid*, **yd ym drist ni** *we are sad*, **yssyd urenhin** *who is king*, **yssit le** *there is a place*, **nyt oed uwy** *it was not greater*, **oedynt gystal** *they were as good*, **mi a uydaf borthawr** *I am gatekeeper*, **ni a vydwn gyuarwyd** *we will be guides*, **ny bydei vyw** *he was not alive*, **y bydynt barawt** *they should be ready*, **ny buost gyvartal** *thou hast not been just*, **tra uu vyw** *while she lived*, **pan uuant veirw** *when they were dead*, **buassei oreu** *it would have been best*, **byd lawenach** *be more joyous*, **bit bont** *let him be a bridge*, **bydwch gedymdeithon** *be ye comrades*, **tra vwyf vyw** *while I live*, **tra vych vyw** *while thou livest*, **tra vom vyw** *while we live*, **mal na bont ueichawc** *so that they may not be pregnant*, **pei bewn urathedic** *if I were wounded*, **a vei vawr** *which should be great*, **gwedy y beym uedw** *after we were intoxicated*, **nyt oes blant** *there is no offspring*, **budugawl oed Gei Kei** *was gifted*, **y hwnnw y bu uab** *to him there was a son*, **cyt bei lawer o geiryd** *though there were many cities*, **nyt oes in gyghor** *we have no counsel*, **oed well ytti geisaw** *it were better for thee to seek*, **tost vu gantaw welet** *it pained him to see*. There is, however, no lenation after **ys**, e.g. **ys gwir** *it is true* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. **kanys gwell genthi gyscu** *since she prefers to sleep*); after **nyt**, **nat**, **neut**, e.g. **nyt llei** *is not less*, **neut marw** *he is dead*; after **os**, e.g. **os gwr** *if he is a man*; after **ae** e.g. **ae gwell** *is it better?* after **yw**, e.g. **pan yw Peredur** *that it is Peredur* (unless the subject be

separated, e.g. hawd **yw** gennyf **gaffel** *I think it easy to get*; after **ytti**w, e.g. a **ytti**w **Kei** yn llys Arthur *is Kei in Arthur's court?* after **mae**, e.g. **y mae llech** *there is a flagstone* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. **y mae yma uorwyn** *there is here a maiden*); after **maent**, e.g. **y maent perchen** *there are owners*; after **byd**, e.g. ny **byd gwell** *it will not be better* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. or **byd gwell** genwch **bresswylaw** *if ye think it better to dwell*); after **boet**, e.g. **poet kyvlawn** dy rat titheu *may thy prosperity be complete*; after **bo**, e.g. pan **uo parawt** *when it is ready* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. pan **uo** amser in **uyn**et *when it is time for us to go*).

(h) In adverbs and adverbial phrases.

In the interior of a sentence the initial consonant of an adverb or an adverbial phrase is often lenated, e.g. nyth elwir **bellach** byth yn vorwyn *thou shalt never more be called a maiden*, ny orffowysaf **vyth** *I will never rest*, pan daeth y paganyeit **gyntaf** y Iwerdon *when the pagans came first to Ireland*, bydwch yma **vlwydyn** y dyd hediw *be ye here a year to-day*, bu farw . . . **vis whefrawr** *she died in the month of February*, pebyllaw a oruc **lawer o dydyeu** *he encamped many days*. In the same way lenation is found in preposition and suffixed pronoun, e.g. ny eill neb vynet **drwydi** *no one can go through it*, a gymero yr ergit **drossof i** *who shall take the blow in my stead*, hir uu **gennyf i** y nos honno *that night seemed long to me*.

NOTE 12.—In origin this is only a special case of post-verbal lenation, like the corresponding change in Irish, for which see Pedersen, KZ. xxxv. 332 sq.

NOTE 13.—Lenation is found of the initial consonants of some prepositions and conjunctions: ar=O.W. guar (Ir. for), gen by can, wedy by gwedy=O.W. guetig, wrth=O.W. gwrth, dan by tan, dros=O.W. trus, drwy by trwy=O.W. troi, ban by pan, bei by pei. The reason of the weakening here, however, seems to be that the words are pretonic.

(i) After the prepositions am, ar, att, can, heb, o (a), tan, tros, trwy, uch, wrth, y, and frequently after the nominal preposition hyt, e.g. am betheu *about things*; ar vrys *in haste*; att Bwyll *to Pwyll*; gan bawb *with every one*; heb vwyt *without food*; o gerd *of music*; dan brenn *under a tree*; dros



**vor** *across the sea*; **trwy lewenyd** *through joy*; **uch benn** *above*; **wrth Gynan** *to Cynan*; **y vynyd** *upwards*; **hyt galan Mei** *till the first of May*.

(k) After a negative in phrases like **na wir** *it is not true* RB. 105; **na well** *it is not better* RB. 61.

(l) After **mor** *how, so* and **neu** *or*, e.g. **mor druan** *how wretched*; **neu vuelyn** *or horn*.

(m) After interjections.

(a) The vocative is lenated after **a**, **ha**, **oia**, **och**, **ub** e.g. **a vorwyn** *O maiden*; **oia wr** *hol man*; **och Ereint** *alas! Gereint*; **ub wyr** *alack! men*. But without any preceding particle lenation of the vocative is found, e.g. **dos vorwyn** *go, maiden*.

(β) After **llyma**, **llyna**, and **nachaf**, e.g. **llyma luossogrwyd** *yn ymlit see! there is a host following* RB. II. 302; **llyna uedru** *yn drwc there is bad behaviour*; **nachaf uarchawc** *yn dyuot behold! a horseman was coming*.

#### B. LENATION OF THE PRONOUN.

17. The pronoun is lenated :—

(a) As subject or object, or emphasizing an infixed or suffixed pronoun or possessive adjective, e.g. **elwyf ui** *I might go*, **gallaf i** *I can*, **ny buum drwc i** *I was not evil*, **y rodaf innneu** *I will give*, **arhowch uiui** *wait for me*, **na chabla di uiui** *do not blame me*, **nyt atwaenwn i didi** *I did not recognise thee*, **ath gud ditheu** *which hides thee*, **ohonaf i**, **ohonaf innneu** *by me*, **vy ysgwyd i** *my shield*, **dy grogi di** *thy hanging*, **dy lad ditheu** *thy slaying*.

NOTE 1.—But after final **t** **t** is usual, e.g. **y rodeist ti** *thou hast given*, **gan dy genyat ti** *with thy leave*, **dy vot titheu** *thy being*.

(b) Sometimes in apposition, e.g. **ni a awn ui a thi** *we will go, I and thou*, **keisswn ninneu ui a thi** *let us seek, I and thou*.

(c) After other lenating words, e.g. **gwae vi** *woe to me*, **neu vinneu** *or I*, **neu ditheu** *or thou*.

## C. LENATION OF THE VERB.

18. The verb is lenated :—

- (a) After infixed pronoun of sg. 2, e.g. **yth elwir** *thou art called*.
- (b) After relative **a**, e.g. govyn **a oruc** *he asked*.
- (c) After the interrogative **pa, py**, e.g. hyt na wydat **pa** (or **py**) **wnaei** *so that she did not know what she should do*; **py liwy** *di why dost thou colour?*
- (d) When the copula follows the predicate (§ 159), e.g. **llawen uu y norwyn** *the maiden was glad*.
- (e) After the verbal particle **yt** (§ 91 note 2) in the older language, e.g. **yt gaffei** *he should get*.
- (f) After the verbal particle **ry** (but cf. § 21 note), e.g. **ry geveis** *I have got*. Similarly after **neur** (§ 95 note), e.g. **neur gavas** *he has got*.
- (g) After the interrogative **a**, e.g. **a bery di** *wilt thou effect?*
- (h) After the conjunctions **pan, tra, yny**, e.g. **pan golles** *when he lost*, **tra barhaawd** *while it lasted*, **tra vwylf** *as long as I am*, **yny glyw** *till he hears*, **yny welas** *till he saw*, **yny vyd** *till he is*.
- (i) After the negatives **ny** (including **ony, pony**) and **na** (with the exception of the tenses § 21e), e.g. **ny allaf** *I cannot*, **ny ladaf** *I will not slay*, **kany vyny** *since thou dost not desire*, **pony wydut ti** *didst thou not know?* **na ovyn di** *do not ask*, Duw a wyr **na ladaf i** *God knows that I will not slay*.

NOTE.—But after **ny, na** the rule of lenation is not absolute. In particular initial **m** is commonly unchanged, e.g. **ny mynnaf** *I do not desire*, **hyt na mynnei** *so that he did not desire*. Further, initial **b** of forms of **bot** to **be** is commonly unlenated, e.g. **ny bu gystal** *it was not so good*; a **wypo na bo miui** *who shall know that it is not I*. But in the imperative lenation seems to be the rule, e.g. **na uit amgeled gennweh** *be not troubled*. Non-lenation after **ny** comes from the old non-relative forms (§ 21 note). **Na** originally ended in a consonant (**nac**), so that after it the lenation is irregular; so far as it lenates it has followed the analogy of **ny**.

## Nasal Mutation.

19. Nasal mutation is very irregularly written in Mid.W.MSS. The mutation of **nc** is expressed by **gk** or **gh**, the mutation of **nt**

commonly by **nt**, rarely by **nh**, the mutation of **mp** commonly by **mp**, sometimes by **mph** or **mh**. The mutation of **ng** is expressed by **gg** or **ngg**, the mutation of **nd**, **nb** by **n** or **nd**, and **m** or **mb**.

20. Nasal mutation is found :—

(a) After **vyn** *my*, e.g. **vygkynghor**, **vyghynghor** *my counsel*, **vyntat**, **vynhat** *my father*, **vypenn**, **vymphen**, **vymhen** *my head*, **vyggwreic** (**gwreic**) *my wife*, **vynggwely** *my bed*, **vynyvot**, **vyndyvot** *my coming*, **vymaraf** (**baraf**) *my beard*.

(b) After **yn** *in, into*, e.g. **ygkarchar**, **ygharchar** *in prison*, **ymperved**, **ymherved** *in the centre*, **ymhoen** (**poen**) *in punishment*; **yn diwed** (= **yn niwed**) *in the end*; **ymbwyt**, **ymwyt** (**bwyt**) *into food*.

(c) In certain phrases after numerals (chiefly with **blyned** *years* and **dieu**, **diwarnawt** *days*), e.g. **pump mlyned** *five years*, **chwech mlyned** **RB. II. 397** (more usually **chwe blyned**) *six years*, **seith mlyned** *seven years*, **wyth mlyned** *eight years*, **naw mlyned** *nine years*, **naw nieu** *nine days*, **deng mlyned** *ten years*, **dec nieu** *ten days*, **deudec niwarnawt** *twelve days*, **pymtheng mlyned** *fifteen years*, **ugein mlyned** *twenty years*, **deugeint mlyned** *forty years*, **cant mlyned** *a hundred years*, **can mu** *a hundred kine*, **trychan mu** *three hundred kine*.

NOTE.—This usage started from those numerals which in Old Celtic ended in **n**: **seith** (cf. Ir. *secht n.*, Lat. *septem*; final **m** in Celtic became **n**), **naw** (cf. Ir. *nōi n.*, Lat. *novem*), **dec** (cf. Ir. *deich n.*, Lat. *decem*), **cant** (cf. Ir. *cēt n.*, Lat. *centum*).

### Spirant Mutation.

21. This is found :—

(a) After the numerals **tri** *three* and **chwe(ch)** *six*, e.g. **tri chantref** *three cantreds*, **tri pheth** *three things*, **chwe thorth** *six loaves*.

(b) After **y** *her*, e.g. **y chlust** *her ear*, **y throet** *her foot*, **y phenn** *her head*.

(c) After the prepositions **ac**, **a** *with*, **tra** *beyond*, e.g. **a chledyf** *with a sword*, **a thi** *with thee*, **tra thonn** *beyond wave*.

(d) After the conjunctions **a(c)** *and*, **no(c)** *than*, **o** *if*, e.g. **mam a** *that father and mother*, **traet a phenn** *feet and head*; **gwaeth no chynt** *worse than before*; **o chigleu** *if he has heard*.

NOTE 1.—After **kw** *where* spirant change is found: **cv** *threwna where it settles* BB. 44<sup>b</sup>, but **kw** *gaffei (caffei) where he should get* WB. 453; cf. **cud vit** BB. 44<sup>b</sup>, **cwd uyd** *where it will be* FB. 146.

(e) After the negatives **ny** and **na(c)**, e.g. **ny chysgaf** *I will not sleep*, **ny thyrr** *does not break*, **ny phryn** *does not buy*; **na chwsc** *do not sleep*, **na thorraf** *that I do not break*, **na marchawc na phedestyr** *neither horseman nor footman*.

NOTE. 2.—But in the early poetry **ny** produces the spirant change only when it is non-relative; when it is relative a following **c**, **t**, or **p** is lenated, e.g. **ny char** *he does not love*, but **ny gar** *who does not love*. In the early poetry there is the same difference of treatment after the verbal particle **ry**, e.g. **ry charas** *has loved*, **ry garas** *who has loved*. This distinction between non-relative and relative forms must have extended to all consonants capable of mutation, but in the case of the other consonants confusion set in earlier. In later Mid.W. after **ny** the non-relative form has been generalised in the case of words beginning with **c**, **t**, **p**, the relative form, with certain exceptions, in the case of words beginning with other mutable consonants (cf. § 18 i). After **ry** the relative form was generalised. For further details see Eriu III. pp. 20 sq.

### **h** in Sentence Construction.

22. After certain words **h** appears before a following word beginning with a vowel.

(a) After the infixed and the possessive pronoun **m**, e.g. **am h-** *ymlytassant who followed me*, **om h-** *anvod against my will*.

(b) After the infixed pronoun **e**, e.g. **ae h-** *arganvu who perceived him*.

(c) After **y** *her*, e.g. **y h-** *enw her name*.

NOTE.—In Irish also **h** appears after **a** *her*, e.g. **a h-** *ainm her name*. The Irish and Welsh **h** here comes from the original final **s** of the possessive.

(d) After **an** *our*, e.g. **an h-** *arueu our arms*.

(e) After **eu**, **y** *their*, e.g. **eu h-** *arueu their arms*.

(f) After **ar** before **ugeint** *twenty*, e.g. **un ar h-** *ugeint twenty one*.

## THE ARTICLE.

23. In O.W. the article is **ir** throughout, e.g. **ir pimphet eterin** *the fifth bird*, **dir finnaun** *to the fountain*. In Mid.W. **yr** remains before vowels and **h**, e.g. **yr amser** *the time*, **yr alanas** (from **galanas**) *the bloodfine*, **yr henwr** *the old man*; before other consonants except **y** it becomes **y**, e.g. **y bwyt** *the food*, **y wreic** (from **gwreic**) *the woman*; before **y** the usage varies, e.g. **yr iarll** or **y iarll** *the earl*. But if the article be fused together with a preceding conjunction or preposition, or if the **y** be elided after a preceding vowel, then **'r** remains, e.g. **y nef ar dayar** *heaven and earth*, **yn gyuagos yr gaer** *near to the city*, **gwiryon yw'r uorwyn** *ohonof i the maiden is innocent as regards me*.

## SYNTAX OF THE ARTICLE.

24. (a) In addition to its use before common nouns the article appears regularly before the names of certain countries, such as **yr Affrica** *Africa*, **yr Asia** *Asia*, **yr Alban** *Scotland*, **yr Almaen** *Germany*, **yr Eidal** *Italy*, **yr Yspacen** *Spain*, e.g. **vn yw yr Asia**, **deu yw yr Affrica**, **tri yw Europa** *Asia is one, Africa is two, Europe is three* FB. 216. Occasionally the article appears before names of persons, e.g. **yr Beli mawr** (= **y Beli uawr** WB. 191) *to Beli the Great* RB. 93, 2; **mwyhaf oe vrodyr y karei Lud y Lleuelys** *Llud loved Llevelys more than any of his other brothers* ib.

(b) The article is not used before a noun followed by a dependent genitive, e.g. **gwyr ynys y kedyrn** *the men of the island of the strong*, unless it be accompanied by a demonstrative pronoun, e.g. **or meint gwyrtheu hwnnw** *from that amount of miracles*, or unless the genitive be the equivalent of an adjective, e.g. **y werin eur** *the golden chessmen*, **y moch coet** *the wild pigs* (lit. *the pigs of the wood*), **y peir dateni** *the cauldron of rebirth, the regenerative cauldron*.

## THE NOUN.

## NUMBERS AND CASES.

25. In Welsh the old Celtic declension is completely broken down. Of the three genders the neuter has been lost. The dual, which, as in Irish, is always preceded by the numeral for *two*, in some classes of nouns would phonetically have fallen together with the singular; in Welsh this has been generalised so that the dual (apart from forms like **deu ychen** *two oxen*) coincides in form with the singular; a trace of the dual inflection remains in the lenation of a following adjective, e.g. **deu vul gadarn** (from **cadarn**) *two strong mules*, **deu vilgi vronwynnion vrychion** *two whitebreasted brindled greyhounds*. In the regular inflexion there remains only one case for each number; in the singular this corresponds sometimes to the old nominative, e.g. **car** *friend* = Ir. *carae*, sometimes to the form of the oblique cases, e.g. **breuant** *windpipe* = Ir. *brāge*, g. *brāgat*; a few traces of lost cases still survive in phrases, e.g. **meudwy** *hermit* (lit. *servant of God*), where **dwy** is the genitive of **duw**; **erbyn** *against* (= Ir. *ar chiunn*), where **pynn** (from **\*pendī**, from **\*pendū**) is the dative of **penn** *head*; **peunyd** *every day*, **peunoeth** *every night*, where **peun-**, which in O.W. would be **\*poun-**, comes from **\*popn-**, the old accusative singular of **pob** *every*.

## SYNTAX OF THE CASES.

26. As in Irish, the nominative may stand absolutely at the beginning of the sentence to introduce the subject of discourse, e.g. **y wreic honn ym penn pythewnos a mis y byd beichogi idi**, lit. *this woman, at the end of a fortnight and a month there will be conception to her*. In prose the genitive follows the noun on which it depends, e.g. **enw y mab** *the name of the son*; in poetry it may precede, e.g. **byt lywaydur** = **llywaydur byt** *the ruler of the world*; sometimes, as in Irish, it is used after an adjective meaning *with respect to a thing*, e.g. **ný bydý anuodlawn y phrýt** *thou wilt not*

*be displeased with her form.* The accusative can be recognised only from the construction; in poetry the accusative of a place-name is common after verbs of motion, e.g. *dywed y down Arwystli say that we will come to Arwystli* MA. 192<sup>b</sup>.

#### FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

27. A. The plural is based on Old Celtic plural formations.

(a) Plural with *ī* infection (§ 7b), e.g. *march horse: meirch, manach monk: meneich, maen stone: mein, oen lamb: wyn, asgell wing: esgyll, corn horn: cyrn, escob bishop: escyb, gwr man: gwyr.*

NOTE 1.—This represents the old plural formation of *-o-* stems, e.g. *meirch* from *\*marci* from *\*marcoi*. In part, however, it might represent the plural of *-i-* stems, cf. Ir. *súili eyes: súil eye*. In *dagr tear* the plur. *deigr* (= Ir. *dêr*) comes from *\*dacru*, the plur. of a neut. *-u-* stem.

NOTE 2.—Many substantives which regularly form their plural otherwise, particularly such as form their plural in *-ion*, follow this inflexion after numerals above *two*, e.g. *tri gweis three boys, seith meib seven sons* (GC. 2 283).

(b) Plural in *-eu, -ieu* (O.W. *-ou, -iou*), e.g. *gen jaw: geneu, penn head: penneu, cledyf sword: cledyveu, pebyll tent: pebyllyeu, glin knee: glinyeu.*

NOTE 3.—*-ou, -eu* started from *-oues*, the nom. pl. of *-u-* stems, cf. Gaulish *Lugoves*.

(c) Plural in *-on -ion*, e.g. *medyc physician: medygon, cenaw whelp: cenawon, lleidr robber: lladron, mab son: meibygon, dyn man: dynyon, gelyn enemy: gelynyon*. This is the common ending of adjectives.

NOTE 4.—*morwyn maiden* becomes in the plural *morynyon*.

NOTE 5.—*-on* is based on *-ōnes*, the nom. pl. of masc. and fem. *-n-* stems, cf. Gaulish *Lingōnes*. The borrowed *lleidr robber: lladron* represents an older *\*latrī* (from *\*latrū latrō*); *\*latrōnes*; similarly *dreic dragon: dragon, Seis Saxon: Saeson*.

(d) Other old consonantal plurals, e.g. *car relative: carant* (from *\*carants: \*carantes* = Ir. *carae: carait*), *ci dog: cwn* (from *\*kuū: \*kunes*), *ych ox: ychen, brawt brother: broder, troet foot: traet, ty house: tei* (an old neut. *-s-* stem, cf. Ir. *tech*:

tige). Under the influence of §27a *carant* became *cereint*, *broder* became *brodyr*; in the same way may be explained *nei nephew*: *neieint*, *gof smith*: *goveint*. Some neut. -n-stems make their plur. in -ein, e.g. *enw* (O.W. *anu*) *name*: *enwein*, *cam step*: *cemmein*; here \*-en might have been expected as in Ir. *bēim blow*: *bēmnen*; the change of \*-en to -ein may be explained as above.

28. B. The plural is formed by various suffixes, many of which appear in the formation of abstract nouns.

(a) -awr, -iawr, e.g. *ysgwyt shield*: *ysgwydawr*, *gwaew spear*: *gwaywawr* (also *gwaewar*, *gwewyr*), *cat battle*: *cadyawr*.

NOTE.—This formation is mostly poetical.

(b) -awt (= -awd), e.g. *pysc fish*: *pyscawt*, *gorwyd steed*: *gorwydawt*.

(c) -et (= -ed), e.g. *merch daughter*: *merchet*, *pryf worm*: *pryvet*.

(d) -ed (= -eð), e.g. *bys finger*: *byssed*, *dant tooth*: *danned*, *gwreic woman*: *gwraged*.

(e) -eit, -ieit (= -eid, -ieid), e.g. *mil animal*: *mileit*, *barwn baron*: *barwneit*, *barwnyeit*.

(f) -i, e.g. *llestyr vessel*: *llestri*, *cawr giant*: *cewri*, *saer artificer*: *seiri*.

(g) -ot (= -od), e.g. *hyd stag*: *hyddot*, *llwdn beast*: *llydnnot*.

(h) -oed (= -oedð), e.g. *mor sea*: *moroed*, *ieith language*: *ieithoed*.

(i) -yd (= -yð), e.g. *avon stream*: *avonyd*, *gwlat country*: *gwledyd*, *chwaer sister*: *chwioryd*.

29. C. Some nouns are collective, with a singular formation in -ynn masc., -enn fem., e.g. *adar birds*: *ederyn a bird*, *calaf reeds*: *celevyn a reed*, *coll hazles*: *collenn a hazle*, *tywys ears of corn*: *tywysen a corn ear*.



## THE ADJECTIVE.

## GENDER.

30. There is a special form of the feminine only in the singular, and only in adjectives containing *y*, *w*, which in the feminine became *e*, *o* (§ 7a), e.g. *gwynn white*: *gwen*, *melyn yellow*: *melen*, *bychan small*: *bechan*, *brith variegated*: *breith*, *llwmm bare*: *llomm*, *crwnn round*: *cronn*.

In the singular the adjective is lenated after a feminine noun, e.g. *gwreic dec a beautiful woman* (§ 16ba); in the plural there is no lenation.

NOTE.—In the Celtic adjective there were *-o-* stems, *-i-* stems and *-u-* stems, which are distinguishable in O.Ir., e.g. *tromm heavy* from *\*trummo-s*, *cruind round* from *\*crundi-s*, and *il much* from *\*pelu-s*. Only the *-o-* stems had a fem. in *-ā*, so that only in these is the Welsh change of vowel etymologically justified. But in Welsh, after the loss of final syllables, the three classes were indistinguishable in the masculine, and the vowel-change in the feminine spread analogically from the *-o-* stems to the others, e.g. *crwnn* from *\*crundis* formed a feminine *cronn* after the analogy of *tromm*: *trwmm*, etc.

## FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

31. The plural is formed:—

(a) By change of vowel e.g. *bychan small*: *bychein*, *ieuanc young*: *ieueinc*.

(b) By adding *-on*, e.g. *du black*: *duon*, *gwineu bay*: *gwineuon*.

(c) By adding *-yon* (its usual formation), e.g. *gwynn white*: *gwynnyon*, *melyn yellow*: *melynyon*.

## CONCORD.

## Gender.

32. In the singular the attributive adjective agrees in gender with its noun, e.g. *gwas melyn an auburn lad*, *morwyn benngrech velen a curly-headed auburn maiden*. With the predicative adjective agreement is also found, e.g. *un ohonunt oed amdrom one of them was very heavy* RB. 54, 17, oed *amdrom*

*llynges the fleet was shattered* MA. 150<sup>b</sup>, *bit wenn gwylyan the seagull is white* FB. 247, *llem awel keen is the wind* FB. 255, *ys lledan y lenn its mantle is broad* FB. 146, *bolch y lauyn his blade is notched* MA. 172<sup>a</sup>; but here the masculine form is also found, e.g. *llym awel keen is the wind* BB. 45<sup>a</sup> 1, *pan yw gwyrd llinos when the linnet is green* FB. 133, *oedd bwlch llafn yn llaw gynnegin the blade was notched in a practised hand* MA. 217<sup>b</sup>, *gwaedlyd y lein bloody is his spear* MA. 184<sup>a</sup>.

### Number.

33. With the attributive adjective there is concord, the dual or a singular noun preceded by a numeral having the construction of the plural, e.g. *danned hiryon melynion long yellow teeth*, *deu vackwy wineuon ieueinc two auburn young lads*, *pedeir meillionen gwynnyon four white blades of clover*. But there are many exceptions; with certain adjectives the singular is regularly used; such are adjectives in *-awc*, *-awl*, *-eid*, *-ic*, comparatives and superlatives, some other simple adjectives such as *mawr great*, *tec beautiful*, and compound adjectives; e.g. *gwyr arvawc armed men* (but exceptionally *o vrenhined coronogyon of crowned kings* WB. p. 90<sup>a</sup>), *llygeit hebogeid hawklike eyes*, *niveroed mawr great numbers*, *dyrnodeu calet-chwerw hard bitter buffets*. With the predicative adjective there are found on the one hand, e.g. *bychein ynt wynteu they are small* RB. 60, *wynteu a veynt veirw they would be dead* Hg. I. 138, *oedd beilch gweilch heroes were proud* MA. 217<sup>b</sup>, *kertoryon neud ynt geith now poets are captive* MA. 157<sup>b</sup>, on the other hand, e.g. *cadarn oed y holl aelodau all his limbs were strong* CM. 26, *balch iawn yw dy eiryeu thy words are right haughty* CM. 34, *marw ynn they are dead* MA. 164<sup>a</sup>, *rud ynt wy they are red* FB. 284, *doeth y veirt his bards are learned* MA. 262<sup>a</sup>, *ys da y gampeu his feats are good* MA. 237<sup>b</sup>. The whole subject needs a thorough investigation.

### Order.

34. (a) In Welsh, as in the other Celtic languages, the adjective normally follows the noun, e.g. *dyn doeth a wise man*, *gwreic*

**dec** *a fair woman*, **arveu trymyon** *heavy arms*. In Celtic, when the adjective preceded, it formed a compound with the noun, e.g. Gaulish **Cambo-dunum**, which would in W. be \***cam-din**, O.Brit. **Cuno-maglos** lit. *lofty chief* = W. **Cynvael**, W. **hen-dyn** *old man* (= Ir. *sen-duine*) from \***seno-dunyo**s, W. **prif-dinas** *chief city* (cf. Ir. *prim-dūn chief fort*), W. **hen-wrach** *old hag*, which would in Irish be \***sen-ḡracc**. From this principle W. has departed in that, under conditions the details of which have still to be investigated, the inflected adjective may precede the noun, e.g. **bolch-lauyn** *a cutting blade* MA. 263<sup>a</sup>, **gwen llaw** *white hand* MA. 153<sup>b</sup>, **amryvaelon gerdeu** *various songs*.

(b) In various phrases the noun with the preposition **o**, **a** follows the adjective, e.g. **ys drwc a gedymdeith** *a uuost di thou hast been a sorry comrade*, **bychan a dial** *oed an llosgi ni our burning were a small revenge*, **ys dyhed o beth** *it is a strange thing*.

## THE PREDICATIVE NOUN AND ADJECTIVE

### WITH YN.

35. A predicative noun or adjective is often preceded by **yn** (lenating), e.g. **gwedy llosgi canhwylł ohonei yn oleuat** *idaw after she had lighted a candle as a light to him*, **mi ath roessum yn wreic y Uanawydan** *I have given thee as a wife to Manawyddan*, **ych gelwir chwi yn Grystonogyon** *ye are called Christians*, **neum goruc yn oludawc** *he has made me wealthy*, **a phob ty a welei yn llawn o win** *and every house he saw full of wine*, **yd oed ef yn holliach** *he was quite well*, **un a welei yn amdrom one** (fem.) *he saw very heavy*, **paham y maent hwy yn varw o newyn** *why are they dead with hunger?* **mi a wnaf seith cant ohonawch yn ueirw** *I will make seven hundred of you dead men*, **an gunel in rit** *may He make us free*, **eu gwneuthur yn rydyon** *to make them free*, **eu clusteu yn gochyon** *their ears red*, **eu harwydyon yn purwynn** *their standards pure white*. The concord after the feminine and the plural still needs investigation.

## ADJECTIVE PHRASES.

36. In place of a simple adjective may be found an adjectival phrase, e.g. gwr **dirvawr y veint** *a man of huge size* (lit. *a man huge his size*), eurwalch balch **bolch y daryan** *a proud golden hero with hacked shield* (lit. *hacked his shield*), gwreic digonach y thecket *a woman of more perfect beauty*, dymodeu diuessured eu meint *mighty buffets*, drwc a dyn y thygetuen *a woman of unhappy fate* (lit. *ill of a woman her fate*), ys drwc a wyr eu dihenyd vydem ni *we should be men of an ill ending*, pan yttoedynt yn digrifaf gantunt eu gware *when they were most interested in their play*, y wreic vwyhaf a garei *the woman whom he most loved*.

## COMPARISON.

37. (a) The regular suffix of the comparative is **-ach**, of the superlative **-haf** (for the phonetic changes see § 11g), e.g.—

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
tec (= teg) <i>beautiful</i>	tegach	teckaf
tlawt (= tlawd) <i>poor</i>	tlodach	tlottaf
cyffelyb <i>like</i>	cyffelybach	cyffelyppaf

NOTE.—In Mod. W. the consonantism of the superlative has spread to the comparative, e.g. teg, **tecach**, tecaf.

(b) The following are irregular :—

agos	} <i>near</i>	nes (Ir. nessa)	nesaf (Ir. nessam)
cyfagos			
bychan <i>small</i>		llel (Ir. lugu)	lleiaf (Ir. lugem)
da <i>good</i>		gwell	goreu
drwc <i>evil</i>		gwaeth	gwaethaf
hawd <i>easy</i>		haws	hawsaf
hen <i>old</i> (Ir. sen)		hyn (Ir. siniu)	hynaf
hir <i>long</i> (Ir. sīr)		hwy (Ir. sīa)	hwyaf (Ir. sīam)
ieuanc <i>young</i> (Ir. óac)		ieu (Ir. óa)	ieuaf (Ir. óam)
isel <i>low</i> (Ir. íssel)		is	isaf
llydan <i>broad</i> (Ir. lethan)		llet (Ir. letha)	llettaf
mawr <i>great</i> (Ir. mōr)		mwy (Ir. mōa)	mwyhaf (Ir. mōam)
tren <i>strong</i> (Ir. trēn)		trech (Ir. tressa)	trechaf (Ir. tressam)
uchel <i>high</i> (Ir. ūassal)		uch	uchaf

### Construction of the Comparative and Superlative.

38. (a) The comparative is followed by **no**, before vowels **noc** *than*, e.g. **ny bu hwy no hynny** *it was not longer than that*, **mwyr a vyrywys ef y dyd hwnnw noc undyd** *more he threw on that day than on any single day*.

(b) The superlative is followed by the preposition **o**, e.g. **y uorwyn deckaf onadunt** *the fairest maiden of them*.

(c) In sentences like *the more the better* the superlative is used, e.g. **pei vwyhaf y lladei ef y march pellaf vydei hitheu y wrthaw ef the more he struck the horse the farther she was from him** RB. 9, 13; **goreu yw gennyfi bo kyntaf** *the sooner it is the better it pleases me* RB. 12, 4.

### THE EQUATIVE.

39. The possession by two objects of a quality in the same degree is expressed by a derivative in **-het** (= **-hed**) from the adjective preceded by **cyn-**, **cy-**, e.g. **kynduhet (du) ar muchud** *as black as jet*, **kyngadarnet (cadarn) ac Adaf** *as strong as Adam*, **kyndecket (tec) a hi** *as fair as she*, **kynvelynet (melyn) ar eur** *as yellow as gold*, **kynehofnet (ehovyn) a hynny** *as fearless as that*, **kynwynnet (gwynn) ar eiry** *as white as snow*, **kygadarnet a brenhin** *as strong as a king*, **kyduet ar muchud** *as black as jet*, **kywynnet ar alaw** *as white as the lily*.

NOTE 1.—The Celtic preposition **com-** would in Welsh become **cym-**, **cyn-**, **cyf-**, **cy-** according to the following sound, and would be liable to various changes in connexion with a following consonant, e.g. **com** + vowel > **cyf**, **com** + **l-** > **cyfl-**, **com** + **w-** > **cy-**, **com** + **p-** > **cymh-**, **com** + **b-** > **cymm-**, **com** + **g-** > **cyng-**, **com** + **d-** > **cynn-**, etc.; there is an interesting example of the regular development in **cythrymhet** (**trwmm**) RB. 112, for **ntr** becomes **thr**. But the form **cyn-** with analogical lenation became the general form before all sounds, though for a time it had to contend with **cy-**, the form which would arise in Celtic before initial **w**. For a discussion of the formation see Zimmer KZ. xxxiv. 161 sq., Loth Rev. Celt. xviii. 392 sq., Stern CZ. iii. 135 sq.

NOTE 2.—Equality may also be expressed by **mor—**a, e.g. **pryf mor dielw a hynny** *a creature so vile as that*, **am gyhafan mor anwedus ac a wnaethoed** *on account of a crime so base as he had committed*.

### THE ADVERB.

40. The adverb is regularly formed from the adjective by prefixing **yn** (lenating), e.g. **yn vawr** (**mawr**) *greatly*, **yn llawen** *gladly*,

**yn drwmm** (**trwmm**) *heavily*, **yn well** *better*, **yn vwyhaf** *most*. But, if it precedes the verb, the adjective is used without **yn**, e.g. **mynych** y dywedut *thou didst often say*; in the following sentence both forms occur: **kans mwyl** y karyssei ef hi nor rei ereill eiryoet. a hitheu yn y dremygu ynteu **yn vwy** nor rei ereill *for he had always loved her more than the others, while she contemned him more than the others* RB. II. 65.

## THE NUMERALS.

## 41. CARDINALS AND ORDINALS.

<i>One, etc.</i>	<i>First, etc.</i>
i. un	cyntaf
ii. deu, f. dwy	eil
iii. tri, f. teir	trydyd, f. tryded
iv. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir	petwryd, petweryd, f. petwared; also pedwryd, etc.
v. pump	pymhet
vi. chwech, chwe	chwechet
vii. seith	seithvet
viii. wyth	wythvet
ix. naw	nawvet
x. dec, deng	degvet
xi. un ar dec	unvet ar dec
xii. deudec	deudegvet
xiii. tri, f. teir, ar dec	trydyd, f. tryded, ar dec
xiv. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir, ar dec	petwryd, etc., f. petwared, etc., ar dec
xv. pymthec, pymtheng	pymthegvet
xvi. un ar bymthec	unvet ar bymthec
xvii. deu, f. dwy, ar bymthec	eil ar bymthec
xviii. tri, f. teir, ar bymthec	trydyd, f. tryded, ar bymthec
xix. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir, ar bymthec, un eisieu o ugein	petwryd, etc., f. petwared, etc., ar bymthec
xx. ugeint, ugein	ugeinvet

NOTE.—The form **deng** is found only before nouns beginning with certain sounds, cf. Rev. Celt. XXVIII. 201.

**xxi.-xcix.** In O.W. **trimuceint** is found for *thirty*. The usual reckoning, however, is by multiples of *twenty* :—**deugein(t)** (O.W. **douceint**) *forty*, **deugeintvet** *fortieth*, **trugein(t)** *sixty*, **trugeinvet** *sixtieth*, **petwarugein(t)** *eighty*, **petwarugeinvet** *eightieth*. The intermediate numbers are expressed by addition, e.g. **un ar hugein(t)** *twenty-one*, **dec erydyr ar hugeint** *thirty ploughs*, **deudec brenhin ar hugeint** *thirty-two kings*, **deng mlyned a deugeint** *fifty years*, **deudeng mlyned a thrugeint** *seventy-two years*, **petwyrtyd ar ugeint** *twenty-fourth*. This reckoning may extend beyond a hundred, e.g. **pedeir gwlat a seith ugeint** *one hundred and forty-four countries*.

**c.-ccioo.** **Cant** *hundred*, **canvet** *hundredth*. From this the other hundreds are formed by prefixing the cardinals :—**deucant** or **deugant**, **trichant**, **petwarcant**, **pumcant**, **chwechant**, **seithcant**, **wythcant**, **nawcant**. **Mil** *thousand*, **dwy vil** = *two thousand*, etc. **Un vlwydyn ar bymthec ar hugeint a deucant** = *236 years*; **chwech marchawc a thrugeint a phumcant** = *566 horsemen*; **deudeng mlyned a thrugeint ac wythcant** = *872 years*; **deg mlyned a phetwar ugein a chant a mil** = *1190 years*. **ccioo.** **myrd** *myriad*.

### Syntax of the Cardinals and Ordinals.

42. (a) After **deu**, **dwy**, the singular (i.e. historically the dual § 25) form is regularly used; but there are exceptions, e.g. **deu ychen** *two oxen* (where, however, the form might be dual), **dwy chwioried** *two sisters* LA. 39, RB. II. 39, **dwy burloywduon hirueinon aeleu** *two brilliant black long slender eyebrows* (by **dwy ael**) LA. 93, **deu rudellyon lygeit** *two ruddy eyes* ib., **deu perffeithloyw gochyon rudyau** *two perfect brilliant red cheeks* ib., **deu nyeint** *two nephews* RB. II. 69, **dwy wraged** *two wives* ib. 239 **dwy vlyned** *two years* ib. 240. As to the higher numbers the general rule is that, if there be a plural with internal vowel change (§ 27a), the plural is used, e.g. **tri meib** *three sons*, but otherwise the noun is in the singular, e.g. **teir ynys** *three islands* (pl. **ynysed**), **petwar marchawc** *four horsemen* (pl. **marchogyon**). There are, however,

exceptions, e.g. **teir chwioryd** *three sisters*, **pump gwraged** *five women*, **trychant tei** *three hundred houses*; so very often with **dyd** *day* pl. **dieu**, and **blwydyn** *year* pl. **blyned**. Compare the exceptions after **deu** above. Another mode of expression is, e.g. **tri chawr o gewri** *three giants*, lit. *three giants of giants*.

(b) The ordinals precede the noun, e.g. **y betwared vlwydyn** *the fourth year*. But **cyntaf** usually follows, e.g. **y marchawc kyntaf** *the first horseman*; sometimes, however, it precedes, e.g. **kyntaw geir** a **dýwedaw** *the first word that I will say* BB. 41<sup>b</sup> 1. The ordinal may denote not the order in a series, but, as also in Irish, one of a certain number, e.g. **odena y kerdus er tir a naw kedem-deith ganthav, ar nauvet** a las ar hynt *thence he came to land with nine comrades, and one of the nine was slain at once* Arch. Cambr. 1866 p. 114, **y trydý gwr** a **dienghis o Gamlan** *one of the three men who escaped from Camlan* WB. 463; **e tredyt anhebchor** *one of the three indispensables* BCh. 8.

#### DISTRIBUTIVES.

43. These are expressed by prefixing **pob** *every* to the cardinal, e.g. **eu bwrw pob dec pob deudec** *throwing them by tens and twelves* Hg. II. 160, **gwin ý bid hi ý vedwen in diffrin Guý** a sirth ý chegev **pop vn pop dvý** *happy the birch in the valley of the Wye, whose branches fall by twos and threes* BB. 24<sup>a</sup>.

#### MULTIPLICATIVES.

44. These are expressed by **gweith** f. preceded by the cardinal, e.g. **unweith** *once*, **dwý weith** *twice*, **teir gweith** *thrice*, **pedeir gweith** *four times* etc.

### THE PRONOUN.

#### PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

##### The Independent Pronoun.

45. Independent pronouns fall into three sub-divisions, (a) the simple pronoun, (b) the emphatic pronoun, (c) the conjunctive or contrasting pronoun (*I also, I on my part, I on the other hand,*



etc.) When attached to a verb as its subject the pronouns are liable to weakening, e.g. **vi**, **i** for **mi**, **di** for **ti**, **ditheu** for **titheu**. Classes (a) and (c) are used also to reinforce an infixed pronoun (§49a), a pronominal preposition (§52), or a possessive pronoun (§56), or possessive adjective (§58); then, too, they are liable to the same reduction (§17a).

(a) Simple.	(b) Emphatic.	(c) Conjunctive.
<i>I, me</i> <b>mi</b> , <b>vi</b> , <b>vy</b> , <b>i</b> , <b>y</b> .	<b>mivi</b> , <b>myvi</b> , <b>myvy</b> , <b>vivi</b> , <b>vyvi</b> .	<b>minheu</b> , <b>minneu</b> , <b>inneu</b> .
<i>We, us</i> <b>ni</b> , <b>ny</b> .	<b>nini</b> , <b>nyny</b> .	<b>ninheu</b> , <b>ninneu</b> .
<i>Thy, thee</i> <b>ti</b> , <b>di</b> , <b>dy</b> , <b>de</b> .	<b>tidi</b> , <b>tydi</b> , <b>dydi</b> , <b>dydy</b> .	<b>titheu</b> , <b>ditheu</b> .
<i>Ye, you</i> <b>chwi</b> .	<b>chwichwi</b> .	<b>chwitheu</b> .
<i>He, him</i> <b>ef</b> (O.W. <b>em</b> ).	<b>efo</b> .	<b>ynteu</b> .
<i>She, her</i> <b>hi</b> , <b>hy</b> .	<b>hihi</b> .	<b>hitheu</b> .
<i>They, them</i> (h) <b>wy</b> , (h) <b>wynt</b> .	(h) <b>wyntwy</b> .	(h) <b>wynteu</b> .

NOTE 1.—In **chwi** the **w** may be omitted after **w** in the verb, e.g. **ewchi** *go ye*, **dowchi** *come ye*.

NOTE 2.—**wy** is the earlier form, which became **wynt** under the influence of the ending **-nt** of the 3 plur. of the verb, just as O.Ir. **ē** *they* became in Mid.Ir. **iat**. In Mid.W. **wynt** is particularly used when it precedes the verb, e.g. **wynt a welynt** *they saw*, but **y gwelynt wy**; this, however, is a later distinction, in earlier Welsh **wy** is used everywhere, e.g. **wy gwnaethant** *they did*, **wy ladassant** *they slew*.

46. The independent pronouns are used as the subject of a sentence, as the object of a sentence, where, however, they enter into concurrence with the infixed pronoun (§48), (which, to judge from Irish, was the original method of expressing the object), after prepositions which did not enter into a unity with the pronoun (§52), and after some conjunctions. The following examples will illustrate the usage:—

(a) **mi** *a wna* **f** *I will do*; **pan y gweleis i ef** *when I saw him*; **nyt yspeilwys ynteu vi** *he did not strip me*; **a rithwys Duw cyn no mi** *whom God created before me*; **ti a wely** *thou wilt see*; **a wely di dost** *thou see?* **kymer dy hun ef** *take it thyself*; **nyt oes seith cantref**

well noc **wy** *they are not seven cantreds better than they*; gyt ac **wynt** *along with them*.

(b) kynt y kyuarhawd ef well y mi no **miui** idaw ef *he greeted me before I greeted him*; pa le y keisswn i **dydi**? pan geissych di **vyvi**, keis parth ar India "*where should I seek thee?*" "*When thou seekest me, seek towards India*"; gofyn a oruc idi ae **hihi** oed yn peri hynny *he asked her if it was she who was causing that*.

(c) Mivi a rodaf vvg cret, heb hi, na charaf i dydi ac nath vynnaf yn dragwydawl. **minneu** a rodaf vvg cret, heb y Peredur, na dywedaf **ynneu** eir byth wrth Gristiawn yny adewych **ditheu** arnat vvg caru i yn vwyhaf gwr "*I pledge my faith,*" said she, "*that I do not love thee and that I will not desire thee to all eternity.*" "*I, on my part,*" said Peredur, "*pledge my faith that I will never speak a word to Christian soul, until thou shalt confess that thou lovest me more than any man;*" ac yn keissaw bwrw y gelein ar y march yn y kyfrwy, y dygwydei **ynteu** yr llawr ac y dodei **hitheu** diaspat *and as she sought to cast the corpse on the horse into the saddle, it kept falling to the ground, and she raised a cry*.

NOTE.—**ynteu** etc., is also used before a proper name, e.g. y wybot dy atdeb di am hynny y deuthum i. Rof i a Duw, heb ynteu Bwyll, llyna vy atdeb i ytti, "*I have come to learn thy answer about that.*" "*Between God and me,*" said Pwyll, "*here is thy answer*" RB. II. cf. RB. 25, 65, 77, 79, 81, etc., **wynteu y Galissyeit** CM. 1; before a common noun, e.g. sef a wnaeth **ynteu yr eryr** *this the eagle did* RB. 78, a **hitheu wreic** Teirnon a gytsynnywys *and the wife of Teirnon agreed* RB. 22; after a proper name, e.g. Troilus **ynteu lleiaf mab y Briaf** oed herwyd oet *Troilus was Priam's youngest son* RB. II. 7, so RB. 14, II. 8, 9, 14, 22, Castor a Pholux **wynteu** a aethant *Castor and Pollux went* RB. II. 9, y Telepus **ynteu** RB. II. 17; after a common noun, e.g. a gwyr Troea **wynteu a ymhoelassant** *and the men of Troy on their part returned* RB. II. 20; and in instances like: y gelwit hi Lundein neu **ynteu** Lwndrys *it was called Lundein or Lwndrys* RB. 93, neu **ynteu** ony edy hynny udunt *or again if you do not allow them that* RB. II. 44. Cf. Mod.W. **ynte**.

47. **Issem, ysef, sef**. In O.W. the pron. **em** is used with **iss**, **is** is in phrases like **issem** i anu *that is his name*. From **issem** comes in Mid.W. **ysef, sef**, e.g. **ysef** a rodaf inneu *this is what I will give*; **sef**, gwreic a vynnawd Kicua *that was the wife he desired, Rigfa*; **ssef** a gafas yn y chyghor fo y ynyalwch *this is what she resolved upon, to flee into a wilderness*; **sef** y kychassant y dref uchaf o Arllechwed *they made for the highest town of Arllechwedd*;

arglwyd, heb ynteu, minneu a allaf dy rydhau ditheu. **sef** ual y gallaf "*Lord,*" said he, "*I can free thee. This is how I can do it;*" **ssef** y gwelynt varchawc *then they saw a horseman.* In a similar way **ef** is used by itself, e.g. pan dyuu y thymp idi, **ef** a dyuu y hiawnbwyll idi *when her time of labour came, then her right senses came to her.*

## 48.

## Infixd Pronoun.

Sing.	Plur.
1. <i>me</i> - <b>m</b> -	<i>us</i> - <b>n</b> -
2. <i>thee</i> - <b>th</b> -	<i>you</i> - <b>ch</b> -
3. <i>him, her, it</i> - <b>s</b> -, - <b>e</b> -	<i>them</i> - <b>s</b> -, - <b>e</b> -

## REMARKS.

49. (a) The infixd pronoun may be strengthened by putting the corresponding simple or conjunctive pronoun after the verb, e.g. a thydi **am** gwely i *and thou shalt see me*, euo **ath** gud ditheu *he will hide thee.*

(b) In the third person -**e**- is used after the relative particle **a**, e.g. mi **ae** gwelaf *I see him*, and after the conjunction **tra**, e.g. **trae** llathei pob tri *while he slew them by threes* BB. 48<sup>a</sup>, mi **ae** kynhalyaf hyt **trae** gallwyf *I shall maintain it as long as I can* Hg. I, 4; elsewhere -**s**- is used. After the verbal particle **yd**-, however, if the verb begins with a consonant, there is no visible pronoun of the third person, e.g. **y** gwelaf *I see her* RB. 278, 6; a phan i gweles meibion Collwyn *and when the sons of Collwyn saw him* MA. 729<sup>a</sup>; if the verb begins with a vowel **yh** appears, e.g. **y** hanuones *sent it* WB. 104, **y** hedewynt *they left them* WB. 186; similarly after **yny** until, e.g. ny dygaf i un daryan **yny** hanuono Duw im *I shall not bear any shield till God send it to me* Hg. I. 15. After **pan** when the infixd pronoun is regularly preceded by **y**-, e.g. **pan** yth wnaethpwyd ti *when thou wast made*; in the third person it is **pan y(h)**, e.g. **panny** y harcho udunt *when he asks it of them* LA. 56.

(c) In early poetry in connexion with **ny** and **ry** there are in the third person special forms, **nwy**, **nyw**, **rwy**, **ryw**, used when the verb is relative, e.g. ir nep **nuy** hatnappo *to one who does not*

recognise it BB. 4<sup>b</sup>, nyt kerdaur **nyu** moluy *he is not a poet who does not praise him* MA. 174<sup>b</sup>, y ren **rwyt** digonsei *the King who had made them* FB. 138. In non-relative usage the infixed pron. after **ny** is **-s-**, the form of the non-relative infixed pronoun after **ry** I have not been able to establish.

NOTE.—The infixed pronoun may, as in Irish, anticipate a following object, e.g. ai torro hac aý dimanuo ý bryeint hunn *who shall violate and diminish this privilege*, aý enrydedocao ý breint hunn *who shall respect this privilege* Lib. Land. 121, y harchwn ni dy drugared *we ask thy mercy* RB. II. 44.

50. The infixed pronoun follows:—

(a) The relative particle **a**, e.g. mynn y gwr **a-n** gwnaeth *by Him who made us*, Duw **a-ch** nodho *may God protect you*, mi **a-e** harhoaf *I will await him, her, it, or them*, **a-e** lladawd ef *who killed him*, y niver **a-e** gwelei wynt *the multitude that saw them*.

(b) The verbal particle **yd**, e.g. **y-m** gelwir *I am called*, **ywch** kymhellasant *they have compelled you*.

(c) The infixing particle **a-** (§ 94), e.g. **a-m** bo *may there be to me*, **a-th** volaf *I will praise thee*, **a-s** rodwy trindawt trugared *may the Trinity give him mercy*, gwedi **a-n** gwelwch *after ye see us*, pei **a-s** archut *if thou hadst asked it*, kyt **a-m** llatho *though he should slay me*. So when this **a-** has been replaced by **y-**, e.g. **y-s** rodho Duw ymi *may God give it me* LA. 121.

(d) The verbal particle **ry-** in the earlier language, e.g. **ry-m** goruc *he has made me*. But in later Mid.W. the pronoun is infixed before **ry-** by means of **yd-**, e.g. **y-th** ry gereis *I have loved thee*.

(e) The particle **neu-**, e.g. **neu-m** goruc *he has made me* MA. 141<sup>a</sup>, **neu-s** cud *hides it* FB. 272.

(f) Sometimes in early poetry **dy-** of compound verbs, e.g. **dy-m** ryd *gives me*.

(g) The negatives, e.g. **ny-m** oes *there is not to me*, **ny-s** gweleis *I have not seen him, her, it, or them*, **cany-ch** gwelas neb *since no one has seen you*; **na-m** gommed *do not refuse me*, mi a debygaf **na-ch** rydhawyt *I think that you have not been freed*.

NOTE.—In later Mid.W. **nys** seems sometimes to be used merely in a relative sense, e.g. yn y wlat **ny-s** ry welsei *in the country that he had not seen* RB. 114, 13 = ýn ý wlad ný rý welei WB. 471. This usage may have

developed from cases where the nominative stands at the head of the sentence introducing it (§ 26), e.g. *amhen yr lynn a dywedwch chwi ny-s gwnaf i* lit. *doubting of what you say I will not do it*. A meaningless *-s-*, however, is found when the verb is non-relative, e.g. *nys gohiryassant* *they did not delay* RB. II. 48.

(h) Certain conjunctions :—*tra-e* *llathei* *while he slew them* BB. 48\*, *yny-m* *byrywyt i* *till I was thrown* RB. 169, *o-s* *lledy* *if thou slayest him* Hg. I. 368. Some conjunctions are followed by the infixing *a*, see above (c).

51. The infixed pronoun commonly expresses the accusative relation. With the verb 'to be,' however, it regularly expresses its dative relation, e.g., *am bo* *may there be to me, may I have*, vn tat *ae bu* *one father they had* ; it may further express the dative relation with other verbs, e.g. *y perffeith garyat hwnnw an* *rodho yr yspryt glan* *may the Holy Spirit give us that perfect love* LA. 103, *an gunel iechid* *may He work salvation for us* BB. 20<sup>b</sup>.

#### PRONOUN WITH PREPOSITION.

52. In Welsh as in Irish the pronoun is regularly fused together with the preposition. After *ac* *with* and *gwedy* *after*, however, the pronoun follows separately, e.g. *a mi* *with thee*, *gwedy ni* *after us* ; the explanation seems to be that the usage of these words as prepositions is secondary. With respect to the formation, the following points may be noted.

(a) In the first and second persons (except after *y* *to*) there is an intervening vowel *a*, *o* (*aw*), or *y* (and in 2 pl. also *w*), so that in these persons there are the following series :—

Sing.	Plur.
1. -af, -of, -yf	-am, -om, -ym
2. -at, -ot, -yt	-awch, -och, -wch, -ych

(b) In the 3 sg. masc. the ending is *-aw*, in the 3 sg. fem. *-i* (inflecting a preceding vowel) and *-ei*, e.g. *oheni* and *ohonei* ; sometimes the inflected vowel spreads analogically, e.g. 3 pl. *ohenynt*. In the 3 pl. the oldest ending was *-u*, whence developed later *-ud* (i.e. *-uđ*), *-unt*, *-ynt*. In the third persons *-aw*, *-u*, etc., are commonly preceded by a dental.

(c) In the 1 sg. and 3 pl. there are also endings **-wyf, -wynt**.

(d) After the prepositions **ar, o, am** are inserted respectively **-n-, -hon-, -dan-** (i.e. the prep. **tan** *under*). In the 3 pl. there are certain other insertions.

53. The forms assumed by the pronouns in connection with the several prepositions will be seen from the following table :—

	Sing.	Plur.
<b>am</b> <i>about</i>	1. amdanaf, ymdanaf 2. ymdanat 3m. amdanaw, ymdanaw 3f. ymdeni, amdanei, ymdanei	amdanam amdanawch amdanunt, ymdanunt, amdanadunt, ym- danadud, ymdana- dunt, amdanwynt
<b>ar</b> <i>on</i>	1. arnaf 2. arnat 3m. arnaw 3f. arnei, arni, erni	arnam arnawch, arnoch arnunt, arnynt, ar- nadud, arnadunt
<b>att</b> <i>to</i>	1. attaf 2. attat 3m. attaw 3f. attei, etti	attam attawch attunt, attadunt
<b>can, gan</b> <i>with</i>	1. genhyf, gennyf 2. genhyt, gennyt 3m. gantaw, ganthaw, gentaw 3f. genti, genthi	genhym, gennym genhwch, gennwch gantunt, ganthu, ganthud, ganthunt
<b>heb</b> <i>without</i>	1. hebof 2. hebot 3m. hebdaw 3f. hebdi	hebdunt
<b>is</b> <i>below</i>	3f. adisti	

	Sing.	Plur.
<b>nem</b> <i>except</i>		
<i>of</i>	2.	nemoch
<b>o</b> <i>from</i>	1. ohonaf, ohanaf, ohonof	ohonam, ohonom
	2. ohonat, ohonawt, ohonot	ohonawch
	3m. ohonaw	ohonu, ohonunt, ohenynt, onadu, onadunt
	3f. oheni, ohoni, ohonei, ohanei, ohenei	
<b>rac</b> <i>before</i>	1. ragof	ragom, rogom
	2. ragot	ragawch, ragoch
	3m. racdaw, rogdaw	racdu, racdunt, rocdunt
	3f. recdi, racdi, rocdi, rygthi	
<b>ro</b> <i>between</i>	1. yrof	yrom
	2. yrot	yryoch, yroch
	3m. yrydaw	yrydunt
	3f. yrydi	
<b>rwng</b> <i>be- tween</i>	1.	yrynghom
	2. ryngot	ryngoch
	3m. ryngtaw, ryngthaw, ygrythaw	ryngdunt, ryngtunt, ryngthunt, ryndynt
	3f. ryngthi	
NOTE.—In O.W. there is also a 3 pl. <i>igridu</i> Lib. Land. XLIII. l. 9, and in poetry from <i>cyfrwng</i> a 3 pl. <i>cyfryngthud</i> .		
<b>tan, dan</b>	1. adanaf	ydanam
<i>under</i>	3m. ydanaw, adantaw	adanunt, ydanunt,
	3f. deni, adanei	adanadunt
<b>tros</b> <i>over</i>	1. trossof	trossom
	2. trossot	trossawch, trossoch
	3m. trostaw	trostud, trosdunt
	3f. trosti	

Usually with initial *d*, *drossof* etc.

	Sing.	Plur
<b>trwy</b>	1. trwydof	
<i>through</i>	2. trwydot	
	3m. trwydaw }	trwydunt
	3f. trwydi }	
<b>uch</b> <i>above</i>	1.	uchom
	3m. odyuchtaw }	
	3f. oduchti }	
<b>wrth</b>	1. wrthyf	wrthym
<i>towards</i>	2. wrthyt	wrthych, wrthywch
	3m. wrthaw }	wrthu, wrthunt
	3f. wrthi }	
<b>y</b> (O.W. di)	1. im	in
<i>to</i>	2. itt	ywch
	3m. idaw }	udu, udud, udunt
	3f. idi }	
<b>yn</b> <i>in</i>	1. ynof	
	2. ynot	ynoch
	3m. yndaw }	yndunt
	3f. yndi }	
<b>yr</b> <i>for</i>	1. yrof	erom
	2. yrot	yroch
	3m. yrdaw	yrdunt, erdunt

54. The above forms may be strengthened by the addition of the simple or the conjunctive pronouns, e.g. *arnaf i, gennym ni, itti, ohonawch chwi, idaw ef, erni hi, udunt hwy; yrof inneu, attat titheu, gennwch chwitheu, ohonei hitheu, attunt wynteu.*

#### 55. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

1. <i>mine</i>	<b>meu</b>	<i>ours</i>	<b>einom, einym</b>
2. <i>thine</i>	<b>teu</b>	<i>yours</i>	<b>einwch, einywch</b>
3. <i>his</i>	<b>eidaw</b>	<i>theirs</i>	<b>eidud, eidunt</b>
	<i>hers</i> <b>eidi</b>		



56. They are used (a) alone, (b) preceded by the article, (c) preceded by a possessive adjective, (d) after a noun, which may be preceded by a possessive adjective. They may be strengthened by a following personal pronoun. The following examples will illustrate the usage:—

(a) *y sawl a uo meu all that are mine; ny bo teu dy benn may not thy head be thine, milwriaeth kymeint ac a oed eidunt all the valour that was theirs, y rei a oed eidaw ef those that were his, nyt yttoed y llew yn deu ytti the lion was not thine* Hg. I. 63, *nyt oes petrus genyf gaffel holl Freinc yn einym I have no doubt that we should get all France as ours* RB. II. 116.

(b) *neb un mor wedus cledyf ar y ystlys ar meu i none whose sword on his side is so becoming as mine; y mae y meu i y lle hwnn this place is mine; ath gedymdeithas yssyd adolwyn gennyf y gaffel. keffy, myn vyg cret, a dyro ditheu y teu, "and I would pray to have thy friendship." "Thou shalt have it, by my faith, and give me thine;" deu parth vy oet a deu parth y teu ditheu two-thirds of my life and two-thirds of thine; dwc uendith Duw ar einym gennyf take with thee God's blessing and ours; ef a daw y dwyn yr einwch he will come to carry off your property; py darpar yw yr einywchi yna what preparation is that of yours there? nyt oed olwc degach nor eidi there was no aspect fairer than hers.*

(c) *pa vedwl yw dy teu ti what purpose is thine? mivi a dodaf vyg korff yn erbyn y eidaw I will set my body against his.*

(d) *ar dy drugeinueth or rei teu ditheu with sixty of your men* CM. 8; *o rei eidaw ef of his* LA.; *or petheu einym nynhev of our things* LA. 164; *dy ymadrawd teu di thy speech* Hg. II. 1.

## 57. POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

	a	b	a	b
1. <i>my</i>	<b>vy, vyn</b> (before explosives)	'm	<i>our</i>	<b>an, yn</b>
2. <i>thy</i>	<b>dy</b>	'th	<i>your</i>	<b>ach, ych, awch</b>
3. <i>his</i>	<b>y</b>	'e, 'y	<i>their</i>	<b>eu, y</b>
<i>her</i>	<b>y</b>	'e, 'y		

## Remarks.

58. (a) The **b** forms occur in fusion with a preceding preposition or conjunction. Such forms in the 2 pl. seem to be comparatively rare, e.g. **ych** plith *in your midst* by **yn ych** plith LA., etc. **ach** rydit *and your freedom* RB. II. 189; more usually **yn awch** medyañt chwi *in your power* RB. II. 50.

(b) With the prep. **y** in the third persons there is a variety of forms : **y, yw, eu, oe, oc eu**.

(c) The possessives may be strengthened by the addition of a simple or conjunctive pronoun after the noun.

59. Examples : (a) **vy arveu** *my arms*, **vy nyuot** (**dyvot**) *my coming*, **an meirch ninneu** *our horses*, **dy benn** *thy head*, **awch cledyveu** *your swords*, **y wreic ef** *his wife*, **y phenn** *her head*, **eu hieith** *their tongue*.

(b) **ym tat** *to my father*, **am arveu** *and my arms*, **yn porthi ni** *supporting us* (lit. *our supporting*), **ath teulu** *with thy household*, **ach rydit** *and your freedom*, **ydys ych gwahawd** *you are invited*, **ywch didanu** *to comfort you*, **och pechodeu** *from your sins*, **ae waet ynteu** *and his blood*, **y** (= **yw** WB.) **letty** *to his lodging* RB. 284, **ae ueirch yw y rei hynn** *and these are his horses* RB. 28, **oe chladu** *to bury her*, **y cheissaw** *to seek her*, **oe hanvod** *against her will*, **oe harveu** *from their arms*, **y kestyll** *to their fortresses*, **oe gwlatod** *to their countries*, **oc eu porthi** *to support them*.

NOTE.—Sometimes, as in Irish, the possessive seems to anticipate a following genitive, e.g. **yn y geissaw ynteu** *Peredur seeking for Peredur* WB. 140, **y hwyneb hitheu Riannon** *the face of Riannon* RB. 18, 27, **am y mýnwyl** (without **y** RB. 117, 19) **y uorwýn** *about the neck of the maiden* WB. 475.

## SELF.

60. This is expressed by sg. **hun, hunan**, pl. **hun, hunein** added to personal pronouns or to possessive pronouns or adjectives, e.g. **my hun, myvy vy hun** *I myself*, **ohonaf vy hun** *by me myself*, **ym vy hunan** *to me myself*, **vym penn vy hun** *my own head*, **arnom ny hunein** *upon us ourselves*; **dy hun** *thou thyself*, **yth**

person **dy hunan** *in thy own person*; or **tat ehunan** *from the father himself*, **ny digawn ehunan** *he is not able himself*, **ef ae byryawd ehun** *he cast himself*, **idaw ehun** *to himself*; **hi ehunan** *she herself*, **ohonei ehunan** *by her herself*; **wynt ehun** *they themselves*, **yr etholedigyon ehunein** *the elect themselves*, **yrydunt ehun** WB. 211 = **yryngtunt ehunein** RB. 272 *between themselves*, **yn eu** *cnawt ehun* *in their own flesh*, **yn eu rith ehunein** *into their own form*.

## DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

61. **hwnn** *this*, **hwnnw** *that*.

	Sing.	Plur.		Sing.	Plur.
M.	<b>hwnn</b>	} <b>hynn</b>		<b>hwnnw</b>	} <b>hynny</b>
F.	<b>honn</b>			<b>honno</b>	
N.	<b>hynn</b>			<b>hynny</b>	

62. These pronouns are used :—

(a) absolutely, e.g. **beth yw hwnn?** *heb y Peredur wrth y kyfrwy. kyfrwy yw, heb yr Owein* “*What is this?*” *said Peredur, with reference to the saddle. “It is a saddle,” said Owein*; **Peredur oed y enw, a ieuhaf oed hwnnw** *Peredur was his name and he was youngest*; **yna y kymeth ynteu yr hutlath. camma di dros honn**, *heb ef then he took the magic wand. “Step over this,” said he*; **yn ol honno y kerdwys ef** *he went after her*; **a hyn a dywedaf ytti and this I will tell thee**; **mi a wnaf na chaffo ef viui vyth. pa ffuryf vyd hynny?** *heb y Pwyll “I will effect that he shall never get me.” “How will that be?” said Pwyll*; **yn ol hynny** *after that*.

(b) After a substantive preceded by the article, e.g. **ger llaw auon a elwit yn yr amser hwnnw** *Sabrina, yn yr amser hwnn y gelwir hitheu Hafren, beside a river that was called at that time Sabrina, at this time it is called Severn*; **yn yr ynys honn** *in this island*; **y nos honno** *that night*; **yr anniveileit hynn** *these animals*; **yr enweu hynny** *those names*. Similarly in the plural with **rei**, e.g. **pa ryw aniveileit yw y rei hynny?** *what kind of animals are those?*

(c) Preceded by the article, e.g. dywet, heb y Gereint, py fford oreu inni gerdet or dwy hyn. Goreu itt gerdet hon, heb ef, ot ey **yr hon** issot ny deuy trachefyn vyth "*Tell,*" said Gereint, "*which of these two roads is best to travel.*" "*It is best for thee to travel by this one,*" said he; "*if thou travel by the lower one, thou wilt never come back.*" It may be followed by a genitive, e.g. Heuel ar doythyon . . . a ossodassant eu hemendyth **ar honn Kemry holl** *Howell and the wise men set their curse and that of all the Welsh* BCh. 1. In particular **yr hwnn**, etc., is frequently followed by a relative clause, e.g. bei dywetut ti y peth a ovynnaf ytti, minneu a dywedwn **yr hynn** a ovynny ditheu *if thou wouldst tell the thing that I desire of thee, I would tell that which thou desirest*; ef a vennyc fford itti ual y keffych **yr hynn** a geissy *he will show thee a road so that thou mayest obtain what thou seekest*; pw y bynnac . . . a drem-yckont dysgu **yr hynn** a dylynt y wneuthur *whoever despise learning what they ought to do*; Bryttaen oreu or ynyssed **yr hon** a elwit gynt y wen ynys *Britain, the best of the islands, which was formerly called the White Isle*; yr heul **yn yr hwnn** y mae tri pheth *the sun in which are three things*. In this usage the plural is **y rei**, e.g. gwaged oll eithyr **y rei** oed yn gwassanaethu *all the women except such as were serving*; gweirglodyeu . . . **yn y rei** y maent fflynhoneu gloew eglur **or rei** y kerdant ffrydeu *meadows in which are clear bright springs, from which issue streams*. This device for expressing an inflected relative is particularly common in the translation literature.

#### ARTICLE + SUBSTANTIVE + ADVERB.

63. Some adverbs have a demonstrative force along with a substantive preceded by the article, e.g. deu ychen, y lleill yssyd **or parth hwnt** yr mynyd ar llall **or parth yma** *two oxen, one of them is on yonder side of the mountain, the other on this side*; beth yw **y rei racko?** *what are those yonder?* att **y vorwyn** draw *to the maiden yonder*.

## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

64. **neb** (= Ir. *nech*) *some one* is used :—

(a) Substantively, e.g. *a weleist di neb hast thou seen any one?*  
*nyt adwaeney neb efo no one recognised him.*

(b) With the article before a relative clause, e.g. *eduiar uyd yr neb ae wnaeth whoever has done it will repent it*; *ny chigleu i dim or neb a ouynnwch chwi I have heard nothing of him of whom you ask* RB. 129.

(c) Adjectively, e.g. *gwell yw dedyf Cristonogaeth no neb dedyf*  
*or byt the law of Christendom is better than any law in the world.*

65. **pawb** (= Ir. *cāch*) *every one* is used substantively, e.g. *sef a orugant pawb or teulu that is what each one of the household did*; *Peredur a rodes y bawp gystal ae gilyd Peredur gave to every one as much as to the other.*

66. **pob** (the unaccented form of **pawb**, = Ir. *cach*, *cech*) is used adjectively, e.g. *pob peth every thing*. **Pob** is also used with **un** *one*, e.g. *pob un onadunt every one of them*; the plural is **pob rei**, e.g. *a phob rei ohonunt o bop parth a gladassant y rei meirw and both sides buried the dead* RB. II. 30.

67. **oll** *all*, e.g. *y deulu oll all his household*; *gwraged oll all the women*; *cewri ynt oll they are all giants*. Before a noun is found **holl**, e.g. *yr holl gwn all the dogs*. In composition with numerals there appear **ell**, **ill**, **yll** e.g. *ell deu, ill deu, yll deu both*; *ell pedwar, yll pedwar all four*.

NOTE.—A compound **hollre** is found, e.g. *ý rolre seint all the saints* BB. 36\*, *yn holre oludod in all manner of wealth* LA. 165, *hollre genedyf anifeileit every kind of animals* LA. 166.

68. **arall** *another*, pl. **ereill**, is used :—

(a) Substantively, e.g. *kymer ef a dyro y arall take it and give it to another*; *da arall the goods of another*; *penneu rei a dygynt, llygeit ereill, a chlusteu ereill, a breicheu ereill they took away the heads of some, the eyes of others, and the ears of others, and the arms of others*.

(b) Adjectively, e.g. *marchawc arall another horseman*; *y*

**gymeint arall** *as much again*; **arveu gwell nor rei ereill** *arms better than the others.*

**69. neill** *one of two*, e.g. **y neill** or **llewot** *one of the two lions*; **y gwydyat vot yndaw y neill** *ae gwr ae gwreic he knew that there was in it either a man or a woman* Hg. I. 54; **ar y neill law y gwr oed Peredur yn eisted** *Peredur was seated on one hand of the man*; **pob un ar neilltu** *each one separately.*

**70. y llall** *the other*, pl. **y lleill**, e.g. **y kymeth Peredur hanner y bwyd idaw ehun ac adaw y llall yr vorwyn** *Peredur took half of the food to himself and left the other to the maiden*; **ar vn y bydei borth ef idaw a gollei y gware, ar llall a dodei awr** *and the one whom he was helping lost the game, and the other raised a shout*; **paham na chadarnhawyt y lleill velle** *why were not the others thus strengthened?* LA. 8; **cwymp y lleill** *the fall of the others* LA. 8; **y daw y llall** *his other son-in-law*, **an brodyr y lleill** *our other brethren* LA.

**71. y neill, y lleill, —y llall** *the one—the other*, e.g. **y neill ohonunt yn was gwineu ar llall yn was melyn** *one of them an auburn lad, the other a yellow lad*; **yn y orffei y lleill ar y llall** *till the one overcame the other.* With a substantive **arall** is used in place of **llall**, e.g. **or neill tu—or tu arall** *on the one side—on the other side.*

**72. y gilyd** is used for *the other* in expressions like:—**dymodeu calet a rodei bawp onadunt y gilyd** *each of them gave hard buffets to the other*; **yn un or teir person noe gilyd** *in one of the three persons than in another*; **or mor pwy gilyd** *from sea to sea*; **corph ni glivit pa leueir y gilit** *body, who hearest not what thy fellow says* BB. 10<sup>b</sup>.

NOTE.—**y gilyd** (=Ir. a chéile) means literally *his fellow*, but, as in Irish, the phrase has become petrified in this form, and is used without respect to gender, number, or person.

#### SUBSTANTIVES IN A PRONOMINAL FUNCTION.

**73. dim** *thing*, e.g. **kymer gret y mackwy na dywetto dim** *or a welas yman* *pledge the youth that he will not tell aught of what he has seen here*; **heb allel gwneuthur dim lles** *without being able to do any good.*

74. **peth** m. *thing*, e.g. **kymmer dy varch nu a pheth oth arueu** *take thou thy horse then and some of thy arms*; **onyt ef a wyr peth or hynn** *unless he knows something of this*.

75. **rei**, e.g. **rei onadunt** *some of them*, **rei drut rei mut** *some bold, some dumb* FB. 164, cf. § 62 (c).

76. **ryw** m. *kind*, e.g. **pa ryw chwedleu yssyd gennynt** *what kind of news hast thou?* **na allei neb ryw dyn** *marwawl datkanu so that no mortal man could proclaim*; **ymlad ar ryw dyn hwnnw** *to fight such a man as that* RB. II. 182; **gwelet y ryw gatwent honno** *to see such a fight as that* ib. 58; **drwy y ryw edewidyon twyllodrus hynny** *through such false promises as those* ib. 104. Similarly **cyvryw**, e.g. **yr kyfryw wr hwnnw** *to a man of such a kind* ib. 65.

NOTE.—Observe that in expressions like **y ryw dyn hwnnw** the pronoun is attracted in gender and number to the noun preceding. Cf. the similar attraction with **sawl** below.

77. **sawl** f. *multitude* and **meint** *greatness*, e.g. **yr sawl a dihgassei oe wyr yn vyw** *to those of his men who had escaped alive*; **yr honn (sc. breich) a ladawd y sawl gewri** *which slew so many giants*; **by sawl nef ysyd** *how many heavens are there?* **y sawl nifer hwnnw** *such a number as that* RB. II. 139; **y ssawl vlwynyded hynny** *so many years as that* ib. 44; **colli y meint gwyr a oed idaw** *to lose all the men that he had* ib. 46; **blyghau a oruc Goronilla rac meint oed o varchogyon gyt ae** *that Goronilla became angry because there were so many soldiers with her father* ib. 66; **ymerbynyeit ar ueint allu hwnnw** *to encounter such a force as that* ib. 348; **yn y veint perigyl honno** *in so great danger as that* ib. 160; **y veint uudugolyaetheu hynny** *such great victories as that* ib. 199.

78. **un** *one*, e.g. **eithyr bot yn prudach pryt Gwydyon noc un y gwas** *except that the aspect of Gwydyon was graver than that of the lad*.

#### INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

79. **pwyl** *who, what*, used substantively, e.g. **pwyl wyt** *who art thou?* **y bwy y rodit** *(they discussed) to whom it should be given*

RB. 258; dywet **pwý** a uu yma *tell who was here*; govyn **pwý** yw eu tystyon *to ask who are their witnesses*; **pwý** yw dy enw di *what is thy name?* LA. 128; **pwý** well genhýt *which dost thou prefer?* WB. 487; dayar **pwý** y llet neu pwý y thewhet *the earth, what is its breadth or what its thickness?* FB. 133; **pwý** kynt ae tywyll ae goleuat *what was first, darkness or light?* FB. 301. In the sense of *what thing?* is used **pa beth**, **py beth**, commonly abbreviated to **peth**, **beth**, e.g. **peth** yw y rei racko *what are those yonder?* a wdost ti **peth** wyt pan vych yn kyscwyt *knowest thou what thou art when thou art asleep?* FB. 145; a gofyn idaw **beth** a wnaei a phwy oed *and asked him what he was doing and who he was.*

NOTE.—The use of **pwý** before a noun is exceptional, **pwý** ýstýr WB. 454, 456=**pa ystyr** RB. 101=**py ystyr** 103.

80. **pa**, **py** *what?* adjectivally, e.g. **pa drwc** digoneis inheu ytti *what evil have I done to thee?* **py drwc** yw hynny *what evil is that?* This interrogative enters into various phrases, e.g. **pa le**, **py le** (also **ble**) *where?* **pa veint**, **py veint** *how great?* **pa ryw**, **py ryw** *of what kind?* **pa sawl** *how many?* **Pa** and **py** are also found with the addition of **un**, pl. **rei**, e.g. **pa un** wyt titheu *who art thou?* ef a ovynnawd udunt **pa rei** oedynt *he asked them who they were.*

NOTE 1.—**Pa** and **py** seem to be used without distinction of meaning. In the Mabinogion when the Red Book has **pa** the White Book has very frequently **py**.

NOTE 2.—In the earlier literature **pa** and **py** are found also without a noun, e.g. **pa** roteiste oth olud *what hast thou given of thy wealth?* BB. 10<sup>b</sup>; **pa** wnae *what shall I do?* FB. 282; hyt na wydat or byt **pa** wnaei (= **py** wnaei WB. p. 212) *so that she did not know at all what she should do* RB. 273; **py** holy di y mi *what seekest thou of me?* RB. 128, cf. further FB. 127, 145, 216, MA. 189<sup>b</sup>. Cf. also **pa** daruu y Garadawc *what has been the fate of Garadawc?* RB. 41, so 59, 287 (= **pý** WB. p. 221), **py** derw itti 176; **pathawr** (= **pa-th-dawr**) *what does it matter to thee?* WB. 430=**pythawr** p. 215; Duw reen **py** bereist lyvwr *Lord God, why hast Thou made a coward?* FB. 251; **py** liuy di *why dost thou colour?* RB. 102.

NOTE 3.—**Pa** and **py** are followed by a preposition in **pahar** *for what?* e.g. **pahar** e roet *for what it was given* BCh. 30; **paham**, **pa rac**, **py rac** and **pyr** (= **py yr**) *why?* e.g. **pýr** (= **pý rac** RB. 126) ý kyuerchý dý *why dost thou call?* WB. 486.

NOTE 4.—**Pa diw**, **py diw**. The following occurrences of this may be noted:—Quid (i. **pa diu**, lit. *for what*) tibi Pasiphae pretiosas sumere vestes? Ox. 41<sup>a</sup>. Cunctis genitoris gloria uestri laudetur celsi thronus est cui



*regia caeli*, where *est cui regia caeli* is translated literally and unidiomatically by *issit padu itau gulat* Iuv. 39<sup>b</sup>. Gwynn y uyt **py diw y rod**ir kerennyd Duf a hoedyl hir *blessed is he to whom is given the friendship of God and long life* FB. 308. (If a man gives a thing, and a dispute arises between two men as to *to which of them* it has been given, the word of the donor shall decide) **pa dyu y rodes** *to whom he gave it* BCh. 31. **pa diw y damweinei y uudugolyaeth** *to which the victory should fall* RB. II. 57 (so with **y to, y by diw y damweinhei y uudugolyaeth** onadunt 162, cf. CM. 32). **pa diw bynnac y mynnynt hwy y rodi hi** *to whomsoever they desired to give it* RB. II. 24, cf. further 181, 185. Here the use of *yd*, not *a* (§ 84), indicates that *diw* is a prepositional phrase (= *to him, to it?*).

**81. pwy bynnac, pa, py—bynnac, pa beth bynnac, peth bynnac.** The addition of **pynhac** or **pynnac** gives the sense of *whosoever, whatsoever*, e.g. **pwy bynnac** *ae kaffei* *whoever should take it*; **pa dyn pwyllauc benac** *a ladho enuyt* *whatever sane man shall slay an idiot*; **pa le bynnac y gwelwn vwyt** *wherever I saw food*; **py fford bynnac y ffoynt *whatever way they fled*; **peth bynnac** *a dywettei Peredur* *whatever Peredur said*.**

#### RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

**82.** In Welsh there is no inflected relative. In clauses which according to the Welsh idiom are relative, relativity is expressed by the relative particle **a** when the clause is positive, by the negative **ny** (cf. § 21 note) when the clause is negative, e.g. **pechodeu a gyffesser ac ny wneler yr eilweith** *sins that are confessed and that are not committed a second time*. Before the details of relative usage are considered, there are several general points to be noted.

**83. (a)** The relative **a** is not used :—

(a) Before the relative form **yssyd, syd** *who is, which is*, e.g. **nifer a uu ac a uyd uch nef is nef meint yssyd** *the multitude that has been and that will be, above heaven, below heaven, all that there are* FB. 114.

(β) Before the verb **pieu** (§ 161), e.g. **Efracw iarll bioed iarllaeth yn y gogled** *Evrawc the earl had an earldom in the north*.

(γ) Regularly in the earlier Welsh, and usually throughout the Mid.W.<sup>l</sup> period before the verbal particle **ry**, e.g. **mi ryth gereis** *I have loved thee*.

(δ) Before the copula when preceded by the predicate (§ 159), e.g. **llawen uu** *he was glad*; **pw ywyt** *who art thou?* (but **pw ywyt a uu yma** *who was here?*)

(b) (α) In Mid.W. prose **a** is frequently absent before **oed was**, e.g. **Arthur oed yg** *Kaerllion Arthur was in Caerllion*. In the Mabinogion the White Book has often **a oed** when the Red Book has **oed**, cf. WB. 227, 229, 250, 453, with RB. 101, 165, 166, 183.

(β) In early poetry **a** is very often omitted, e.g. **Duu vet** (= **Duw a ved**) *God rules* BB. 15<sup>a</sup> by **Duw a wet** 13<sup>a</sup>. The details have still to be investigated.

84. In certain constructions the preverbal particle **yd** (= Mod.W. **yr**) seems to enter into concurrence with relative **a**, and in Mod.W. grammars **yr** is given along with **a** as a relative particle. This, however, comes from reading English syntax into Welsh; historically, the use of **yd**, **yr** points to a non-relative construction. In the Celtic languages the rules for the use of the relative are peculiar. In particular it should be noted that in Welsh an adverbial or prepositional phrase is not as such followed by the relative construction, e.g. **mwyhaf** *oe vrodyr y karei* *Lud y Lleuelys* *Llud loved Llevelys more than any of his other brothers*; **pan uei mwyhaf yd ymgerynt** *when they most loved one another*; **bit chwero y talhaur** *in y diwet* *bitterly will it be paid for in the end*; **mi a brynaf dy gerennyd. pa delw, heb ynteu, y pryny di** *"I will buy thy friendship."* *"In what way," said he, "wilt thou buy it?"* **lle y gwelych eglwys** *wherever thou seest a church*; **or lle yd oed** *from the place where he was*; **yn y rei y maent ffynhonneu** *in which there are fountains*; **ar hynny att y kwn y doeth** *ef thereafter he came to the hounds*. With the first instance may be contrasted expressions like **y wreic vwyhaf a garei** *the woman whom he most loved*, where without **mwyhaf** the clause would be relative, **y wreic a garei** *the woman whom he loved*; similarly **gwreica da it a wedei** *to wed would suit thee well* WB. 453.

85. In the Celtic sentence the verb normally comes first, e.g. **y kymmerth y marchawc y march** *the horseman took the horse*. In Irish, when part of the sentence is to be emphasised it is brought

forward by means of the copula, e.g. **is ē beres** *it is he who carries*; sometimes the copula is omitted. In Welsh a part of the sentence is emphasised in the same way; the copula form, however, is regularly omitted. Thus in the example given above, if the subject were to be emphasised, the sentence would run: **y marchawc** a gymerth y march; if the object, **y march** a gymerth y marchawc. In accordance with the preceding paragraph, if the subject or object be thus brought forward, the following clause will be relative in form, but not if an adverbial or prepositional phrase be brought forward, e.g. **mw y karei** *he loved more*; **attunt yd aeth** *he went to them*.

NOTE.—In the development of Welsh **yd** tends to spread at the expense of **a**.

### The Expression of Case in the Relative.

86. In the relation of subject or object of a following verb, in positive clauses **a** is used (except in so far as it must or may be omitted, § 83), in negative clauses **ny**, e.g. **y gwr a doeth** *the man who came*; **y vorwyn a weleist** *the maiden whom thou hast seen*; **y wreic yssyd yno** *the woman who is there*; **meibon ny ellynt ymlad** *boys who could not fight*.

87. In connection with the use of **a**, **ny**, the following points call for special notice:—

(a) **or a** (Mod.W. **ar a**), neg. **or ny**, **ar ny**, lit. *of that which* (or *which not*), *of what* (or *what not*), e.g. **pawb or a oed yno** *everyone who was there* (lit. *of that which was there*); **or a welsei o helgwn ny welsei cwn unlliw ac wynt** *of all the hounds that he had seen he had never seen hounds of the same colour as they*; **pob peth or ny damweinasant eiroet** *everything that has never happened* LA. 33; **nyt oes neb or ath welei ar nyth garei** *no one who saw thee would not love thee*; **pob peth or a uu ac yssyd ac a vyd** *everything that was and is and will be* (where rel. **a** is regularly omitted before **yssyd**); **llawer or yssyd da** *many who are good*. In the above examples the relative **a** appears in positive clauses. But after **or** = *of that by which*, etc., in accordance with § 84, **yd** is used, e.g. **gorchymynneu**

Duw a wneynt o bop fford **or y gellynt** *they did God's commandments in every way in which they could* LA. 119; ffo. . a oruc Pandrassus a gwyr Groec y gyt ac ef y bob mann **or y tebyckynt** *caffel dianc Pandrassus with the Greeks fled to every place from which they thought to find escape* RB. II. 44. In sentences like: paup **or y rodho** y brenhyn ofrum idaw *everyone to whom the king gives a present*, or ba hustyng bynnac . . . **or y kyfarffo** y gwynt ag ef *every whisper that the wind meets* RB. 60, the use of **yd** is due to the form of the relative clause (§ 89).

NOTE.—As Zimmer has shewn, CZ. II. 86 sq. **or**, **ar** is made up of the preposition **o**, **a** + the article **yr**. Similarly **yr**=**y** to + **yr**: ef **a** dely medhecynyat rad **yr a** uo en e llys *he is obliged to give free medical attendance to such as are in the palace* BCh. 18.

(b) Without an antecedent **a**, neg. **ny**, is used in the sense of *what* as the subject or the object of a sentence, in a genitive relation, and after a preposition, e.g. **a gahat** o uedic da *what was got of good physicians*; mi a wna **yssyd** waeth it *I shall do what is worse for thee*; **ys tir** (= *dir*) nithiau **ny bo** pur *it is necessary to sift what is not pure* BB. 42<sup>b</sup>; y kymeth yntev gwrogaeth **a oed** yno onadunt *he received the homage of such of them as were there* RB. 267; **yr a welsynt** o vwynt *on account of what they had seen of food*; **or a glywyssynt** o gerd of *what they had heard of song*; mi a vydaf **wrth a dywedeisti** *I shall follow thy advice*; hyt na cheffwch byth werth un geinawc **oc yssyd** yn y dref *so that you shall never get a pennyworth of what is in the town* Hg. II. 169. In a sentence like: sef a oruc Scuthyn yn llaen g(neathur **yr oedit yn y erchi** idaw *Scuthyn did gladly what was asked of him* LA. 111, the form of the relative sentence does not admit of **a** (§ 88).

88. The genitive relation *whose*, *of which*, is expressed with the help of the possessive adjective before the noun on which in English the *whose* would depend. In Welsh, if the noun following the possessive be not under the government of a preposition the clause is relative, if it be under the government of a preposition the clause is non-relative, e.g. (a) Teithi Hen **a oresgynnwys** mor **y kyuoeth** *Teithi Hen whose kingdom the sea submerged* RB. 108; peth arall **ny ellych** byth **y gaffel** *another thing that thou wilt never be able to get*;

(b) *y gur y buost neithwyr yn y dy the man in whose house thou wert last night; y gwr y buost yn y geissaw the man whom thou hast been seeking.*

NOTE.—In: *yr hynn a odologyssynt ac a yttoedynt yn y damunaw that which they craved and were desiring* RB. II. 34, *a* is used where the above rule would require *yd*. In MA. 267<sup>a</sup> occurs: *gwr am dotyw gwall oe golli a man from whose destruction loss has come to me.* Further exceptions seem to be very rare; I have noted: *amperffeith yw caru y peth y galler y gassau it is imperfect to love the thing that may be hated* LA. 86; *wrth na bu yn dyn y bei arnaf i y ofyn because there was no living man the fear of whom was on me* CM. 30.

89. Where in English the relative is preceded by a preposition (*to whom*, etc.) in Welsh the relation is expressed by a preposition + personal pronoun, and the clause is non-relative, e.g. *hýnŷ elych yr koet y dodhwýt trwýdaw till thou goest to the wood through which thou hast come* WB. 228; *yno y byd eneideu ry darffo udunt penydyaw there are souls that have finished penance* (lit. *to whom penance is past*) LA. 129.

NOTE 1.—In the inverted sentence (§ 85) *Madawc uab Maredud a oed idaw Powys Madawg son of Maredudd had Powys* RB. 144, the clause is expressed relatively. Similarly in another special type of sentence: *Achelarwy a uu lawen gantaw Achilles was pleased* RB. II. 31, cf. RB. II. 189-20, RB. I. 94-5. In the translation literature a number of exceptions occur:—*y rei a uo ragor arnunt those on whom there is pre-eminence* LA. 32, cf. 130-27, 131-2, 135-8, 149-17, all in sentences of the same type; *y rei hynny a ry daroed (=earlier W. rydaroed) udunt gwrthlad Maxen those who had succeeded in expelling Maxen* RB. II. 111; *mein a ellit gwneuthur gweith onadunt stones from which building could be made* RB. II. 167; *gwr...a wedo idaw a man to whom it is fitting* CM. 77.

NOTE 2.—The following is an exceptional construction:—*gwelet y bed a vynnei trw y kaffei (=trw yt gaffei WB. 453) gwreicka he wished to see the grave through which he might be able to marry* RB. 101; *na chadarnhao dyn kelwyd trwy twng trwy y colletto y gymodawc that a man shall not confirm a falsehood by an oath through which he may ruin his neighbour* LA. 143; *trwy y bei through which there should be* LA. 144.

#### SUBSTITUTES FOR THE RELATIVE.

90. Particularly in the translation literature there are various devices for getting an equivalent of the relative admitting of a casual construction. Such are *yr hwnn*, pl. *y rei* (§ 62c), *y neb* (§ 64b), *y sawl* (§ 77).

## THE VERB.

## PREVERBAL PARTICLES.

The Particle *yd*.

91. In Mid.W. prose this particle usually appears as *yd* (i.e. *yđ*) before a vowel or *h*, as *y* before other consonants. But by the side of *yd* there is found from the fourteenth century *yr*, which in Mod.W. has completely superseded *yd*.

NOTE 1.—Occasionally *y* appears before *h*, e.g. *y hanoed* RB. II. 109, *y hanoed* LA.

NOTE 2.—In RB. *yt* with lenation appears before a consonant in *yt gweirwyd* (from *cyweirwyd*) 120. In the WB. version of the *Kulhwch* story *yt* (i.e. *yd*) is more frequent: *ýt gaffei*, *ýt gaffo* 453, *ýt no* 458, *ýt wertheý* 470, *ýt vȳd* 471, *ýt uerwit* 478. In BB. *yt* (= *yđ*) is regular before vowels: *it oet* 10<sup>b</sup>, *it aethant* 11<sup>a</sup>, *it imne* 15<sup>b</sup>, *it elher* 17<sup>a</sup>, *ýt hoet* 22<sup>b</sup>, 23<sup>a</sup>, *it adcorssant* 23<sup>b</sup>, *it vif* 25<sup>b</sup>, *it arwet* 51<sup>a</sup>, *it aw* 51<sup>b</sup>; it is written *id* twice in *id aeth* 49<sup>a</sup> *marg*. Before consonants there appears both *y* and *yd* (= *ýt* of WB.); the latter lenates, though the change is not always expressed. Before *g*, *t*, *d*, *ff*, *s*, *m*, *n*, *y* only appears: *ý godriccawr* 51<sup>a</sup>; *ý tirran* 1<sup>b</sup>, *ý talhaur* 16<sup>a</sup>, *ý teren* 32<sup>a</sup>, *ý tragho* 35<sup>b</sup>; *ý deuthan* 1<sup>b</sup>, *ý daeth*, *ý doethan* 2<sup>a</sup>, *ý doethan* 2<sup>b</sup>, *ý darparan* 3<sup>a</sup>, *ý dýlannan*, *ý daruanan* 3<sup>b</sup>, *ý diadaud* 10<sup>b</sup>, *ý dinwassute* 11<sup>b</sup>, *ý deuth*, *ý del* 21<sup>a</sup>, *ý doeth* 22<sup>b</sup>, *ý deuthant* 23<sup>b</sup>, *ý deuant* 25<sup>a</sup>, *ý dav* 32<sup>a</sup>, *ý dinwassune* 44<sup>a</sup>, *ý duc* 44<sup>b</sup>, *ý diwedi* 51<sup>b</sup>, *ý dodir* 53<sup>b</sup>; *ý ffoes* 22<sup>b</sup>; *ý sirthei* 50<sup>a</sup>; *ý mae* 13<sup>b</sup>, 32<sup>a</sup>, 34<sup>a</sup>, 34<sup>b</sup>, 35<sup>a</sup>, 41<sup>b</sup>; *ý nottvȳ* 38<sup>b</sup>. Before *p* and *r* *yd* only: *id pridaw* 21<sup>a</sup>, *yd portheise* 27<sup>a</sup>; *ýd rotir* 23<sup>b</sup>. Before other consonants the usage varies,—*c*: *ý kuýnan* (infixed pron.?) 2<sup>a</sup>, *ý kisceisse* 25<sup>a</sup>, *ý keweis* (infixed pron.?) 43<sup>b</sup>, but *id gan* 8<sup>a</sup>, *id keiff* 43<sup>a</sup>, *id cuitin* 48<sup>a</sup>, *ýd gan* 54<sup>a</sup>. *gw*: *ý gvna* 34<sup>b</sup>, *ý gweleise* 36<sup>a</sup>, 36<sup>b</sup>, *ý guýstluȳ* 38<sup>a</sup>, *ý guiscav* 41<sup>b</sup>, but *id woriv* 9<sup>a</sup>, *ýd welese* 27<sup>a</sup>, *ýd vna* 32<sup>a</sup>. *b*: *ý hu* 33<sup>b</sup>, *ý bit* 28<sup>a</sup>, but *ýd vei* 34<sup>b</sup>, *ýd vo*, *ýd vit* 42<sup>a</sup>, *ýd uit* 44<sup>b</sup>. *ll*: *ý llas* 36<sup>b</sup>, *ý lleinw* 51<sup>a</sup>, but *id lathennawr* 26<sup>a</sup>, *id lathei* 48<sup>b</sup>. In the O.W. glosses it only appears: *it dagatte* Mart. Cap. 4<sup>b</sup>, *it darnesti* Iuv. p. 88. From all this it may be inferred that there was a period in Welsh when the particle was *yđ* before vowels, *yd* with lenation before consonants. As to the origin of non-lenating *y*, it is probable that it started from verbs beginning with *d*. As *adyn* *wretch* comes from \**ad-dŷn*, so, e.g. \**yd đuc* would give \**yd uc*. From association with the other forms of the verb this would naturally come to be regarded as *y duc*, and hence, probably with the help of *y* containing an infixed pronoun (§ 50<sup>b</sup>), *y* might spread as the general form before consonants. As to the later *yr*: *y* for *yd*: *y*, it is probably due to the influence of the forms of the article *yr*: *y*.

NOTE 3.—In *ac yr gyscwys* RB. 28, *ual yr lygryssit* RB. 54, *ual yr notayssynt* CM. 57, *yr=y ry*, cf. § 93 note 4.

Usage of *yd*.

92. In normal Mid.W. prose the particle *yd*, which has no appreciable meaning, is, with certain exceptions, used regularly before indicatives and subjunctives, e.g. *yd af yn egyl gyt ac wynt* *I will go as angel along with them*; *y deuei y kythreul* *the devil used to come*; *ac yno y gwelas ef pedeir gwraged* *and there he saw four women*; *yn y lle y gwelsei Gynon* *in the place where he had seen Cynon*; *lle y gwelych eglwys* *wherever thou seest a church*; *val y gwelas y gwr Peredur yn dyuot* *as the man saw Peredur coming*; *megys y mynnei ehun* *as he himself desired*; *hyt y buant* *as long as they were*.

93. But it is not used :—

(a) at the beginning of a clause before a subjunctive of wish or command, e.g. *diwyccom-ne a digonhom o gamuet* *may we make atonement for the iniquity which we have done* BB. 15<sup>b</sup>; *hanpych gwell hail!* *dos titheu ar Arthur . . . ac erchych hýnný idaw go* *thou to Arthur and ask that of him* WB. 454; *Agamemnon . . . a dwawt . . . gossottynt hwy y neb a vynynt yn y le ef* *Agamemnon said they should set whomsoever they pleased in his place* RB. II. 24.

NOTE 1.—Contrast *yng ngoleu addef nef yt nodder* *in the light of the heavenly home may he be protected* MA. 174<sup>a</sup>.

(b) When the verb is repeated in answers, e.g. *a bery di?* *paraf* *wilt thou effect?* *I will*.

(c) In such instances as the following :—Bei dywedut ti y mi y peth a ovynnaf ytti, minneu a dywedwn y titheu yr hwnn a ovynny ditheu. *Dywedaf yn llawen, heb yr Owein* “*if thou wouldst tell me what I ask of thee, I would tell thee what thou askest.*” “*I will tell gladly,*” *says Owein*; *ath gedymdeithas yssyd adolwyn gennyf y gaffel. Keffy myn vvg cret* “*and I pray to obtain thy friendship.*” “*Thou shalt obtain it by my faith;*” *ac yna y dywawt Peredur* : *diolchaf ynneu y Duw na thorreis vy llw* *and then Peredur said* : “*I give thanks to God that I have not broken my oath*” (cf. the use of *na* § 237 c).

(d) When the predicate precedes the copula, e.g. **llawen vuant** *they were glad*.

NOTE 2.—But with verbs of naming **yd** with an infixed pronoun is used when the predicate precedes, e.g. **Peredur ym gelwir** *I am called Peredur*.

(e) After a negative, e.g. **ny welas** *he did not see*; **pony wdost** *dost thou not know?*

(f) In relative construction, e.g. **ef a doeth** *he came*.

(g) After the interrogative **a**, e.g. **a wely di** *dost thou see?*

(h) After the particle **neut**, e.g. **neud ynt** *geith now they are slaves* MA. 157<sup>b</sup>.

(i) After **mad** *well*, e.g. **mad devthoste** *happily didst thou come*, BB. 44<sup>a</sup>, unless there be an infixed pronoun, e.g. **mat yth anet** *happily wert thou born* FB. 101.

(k) After **moch** *soon* (= Ir. *mos*), e.g. **moch guelher** *soon will be seen* BB. 1<sup>b</sup>.

(l) After certain conjunctions, e.g. **can buost** *since thou hast been*; **kwt gaffei** *where he should get* WB. 453; **cyn gwnel** *though he does*; **kyt dywetto** *though he should say*; **o gwely** *if thou seest*; **pan welsant** *when they saw*; **pei kaffwn** *if I should get*; **tra vych** *while thou art*; **yny digwyd** *till he falls*. But it is used with an infixed pronoun after **pan**, e.g. **yr pan yth weleis** *since I saw thee*; so after **tra** (but cf. § 49<sup>b</sup>), e.g. **hyt tra yn dygyrcher** *so long as we are visited* RB. 105.

NOTE 3.—After **gwedy** after the usage is not very clear. Before a following vowel, we have on the one hand **gwedy ed eystedont** *after they sit* BCh. 53, **gwedy yd elont** *after they go* Hg. I. 11, **gwedy yd elom** *after we go* Hg. II. 146, on the other hand **gwedy aruerych** *after thou dost practise* LA. 90. Before a following consonant, in BCh. **gwedy y** (e.g. **gwedy e kafo** *after he gets* 34) is more common than **gwedy** (e.g. **gwedy roder** *after she is given* 130); in BB. is found wide **kýwisscaran** (leg. **kýwisscarun**) *after we separate* 12<sup>b</sup>; **gwýdi darffo** *after it is over* 4<sup>b</sup>; in Mid.W. prose **gwedy** is much more common than **gwedy y**, but it is a question how far **gwedy** comes after fusion from **gwedy y**. It is to be noted that infixing **a-** (§ 94) is found after **gwedy** as well as after the conjunctions which are not followed by **yd**; this would seem to suggest that the use of **yd** after **gwedy** was not original, but there is need for further investigation based on fuller material.

NOTE 4.—In Mid.W. prose **yd** is sometimes found before **ry**, even when there is no infixed pronoun, e.g. **fford y rý** [d] *most the way by which thou hast come* WB. 138; **ym pob gwlat or ý rýnnu** *in every country in which I have been* ib. 144; **y ry dugassei** *he had brought* RB. II. 139; **megys y ry wnathod** *as he had done* ib. 161. Cf. the instances of **yr** § 91 n. 3.



94. In later Mid.W. the use of *yd* is more extensive than at an earlier period. In the archaic prose of the story of *Kulhwch and Olwen* it is often wanting in the White Book version where it is present in the Red Book, and in the earlier poetry it is rarer still; the conditions of the earlier usage have still to be investigated. It may be noted that in earlier Welsh, when *yd* is not syntactically permissible, *a-* is used to infix a pronoun, e.g. *a-m bo may there be to me* BB. 17<sup>b</sup>; *ath uendiguiste he has blessed thee* 18<sup>a</sup>; *as attebwys answered them* FB. 139; *as redwn* (leg. *rodwn*) *we will give it* WB. 475. In prose this usage survives after some conjunctions, e.g. *gwedy an gwelwch after ye see us* Hg. II. 1; *gwedy as cladawch hi after ye bury her* LA. 81; *pei as rodei if he gave it* RB. 136. This *a* tends to become *y* under the influence of the infixed pronoun after *yd* (*y-m*, etc.), e.g. *ys po may there be to him* BB. 53<sup>b</sup>; *bei yscuypun if I had known it* BB. 41<sup>a</sup>; *bei ys gattei if it had permitted it* WB. 424=*pei as gattei* RB. 274; *kyt ym lladho though he slay me* RB. 280=*kyt am llatho Peniarth MS.* 4. With fusion, e.g. *peis mynnyt if they desired it* LA. 69.

### THE PARTICLE *ry*.

95. The particle *ry*, which corresponds etymologically to the Ir. verbal particle *ro-*, and resembles it in its uses, is in Welsh a disappearing particle; it is much less frequent in Mid.W. prose than in the early poetry.

NOTE.—*Ry* is sometimes reduced to *r*, e.g. *nŷr darffo* WB. 230=*ny darffo* RB. 168; *nar geueis that I did not get* Hg. II. 265; *ar ethynt* (v.l. *a ethynt*) *that have passed* RB. II. 205; *ar doethoed* (= *a dathoed* RB. 197) *who had come* WB. 62; *wedyr vligaw* (= *wedy y vlingaw* Hg. II. 112) *after his flaying* CM. 102. From *neu + ry* has come the common Mid.W. *neur*, cf. *neur dialawd* (= *neu rŷ dialawd* WB. 404) *he has avenged* RB. 259; *neur daroed* (= *neu rŷ daroed* WB. 402) *it was over* RB. 258. For *yr*= *y ry* see § 91 n. 3.

96. In Mid.W. prose *ry* is used :—

A. With the indicative.

(a) Optionally with the perfect (as distinguished from the preterite, § 108), e.g. *uŷ llŷsuam rŷ dŷgvŷs* (= *a dynghwys* RB. 102) *im my stepmother has sworn to me* WB. 454; *pawb rŷ gauas* (= *a gauas* RB. 113) *ŷ gŷuarws everyone has received his boon* WB. 470; *drycheuwch ŷ fŷrch uŷ aeleu rŷ syrthwŷs* (= *a syrthwys* RB. 119) *ar aualeu vŷ llygeit raise the forks of my eyelashes which have fallen on my eyeballs* WB. 478; *llawer dyd yth ry gereis* *I have loved thee many a day* RB. 118; *nŷs rŷ geueis* (= *nys keueis* RB. 126) *I have not got him* WB. 487; *ny ry giglef i eirmoet dim y wrth y uorwyn* *I have never heard anything of the*

*maiden* RB. 113; a ffan **ry dyuu** amser mab a anet a elwit Bown *and when the time was come, there was born a son who was called Bown* Hg. II. 119.

(b) Optionally with the pluperfect, e.g. gwallocau a oruc y rŷn **rŷ adawsei** (= yr hyn a **adawssei** RB. 101) *he neglected what he had promised* WB. 453; a thrist oed genthi, **kanŷ rŷ welsei** (= **kany welsei** RB. 116) eiroet y uŷnet ae eneit ganthaw a delhei y erchi y neges honno *and she was sad, for she had never seen anyone who came on that quest depart with his life* WB. 474; a chael yn y uedwl **na ry welsei** eiryoet mab a that kyndebycket ar mab y Pwyll *and he thought that he had never seen son and father so like as the boy was to Pwyll*; a chynn ymgyweiryaw yn y gyfrwy neur **ry adoed** heibyaw *and before he had settled himself in his saddle, she had passed by*. In the sentence: dechreu amouyn a gwyrda y wlat beth uuassei y arglwydiaeth ef arnadunt hwy y vlwydyn honno y wrth **ry uuassei** kyn no hynny *he began to ask the nobles of his country how his rule over them had been that year compared with what it had been before* RB. 7, **ry uuassei** seems to express priority relatively to the preceding **buassei**.

#### B. With the subjunctive.

(a) With the present subjunctive **ry** appears sometimes when it has a perfect sense, e.g. ohonot ti ŷt gaffo ef kanŷ **rŷ gaffo** (= **yr nas kaffo** RB. 101) o arall *from thee he shall get (offspring) though he has not got it from another* WB. 453; **kyt ry wnelych** di sarhaedeu . . . kyn no hynn nys gwney bellach *though thou hast committed outrages before this, thou shalt not commit them further* RB. 99; yno y byd eneidau ry darffo vdunt penydyaw *there are the souls that have ended their penance* LA. 129. But also without **ry**, e.g. a chyn **gwnel** gameu it . . ny buost ti hawlwr tir a dayar eiryoet *and though he has wronged thee, thou hast never been a claimant of land and earth* RB. 44.

(b) With the past subjunctive, when it has the sense of a pluperfect, **ry** not infrequently appears, e.g. mŷnet a oruc serch y uorwŷn ym pob aelawt itaw **kŷnnŷ rŷ welhei** (= **yr nas gwelsei** RB. 102) eiroet *love for the maiden entered every limb of him though*

*he had never seen her* WB. 454; *nŷd oed waeth kŷuarwŷd ŷn ŷ wlad nŷ rŷ welei* (= *nys ry welsei* RB. 114) *eiroet noc ŷn ŷ wlad ehun he was not a worse guide in a country that he had never seen than in his own country* WB. 471; *a chyn lawenet vu a chyt ry delei idaw iechyt and he was as joyous as though health had come to him* RB. II. 183; *pei mi rŷ wascut* (= *a wascut* RB. 116) *uelly nŷ oruŷdei ar arall uyth rodi serch im if it had been me whom thou hadst so squeezed, no other one would ever have been able to show me love* WB. 474. But also without *ry*, e.g. *pei ys gwypwn ny down yma if I had known it, I would not have come hither* RB. 29, 20.

C. With the infinitive when it has a perfect or pluperfect sense, e.g. *adnabot a oruc ry gaffel dyrnawt ohonaw he perceived that he had got a buffet*; *gwedy ry golli eu kynr after their horns had been lost* RB. 194.

97. In early Welsh poetry the use of *ry* is much more common than in prose; there it has also some syntactical uses which have been lost in prose (cf. Eriu II. 215 sq.)

(a) With the indicative preterite, when it has a perfect sense, *ry* is much more frequent than in the prose language. As in the case of Irish *ro*, the general definition of this usage is that the past is viewed from the standpoint of the present. There may be a reference either to the personal experience of the speaker, e.g. *mi rŷth welas I have seen thee* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>, *rim artuad I have been blackened* BB. 12<sup>a</sup>, or to an indefinite past, e.g. *ry gadwys Duw dial ar plwyf Pharaonus God has kept vengeance on Pharaoh's people* FB. 170.

With respect to this usage, however, the following points have to be noted:—

1. *ry* is not found:—

(a) After a negative, e.g. *ni threghis ev hoes their life has not passed away* BB. 11<sup>a</sup>; contrast *ry treghis eu hoes* FB. 128. There are rare exceptions in the later poetry.

(β) After *mad well*, e.g. *mad devthoste ŷg corffolaeth happily hast Thou come into the flesh* BB. 44<sup>a</sup>.

(γ) After the interrogative *a*, e.g. *a gueleiste gureic hast thou seen a woman?* BB. 22<sup>b</sup>. But in prose *a ry fu has he been?* WB. 121.

2. *ry* is not preceded by relative *a*. In the later poetry there are very rare exceptions.

3. A pronoun is infixed after *ry*; it is not put before it with *yd* or *a*, e.g. *ry-n gwarawt has helped us* FB. 126, *os Dofyd ry-n digones if it is the Lord that has made us* FB. 113. In the later poetry there are rare exceptions.

(b) With the subjunctive of wish it is used optionally in positive (but never in negative) sentences, e.g. *ry phrinomne di gerenhit may we buy Thy friendship* BB. 44<sup>b</sup>; *rym gwares dy voli may Thy praise help me* FB. 109, *by ath uendicco may it bless thee* BB. 18<sup>a</sup>; but *nŷ buve trist may I not be sad* BB. 17<sup>b</sup>.

(c) With the present indicative:—

1. **Ry** may express possibility, e.g. *ry seiw gur ar vn conin a man can stand on a single reed* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>.

NOTE.—In prose there is an instance of **ry** with the present indicative in: *ef a ry eill ych neekan he may refuse you* RB. 60. With **gallu**, **ry** is also found in the potential, e.g. *ef ar allei vot yn wir a dywedy di what thou sayest may be true* Hg. I. 81, similarly 224, 267, 272; without **ry**: *ef a allei llawer mab colli y eneit many youths might lose their life* WB. 100. From the perfect sense inherent in the verb, **ry** is found with the present and imperfect of **darvot** to be finished, e.g. *os y uwrw ry deryw if he has been thrown* WB. 125; *neur daroed idaw diffeithaw traean Iwerdon he had already laid waste the third part of Ireland* RB. 135.

2. In a subordinate clause of a general sentence it may have the sense of a perfect, e.g. *ti a nodyd a ry geryd Thou savest those whom Thou hast loved* FB. 180. The same sense is found in the subjunctive, when that mood is syntactically required, e.g. *ry brynw[y] nef nyt ef synn whosoever has purchased heaven will not be confounded* FB. 307; *a ry gotwy glew gogeled ragtaw let him who has angered a brave man shun him* MA. 191<sup>a</sup>.

(d) In the later poetry it is used with the future, or with the subjunctive in a future sense, without any apparent meaning, e.g. *arth o Dehenbarth a dirchafny. ry lletaud y wir ew tra thir mynvý a bear from the South will arise. His men will spread over the land of Mynwy* BB. 30<sup>a</sup>; *bydinoed Katwaladyr kadyr y deuant. ry drychafwynt Kymry, kat a wnant the hosts of Cadwaladr mightily will they come. The Cymry will rise up, they will give battle* FB. 126.

## CONJUGATION OF THE VERB.

### Verbal Classes.

98. In Celtic as in Latin there were various types of verbal conjugation. In Old Irish the different types may still to a great extent be distinguished, e.g. 3 sg. **-beir** carries from **\*beret**, **-guid** prays from **\*godit** (cf. Lat. capit), **-cara** loves from **\*carāt** (cf. Lat. amat), **-lēici** leaves from **\*lancīt** or the like (cf. Lat. audit or monet; in Celtic ē became ī). In Welsh the several types have become obscured. There remain, however, some traces of an original difference. Such are the different forms of the 3 sg. pres. ind., e.g. **geill** (to **gallu** to be able) which would go back to **\*gallit** or the like, **cymmer** takes which would correspond to an Ir. con-beir and would go back to **com-beret**, **car** loves = Ir. -cara; further the various forms of the 3 sg. pret. act. in **-as**, **-es**, **-is** and of the pret. pass. in **-at**, **-et**, **-it**. In particular should be noted such series as **geilw** (to **galw**, to call): **gelwis**: **gelwit**; **ceidw** (to **cadw** to preserve): **cedwis**: **cedwit**; **llysg** (to **llosgi** to

*burn*): **llosges**: **llosget**; **ceiff** (to **caffael** to *get*): **cavas**: **cavat**. Here there is great need for a collection of material from early texts. In some cases an original radical conjugation is indicated by certain formations peculiar to verbs of the root class, e.g. the **-t** preterites **aeth** = Ir. -acht and **cymmerth** = Ir. con-bert to pres. **a** = Ir. -aig and **cymmer** = Ir. con-beir; the pret. **gwarawt** = Ir. fo-räith to **gwaret** to *help*; and preterites passive like **llas** = Ir. -slass to **llad** to *kill*.

### Voice.

99. There are two voices, the active and the passive. The deponential form which is found in Old-Irish has disappeared in Welsh.

### Number.

100. In the active there are two numbers, the singular and the plural. In the passive there is only one form for both numbers.

101. In the concord of a verb with a plural subject Welsh shews certain peculiarities :—

(a) If the subject be unexpressed, or if it be a personal pronoun, the verb is in the plural, e.g. **y doethant**, **y doethant wy**, **wynt a doethant** *they came*.

NOTE.—Exceptions are rare, e.g. **os wynteu ae med hi** *if it is they that possess it* RB. 91; **poet wynt athiffero** *let it be they who defend thee* CM. 35; **nyt wy dyweit geu llyfreu Beda** *the books of Beda do not lie* FB. 159; **wy a gynheil y bit** *they support the world* FB. 217; **hwy a orfyf** *they shall prevail* MA. 141<sup>b</sup>. An example with the copula is: **ys hwý yr rei hýnný** (= **sef yw y rei hynny** RB. 121) **Nýnhýaw a Pheibýaw** *they are Nynnyaw and Peibyaw* WB. 480.

(b) Otherwise in the prose of the Mabinogion the singular is the usual construction, e.g. **y kerdwys y kennadeu** *the messengers set out*; **beth yw y rei racko?** *egylyon ynt what are those yonder? They are angels*. But sometimes the verb is in the plural, particularly in WB. and in the more archaic texts, e.g. **y deu vrenhin a nessayssant** *the two kings drew near* RB. 5; **a meicheit Matholwch a oedýnt** (= **oed** RB. 35) *ar lan ý weilgi and the swineherds of Matholwch were by the shore of the sea* WB. 50; **ý trywýr a ganant eu kýrn** *the three sound their horns* WB. 485 = RB. 125, 18;

**naw brenhin** coronawc **a oedýnt** wýr idaw *nine crowned kings who were his men* RB. 244; **seithwýr a oýdýnt** y danaw *seven men were under him* (by **naw eglwys ereill a vydei *there were nine other churches*) WB. 385 = RB. 245; **ý rei a oedýnt** (= **oed** RB. 165) **ýn** gwassanaethu *those who were serving* WB. 227; **bliant oedýnt** (= **oed** RB. 165) **ý llieinýeu** y bwrt *the tablecloths were of fine linen* WB. 227; **kw t ýnt** (= **ble mae** RB. 101) **plant ý** gwr *where are the children of the man?* WB. 453. Sometimes the plural is found with a collective noun, e.g. **gwelsant niuer** Otgar eu *meint the people of Odgar saw their number* RB. 136, 3. In the earlier poetry the plural is quite common, and in corresponding constructions in Old Irish the plural is regular. In Welsh there has been an encroachment of the singular upon the plural, as there has been in later Irish.**

### Person.

**102.** In the active there are three persons of each number. In the passive there is only a third person, the first and second persons being expressed, as in Irish, by means of pronouns, e.g. **y-m gelwir** *I am called*, **y-th elwir** *thou art called*, **ny-n cerir** *we are not loved*, **ny-ch cerir** *ye are not loved*; **kattwer vi** *let me be kept*.

NOTE.—In the third person there are instances of an infixed pronoun, when the verb is non-relative, e.g. **kyt ys galwer** *though they are called* L.A. 88, **megys pei as gossottit** *as if it were placed* Hg. I. 304; but, on the other hand, e.g. **na rodher** *that it be not given* RB. 258, **pan ollyngit** *when it was set free* Hg. I. 315. The matter calls for further observation.

**103.** The verb regularly agrees in person with the subject, e.g. **mi a welaf** *I see*, **ti a wely** *thou seest*, **ny a dywedwn** *we say*, **mi a thi a ryuelwn** *thou and I will fight*, **mi a Bown a wysgwn** *yn arueu ymdanam a thithieu a wysgy ymdanat* *Bown and I will put on our arms, and thou wilt put on thine*. In the passive, where there is no distinction of person, the third person is used everywhere, e.g. **mi a gerir** *I am loved*. The 3 sg. copula form **ys** is used, like the corresponding Ir. *is*, with pronouns of the first and second persons, e.g. **ys mi** (= Ir. *is mē*) *it is I*.

Occasionally in a relative clause the verb is in the 3 sg. when the antecedent is in the first or second person, e.g. *mi rŷth welas* *I have seen thee* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>; *ae ti a eirch uy merch? ys mi ae heirch* *is it thou who askest for my daughter? It is I who ask for her* WB. 479; *mi ay had[e]ilyawd* *I built it* WB. 394.

NOTE.—These last examples represent the original construction, which has in Welsh been replaced by congruence with the pronoun. The 3 sg. is the regular construction in Breton, e.g. *me guelas* *I saw*, in Cornish, e.g. *why a ergh ye seek*, and in Old Irish, e.g. *is mē asbeir* *it is I who say*.

### The Moods.

**104.** There are three finite moods, the indicative, the subjunctive and the imperative. The Celtic languages have developed no proper infinitive; the place of the infinitive in Welsh as in the other Celtic languages is taken by a verbal noun, with nominal inflexion and with nominal construction. There is a passive participle in *-edic* and a verbal of necessity in *-adwy* (corresponding to the Irish verbal of necessity in *-thi*).

### The Indicative.

**105.** The tenses of the indicative are present, imperfect, preterite, and pluperfect. Syntactically the present serves also as a future; in the earlier language, however, there are also special future forms (§ 130). The imperfect is used both as an imperfect indicative and as a conditional (in the latter usage it corresponds in usage to the Irish secondary future). The preterite is used both as preterite and as perfect; in the latter usage it is often preceded by *ry*, particularly in the earlier language (§§ 96, 97). The pluperfect is a new development of the British division of Celtic; it has the same endings as the imperfect, and has been formed to the preterite stem on the analogy of the imperfect to the present. It is used (a) as a pluperfect indicative, (b) as a pluperfect conditional, in which sense, however, the imperfect continues to be used in Mid.W., (c) as a pluperfect subjunctive, in which usage it tends in Mid.W. to replace the past tense of the subjunctive (§ III). The following examples will illustrate the uses of the tenses of the indicative.

## PRESENT.

**106. (a)** Actual present, e.g. beth **yw** hwnn? Kyfrwy **yw** *what is this? It is a saddle*; ti a **wely** ý sawl vorýnyon hýgar **ýssýd** yn ý llýs hon *thou seest all the amiable maidens who are in this court* WB. 155.

(b) Consuetudinal present, e.g. ef a **wyl** pawb or a del ý mýwn ac nýs **gwyl** neb efo *he sees everyone who enters and no one sees him* WB. 156.

(c) Of an action lasting into the present, e.g. **ys** gwers **yd** **wyf** yn keissaw a olchei **vyg** cledyf *I have been seeking for a while some one to burnish my sword* RB. 126; pump mlyned ar ethynt yr pan **yttym** ni yn arueru or ryw seguryt hwnnw *five years have passed away since we have been enjoying that ease* RB. II. 205.

(d) Historic present, e.g. nyt kynt **yd** **yskynn** ef ar y uarch noc **yd** a hitheu hebdaw ef *no sooner did he mount his horse than she passed him* RB. 11; nachaf gwr du . . . a **welant** lo! *they saw a black man* WB. 486; a phan **daw** (=doeth WB. p. 204) hyt lle **yd** oed Gwenhwyvar kyarch gwell a oruc idi *and when he came to the place where Gwenhwyvar was he greeted her* RB. 262; gossot a oruc ynteu ar y marchawc . . . yny **hyllt** y daryan ac yny **dyrr** yr aruev *he made an onset on the horseman, till he cleft the shield and broke the arms* RB. 271.

(e) As future, e.g. dywet y Arthur pa le bynnac y bwyf i gwr idaw **vydaf**, ac o **gallaf** lles a gwassanaeth idaw, mi ae **gwnaf**. A dywet na **deuaf** y lys vyth yny ymgaffwyf ar gwr hir *say to Arthur that wherever I am I will be his man, and if I can do him advantage and service, I will do it. And say that I will never come to his court till I encounter the tall man.*

## IMPERFECT.

**107. (a)** Of an action going on or a state existing in past time, e.g. val y **kyrchei** ef y bont ef a **welai** varchawc yn dyuot *as he was making for the bridge, he saw a horseman coming* WB. p. 216; nyt y fford a **gyrchei** y tref or bont a gerdawd Gereint *it was not by the road that went from the bridge to the town that Gereint went*



WB. p. 217; yma **yd oedwn** yn kerdet ui ar gwr mwýaf a **garwn**. ac ar hýnný y doeth tri chawr o gewri attam *we were travelling, I and the man whom I most loved. And thereupon there came to us three giants* WB. 441; pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, eingon gof a **oed** yma, a minneu ederyn ieuanc **oedwn** *when first I came here there was here a smith's anvil, and I was a young bird* RB. 129.

NOTE 1.—Note the use of the imperfect with a negative in such sentences as the following: **nyt eynt** hwy oe bod *they would not go willingly* RB. 32; yr hynny **ny thawei** yny dygwydwys kysgu arnei *for all that she would not be silent, till sleep fell upon her* RB. II. 51.

NOTE 2.—The imperfects of **clybot** *to hear* and of **gwelet** *to see* are frequent in narrative, parallel with the preterite of other verbs, e.g. y dyd yd aeth ef parth a chaer Dathyl, troi o vywn y llys a wnaeth hi; a hi a **glywei** lef corn *the day that he went towards Caer Dathyl, she walked within the court, and she heard the sound of a horn* RB. 74, 6; a dyuot yr brifford ae chanlyn a orugant. A choet mawr a **welynt** y wrthunt. A ffarth ar coet y deuthant. Ac yn dyuot or koet allan y **gwelynt** pedwar marchawc aruawc. Ac edrych a orugant arnunt *and they came to the highway and followed it. And they saw before them a great wood. And they went towards the wood. And they saw four armed horsemen coming out of the wood. And they gazed upon them* RB. 270, 19.

(b) Representing in indirect speech a present indicative of direct speech, e.g. a galw a wnaeth attaw y verch hynaf idaw Goronilla a gofyn idi pa veint **y karei** hi efo. A thygu a wnaeth hitheu y nef a daear bot yn vwy **y karei** hi euo noe heneit ehun. A chredu a wnaeth ynteu idi hynny, a dywedut, kan **oed** kymeint **y karei** hi euo a hynny, y rodei ynteu draean y gyuoeth genti hi y wr a dewissei yn ynys Prydein *and he called to him his eldest daughter Goronilla, and asked her how much she loved him. And she swore by heaven and earth that she loved him more than her own life. And he believed her in that and said that, since she loved him so much as that, he would give the third of his kingdom with her to the man whom she should choose in the island of Britain* RB. II. 65.

(c) Of a repeated or customary action in past time, e.g. a phy beth bynnac a dywetei ar y dauawt, ef ae **kadarnhei** oe weithret ae arueu *and whatever he said with his tongue, he used to make it good by his deeds and his arms* RB. II. 41; kymeint ac a wnelit y dyd or gweith, tranoeth pan gyuotit neur **daruydei** yr dayar y lynku *as much of the work as was done by day, overnight when they arose the earth had swallowed it* RB. II. 141; ar rwym a **wneyit**

yna rwng deu dyn a wnaethpwynt y rwng Gereint ar uorwyn *and the bond that used to be made then between two persons was made between Gereint and the maiden* RB. 262, 25.

(d) As secondary future or conditional.

(a) As a secondary tense to the future, e.g. can gwýdŷwn i **ý** **dout** ti ým keissyaw i *for I knew that thou wouldst come to seek me* WB. 249; diheu oed genthi na **deuei** Ereint uyth *she was sure that Gereint would never come* WB. 441; ny wydyat hi beth a **wnaei** *she did not know what she should do* RB. 268, 29.

(β) In the apodosis of a future or possible conditional clause, e.g. bei gwnelhit uýg kýghor i ný **thorrit** kýfreitheu llýs ýrdaw *if my counsel were followed, the laws of the court would not be broken on his account* WB. 458; pei clywhut ti ymdidan y marchogyon racco . . . mwy **vydei** dy oual noc y mae *if thou heard the discourse of yonder horsemen, thy anxiety would be greater than it is*.

(γ) In the apodosis of a past or impossible conditional clause, e.g. py ham vilein, heb ef, y gadut ti efo heb y uenegi imi. Arglwyd, heb ef, ny orchymyneisti euo imi; pei as gorchymynnnt nys **gadwn** "*why, villain,*" said he, "*didst thou let him go without letting me know?*" "*Lord,*" said he, "*thou didst not give me such instructions. If thou hadst instructed me I should not have let him go*" WB. p. 216; pei oet idaw, ef a **ledit** (= **ladyssit** RB. 193, 8) *if he had been of age, he would have been slain* WB. 117.

NOTE 3. To *bot to be* the regular conditional is **bydwn**. The imperfect **oed**, however, (like Ir. *ba*) is used in a modal sense in expressions like the following: **oed well genhýf** (= Ir. *ba ferr limm*) *noc ýssýd ým gwlat bei oll ýt uei val hýnn I should prefer to all that is in my kingdom that it should be all like that* WB. 487.

#### PRETERITE.

**108. (a)** As preterite (the regular narrative tense), e.g. ac ýmhoý lud a **oruc** ar ý marchawc, ac ar ý gossot kýntaf ý uwrw ýr llawr ý dan draet ý uarch. a thra **barh[a]awd** ýr un or pedwarugein marchawc, ar ý gossot kýntaf ý **býrýawd** pob un onadunt. Ac o oreu ý oreu ý **doe[t]hont** attaw eithýr ý iarll. Ac ýn diwethaf oll ý **doeth** ý iarll attaw *and he turned on the horseman, and at the*

*first onset he threw him to the ground, under the feet of his horse. And while there remained one of the eighty horsemen, at the first onset he overthrew every one of them. And there came to him always one better than the last, except the earl. And last of all the earl came to him* WB. 432 ; *y gysgu yd aethant y nos honno. a phan welas y meichat lliw y dyd, ef a deffroes Wydyon that night they went to sleep. And when the swineherd saw the hue of day, he aroused Gwydyon* RB. 78, 12.

(b) Corresponding to a perfect in indirect speech, e.g. a thranoeth Agamemnon a wyssywys y bobyl y gyt, ac a diwadawd na **bu** ef eiryoet chwanawc yr amherodraeth honno. ac a dýwawt nas **kymert**h ef hi onyt o uedwl iawn *and next day Agamemnon summoned the people together, and denied that he had ever been desirous of that sovereignty. And he said that he had not taken it except with just intention* RB. II. 24.

(c) As perfect, e.g. coet **ry welsom** ar y weilgi yn y lle ny **welsam** eiryoet vn prenn *we have seen a wood upon the sea where we have never seen a single tree* RB. 35, 24; pwy a **ganhadwys** itti eisted yna *who has given thee permission to sit there?* WB. p. 225 ; Bendigeit Uran ar niuer a **dywedassam** ni a hwylyassant parth ac Iwerdon *Bendigeit Vran and those whom we have mentioned set out towards Ireland* RB. 35, 14.

#### PLUPERFECT.

109. (a) As pluperfect indicative, e.g. or a **welsei** ef o helgwn y byt ny **welsei** cwn un lliw ac wynt *of all the hounds that he had seen anywhere he had never seen dogs of the same colour as them* RB. 1, 21 ; ual y **gnottayssei** tra uu yn llys Arthur kyrchu twrneimeint a wnaei *he resorted to tournaments as he had been wont to do while he was in Arthur's court* RB. 268, 6 ; a dyuot kof idaw y dolur yna yn uwy no phan y **cawssei** *and then there came to him the recollection of his sorrow more than when he had received it* WB. p. 218.

(b) As pluperfect conditional, e.g. **buassei** well itti pei rodassut nawd yr mackwy *it would have been better for thee if thou hadst given protection to the lad* ; a pheî nat ystyriei yr Arglwyd Duw ohonunt

wy, ef a **wnaethoed** oual tra messur udunt *and if the Lord God had not considered them he would have caused anxiety beyond measure to them* Hg. II. 71.

(c) Replacing the subjunctive in a pluperfect sense, e.g. **bei buassut** wrth vy gyghor i, ny chyuaruydei a thi na thrallawt na gofit *if thou hadst followed my counsel, neither affliction nor trouble would have come nigh unto thee* Hg. II. 123; **pei doethoed** ef yn y lle wedy dilyw, wynt a dywedynt y mae vrth Noe ac Effream y dywedassei Duw pob peth or a dywedessynt *if he had come immediately after the Flood they would have said that it was to Noah and Abraham that God had said everything that they had said* LA. 17.

### The Subjunctive Mood.

#### THE FORMATION OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

**110.** The sign of the subjunctive is **h**; for the changes that **h** undergoes in conjunction with a preceding sound see § **11g**. Examples:—sg. 3 pres., **coffaho**: **coffau** *to remember*; **carho**: **caru** *to love*; **sorho**: **sorri** *to be angry*; **talho**: **tal** *pay*; **prynho**: **prynu** *to buy*; **mynho**: **mynnu** *to desire*; **bendicco**: **bendigaw** *to bless*; **cretto**: **credu** *to believe*; **atteppo**: **atebu** *to answer*; **llatho**: **llad** *to slay*; **tyffo**: **tyvu** *to grow*. After a preceding **h**, **h** is lost by dissimilation, e.g. **parhao**: **parhau** *to continue*; **amheuo**: **amheu** *to doubt*. Further **h** does not appear after **ch**, e.g. **archo**: **erchi** *to ask*, after **ff**, e.g. **caffo**: **caffael** *to get*, after **ll**, e.g. **gallo**: **gallu** *to be able*, or after **s**, e.g. **keisser** BB. 26<sup>b</sup>, **llafassed** BB. 27<sup>a</sup>, **yssynt** WB. 467. In the present tense the subjunctive has distinctive endings; in the past tense the endings are the same as in the imperfect indicative, so that here the **h** is the only distinguishing mark, except in the few verbs that have a special subjunctive stem.

NOTE 1.—In Mid.W. a new **h** subjunctive is formed analogically to the indicative of verbal stems ending in **d**, e.g. **cerdho** RB. 293=**certho** WB. p. 211: **cerdet** *to go*, **lladh** WB. p. 210=**llatho** WB. 419: **llad**, **rodhom** RB. 105=**rothom** WB. 458: **rodi** *to give*; from stems ending in **v** the regular form is rare, **tyffei**: **tyvu** WB. 453, but **prouher**: **provi** *prove* BB. 3<sup>b</sup>, **safhei**: **sevyll** *to stand* WB. 466=RB. 110. There are already in Mid.W., particularly in its later period, examples of complete confusion

of the subjunctive with the indicative stem, e.g. *clywut* RB. 274=*clývut* WB. 423=*clýwhut* WB. p. 212 : *clýbot to hear*, *clýwych* RB. 270=*clýwhyh* WB. p. 209, *guelud* : *gwelet to see* BB. 29<sup>b</sup>, *talo* RB. 268=*talho* WB. 415, *sorro* : *sorri* BB. 28<sup>b</sup>, *cenich* : *canu to sing* BB. 42<sup>b</sup>, *medrei* RB. 76=*metrei* WB. 104 : *medru aim at*, *mynnei* RB. 277=*mynhei* WB. p. 214, *cerdo* RB. 273=*certho* WB. p. 211, *llado* RB. 270=*lladho* WB. p. 210=*llatho* WB. 419, *rodo* RB. 286=*rotho* WB. p. 220, *yvei* : *yvet to drink* BB. 48<sup>b</sup>. This confusion has spread analogically from cases like *gallu*, *erchi*, etc., where the subjunctive stem was in Old Welsh identical with the indicative, and from cases where later the two forms fell together by the operation of phonetic law, e.g. *mynho* to *mynno*, like *minheu I to minneu*. The old forms are most persistent in stems in *g*, *d*, *b*.

NOTE 2.—The earlier history of the Welsh subjunctive is very obscure. Vendryès, however, in the *Mémoires de la Société de linguistique de Paris*, XI. 258 sq. has made it probable that *h* came from prehistoric *s*, so that the formation would resemble that of the Irish *s*-subjunctive, from which, however, it differs in that in Welsh there must have been a vowel between *s* and the final consonant of the verbal stem. The explanation given by Stern, CZ. III. 383 sq. is untenable. In Early Welsh there are two subjunctives identical in formation with the Irish *s*-subjunctive :—*duch may he lead* from \**duhc-set* : *dwyn to lead*, and *gwares may he help* from \**vo-ret-set* : *gwaret to help*.

#### THE TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

III. In early Welsh, as in Irish, the subjunctive had two tenses, a present, which syntactically had the function of a present and of a perfect, and a past, which syntactically had the function of an imperfect and of a pluperfect; in the sense of perfect and pluperfect the subjunctive may be preceded by *ry* (§ 96B.) In the later Mid.W. period the past subjunctive in a pluperfect sense tended to be replaced by the pluperfect indicative (§ 109C); sometimes in the same passage one text has the original subjunctive while another has the pluperfect indicative, e.g. *kýn nýs rý welhei* WB. 454=*yr nas gwelsei* RB. 102, 5 *though he had not seen her*; *pei as gorchymynnut* WB. p. 216=*pei as gorchymynnassut* RB. 280, 7 *if thou hadst commanded it*. The indicative origin of the usage is particularly clear in forms like *pei doethoed if he had come* LA. 17.

NOTE.—This substitution is parallel to the general tendency to replace the subjunctive stem by the indicative; it was noted above that no instances have been found of subjunctive *h* after *s*; thus, if *ysswn* from *yssu to eat* might be either indicative or subjunctive, a pluperfect indicative like *carasswn I had loved* might easily have come to be used in a subjunctive sense. In *ry wnslut* WB. p. 223=*gwnelut* WB. 445, RB. 290, a pluperfect has been formed analogically to the past subjunctive *gwnelut* (§ 142).

## THE USAGES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

112. A thorough investigation of the uses of the subjunctive as contrasted with the indicative in Mid.W. is still wanting\*. The following examples may serve to illustrate the principal types; further instances will be found under the conjunctions. Under the various headings are given, so far as they occur, (α) instances of the present subjunctive, (β) instances of the past subjunctive.

113. A. The subjunctive in main clauses.

(a) Wish.

(α) **an duch** ir gulet *may He bring us to the feast* BB. 20<sup>b</sup>; **Duw a rotho** da itt *may God give good to thee* WB. p. 204; **ny bo** teu dy benn *may not thy head be thine* RB. 103, 6.

NOTE.—A wish with reference to the past is expressed by the indicative, e.g. *Och Iessu na dýffw wý nihenit O Jesus! that my death had come* (lit. *Alas! Jesus, that my death did not come*) BB. 25<sup>b</sup>; *och Gindilic na buost gureic would, Cynddilic, that thou hadst been a woman* BB. 46<sup>a</sup>.

(b) Command.

(α) **yscýthrich fort** a delhich ti. a **llunhich** tagneuet *make smooth a road that thou mayest come and cultivate peace* BB. 42<sup>b</sup>; dos . . . ac **erchych** hynny idaw go *and ask that of him* RB. 102, 11; **dyuot a wnelhych** gennyf *come with me* RB. 118, 2; **dabre** genhiw **ným gwatter** *come with me, let me not be refused* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>.

(β) In indirect speech a command is transferred to the past subjunctive, e.g. *Agamemnon . . . a d[y]wawt y peidei ef ar llywodraeth honno yn llawen . . . a gossottynt hwy y neb a vynnynt yn y le ef Agamemnon said that he would gladly give up that command, and that they should set whomsoever they pleased in his place* RB. II. 24.

(c) Futurity. This usage is common in poetry, but rare in prose.

(α) **ohonot ti ýt gaffo** ef kanýs rý gaffo o arall *from thee he shall get it, though he has not got it from another* WB. 453; **nýth atter** ti (= **nyth ellyngir di** RB. 104, 8) ý mýwn *thou shalt not be admitted* WB. 457; **nyt arbettwy** car corff y gilyd *one kinsman will not*

\* A beginning has been made by Atkinson, *On the Use of the Subjunctive Mood in Welsh*, "Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy, 1894," pp. 459 sq., but he deals only with the present subjunctive.

*spare the body of another* FB. 127; *cad a uyt ym Mynydd Carn a Thrahaearn a later there will be a battle in Mynydd Carn, and Trahaearn will be slain* MA. 142<sup>a</sup>.

**114. B.** The subjunctive in subordinate clauses.

(a) Negatively after verbs of thinking, swearing, etc.

(a) *ny thybygaf inheu na wpyych ti haedu ohonaw ef hynny I do not think that thou dost not know that he has deserved that* RB. II. 157; *hyt na bo neb a wypo na bo ti vo Gwrlois so that no one may know that thou art not Gwrlois* RB. II. 179; *mi a tynghaf dynghet idaw na chaffo ef enw yny kaffo gennyf i I lay this fate on him that he will not get a name till he gets it from me* RB. 69, 21; *o rodwch gret na wneloch gam idi if ye pledge yourselves to do her no wrong* RB. 117, 15.

NOTE 1.—But in indirect speech as such the indicative is the mood used. With the last example contrast: *y Duw y dygaf vyg kyffes nae werthu nae ellwng nas gwnaf i I vow to God that I will neither sell it nor let it go* RB. 56, 8; similarly 215, 15.

(β) *nyt er tebygu ohonaw ef na bei deilwg it was not because he thought that it was not worthy* RB. II. 26; *neb or ae gwelei ny wydyat na beynt eur no one who saw them knew that they were not gold* RB. 62, 1. After a primary tense:—*na wn . . . pei kahwn dýsc nas gwýpwn I do not know that, if I got instruction, I would not know how to do it* WB. 127.

(b) In indirect interrogation.

(a) *aet un y wybot pwy vo let some one go to learn who he may be* RB. 9, 1; *manac y mi pa furyf y gallwyf hynny show me how I can do that* RB. 3, 4; *yny wyper a uo byw until it be known whether he will live* RB. 261, 4; *y edrych a allwyf y dial arnaw to see whether I can avenge him on him* RB. 204, 12; *dewis ae ti a elych yr llys ae titheu a delych gyt a mi y hela ae minneu a yrro vn or teulu choose whether thou wilt go to the court, or whether thou wilt come with me to the chase, or whether I shall send one of the household* RB. 237, 9.

(β) *heb wybot pwy vei eu gelynyon pwy vei eu gwyr ehunein without knowing who were their enemies, who their own men* RB. II. 105; *val yd oed Kynan Meiradawc yn pedrussaw beth a wnelei as Kynan Meiradawg was hesitating as to what he should do*

RB. II. 114; a medylaw pa ffuruf **y gellynt** ymlad ar den lu *and they considered how they could fight with the two armies* RB. II. 76; ef a peris y dwyn yw lys y edrych a **uei** vyw *he caused him to be brought to his court to see whether he would live* WB. p. 222.

NOTE 2.—But in dependent interrogation as such the subjunctive is not required, e.g. ny wn i pwy **wyt** ti *I do not know who thou art* RB. 2; govyn a oruc pwy oedynt a pha le pan hanhoedynt a phy daear **y magyssit** arnei a phy achaws **y** dathoedynt y deyrnas ef *he asked who they were, and whence they came, and in what land they had been reared, and for what reason they had come to his kingdom* RB. II. 131; gouyn a wnaethl ae offeiryat oed ef *he asked if he was a priest* Hg. I. 33; edrych yn y chylch a oruc a **yttoed** ef yn deffroi *she looked round about her to see if he was awaking* RB. 274, 30.

(c) Concessive clauses:—

(a) a **chyt archo** ef ytti yr eil na dyro *and though he ask thee for a second (blow), do not give it* RB. 3, 19; tydi am gwely i **kany welwyf** i dydi *thou shalt see me, though I do not see thee* RB. 173, 18.

(β) a **chyt bei** lityawc ef wrthi hi ef a gymyrth y rybud *and though he was angry with her, he took her warning* WB. p. 215.

(d) Conditional clauses:—

(β) e.g. **pei as gwypwn** mi ae dywedwn *if I knew it, I would tell it* RB. 130, 5; bei **ys cuypun**...nys **gunaun** *if I had known it I would not have done it* BB. 41<sup>a</sup>; or **gwnelei** ef hynny ynteu a rodei y verch idaw ef *if he did that he would give him his daughter* RB. II. 26.

NOTE 3.—In present conditional clauses the present indicative with **o** is used (§ 224<sup>a</sup>).

(e) Clauses of comparison:—

(a) gwnaet iawn **mal y barno** goreugwyr y llys *let him give satisfaction as the nobles of the court shall decide* RB. 261, 4.

(β) **mal y dyckei** eu teghetuennau y ffoassant *they fled as their fortunes led them* RB. II. 73. Of unreal comparison, e.g. llyma yssyd iawnhaf itti . . . dyuot yma auory ym kymryt i **mal na wyppwn** i dim y wrth hynny *that is thy most proper course, to come here to-morrow to take me as if I knew nothing about it* WB. p. 215.

(f) Temporal clauses:—

(a) o lladaf i y gwr racco mi ath gaf ti **tra vynywyf**. a **gwedy** nath **vynywyf** mi ath yrraf ymdeith *if I slay yonder man, I will*



*take thee as long as I desire ; and when I no longer desire thee, I will cast thee forth* WB. p. 215 ; **pan agorer** y creu beunyd yd a allan *when the sty is opened every day, it goes out* RB. 78, 7 ; **pan delych** dy hun yth wlat ti a wely a wneuthum yrot ti *when thou thyself comest to thy land, thou wilt see what I have done for thee* RB. 6 ; ny luniaf i esgydyeu idi **yny welwyf** y throet *I will not shape shoes for her till I see her foot* RB. 70, 24.

(β) a pheri yr kigyd **gwedy y bei** yn dryllaw kic dyuot idi a tharaw bonclust arnei beunyd *and he made the butcher, after he had been cutting up the flesh, come to her and box her ears every day* RB. 34, 9 ; a **ffan uei** hÿttraf Gereint ÿ llawenhæi ÿ gwr *and whenever Gereint prevailed, the man rejoiced* WB. 398 ; **tra uei** y mywn coet ar vric y coet y kerdei *while he was in a wood, he would travel on the top of the wood* RB. 108, 21 ; y byryw[y]t y kalaned yn y peir **yny uei** yn llawn *the corpses were thrown into the cauldron till it was full* RB. 39, 23.

(g) Final clauses, and clauses following verbs of effecting, commanding, desiring, etc.

(α) carchara wynt **hyt nat elont** dracheuyn *imprison them so that they may not go back* RB. 34, 14 ; mi a wna **na chaffo** ef viui vyth *I shall effect that he shall never get me* RB. 13, 16 ; ny allaf i **na chysgwyf** *I cannot refrain from sleep* RB. 277, 4 ; sef y harchaf itt **na mynnych** wreic *my request of thee is that thou shalt not seek a wife* RB. 100, 20.

(β) ereill a gyghorei it rodi dy uerch y un o dylyedogyon y deyrnas hon **ual y bei** vrenhin gwedy ti *others counselled thee to give thy daughter to one of the nobles of this kingdom, so that there might be a king after thee* RB. II. 114 ; Andromacta...a anuones at Briaf y beri idaw wahard Ector **nat elei** y dyd hwnnw yr vrwydyr *Andromache sent to Priam to get him to prevent Hector from going to the battle that day* RB. II. 22 ; adolwyn a wnaeth Elenus **na wnelit** hynny *Helenu begg'd that that might not be done* RB. II. 32.

NOTE 4.— But in mere consecution the indicative is used, e.g. ar y llech y mae kawc aryant wrth gadwyn aryant mal **na ellir eu gwahanu** *on the flag there is a silver goblet on a silver chain, so that they cannot be separated* RB. 167 ; kyseu a wneuthum i **ual na wybum** pan aeth ef *I slept so that I did not know when he went* RB. 247, 26.

(h) Relative clauses, including similar clauses of a non-relative type.

(α) *wely di a wnelych here is what thou must do* RB. 271, 23; *kein wlad nef boed ef yt el the fair land of heaven, may it be there that he goes* MA. 263b; *a vo penn bit bont let him who is head be bridge* RB. 36; *y gymeint a wypwyf i mi ae dywedaf all that I know I will tell* RB. 131; *o mynwn nineu arueru o rydit a vo hwy if we wish to enjoy freedom any longer*; *pw y bynnac a vynno kanlyn Arthur bit heno y Ghernyw gyt ac ef whoever wishes to accompany Arthur, let him be with him to-night in Cornwall* RB. 160; *kymery march kyntaf a welych take the first horse that thou seest* RB. 9; *na uyd...yr a dotter yndi vyth however much be put into it it will never be (full)* RB. 15; *ny cheiff ymwan...y gwr ny bo gyt ac ef y wreic vwyhaf a garho no man will be allowed to contend who has not with him the lady whom he most loves* RB. 252; *a oes ohonawch chwi a adnapo y uarchoges racco is there any one of you who knows yonder horsewoman?* RB. 8; *keis ath ladho seek someone to slay thee* RB. 5; *gwna ty...y geingho ef make a house in which he may find room* RB. 37, 21

(β) *Sef y gwelei y llew yn y ganlyn . . . ual milgi a uackei ehun he saw the lion following him like a hound that he had reared himself* RB. 187; *pedeir meillonon gwynnnyon a dyuei yn y hol myn yd elhei four white blades of clover grew after her wherever she went* WB. 476; *digavn oed hynnny yn tal gwasanaeth a uei uwy nor un a wneuthum i that were sufficient as pay for a greater service than that which I have done* WB. 426; *a pheth bynnac a dywettei Peredur wrthi chwerthin a wnay hitheu yn uchel and whatever Peredur said to her, she laughed aloud* RB. 237; *a chymeint oed eu gwybot ac nat oed ymadrawd . . . yr isset y dywettit . . . nys gwypynt and such was their knowledge that there was no conversation, however low it was uttered, that they did not know* RB. 94, 18. After a primary tense: *kynhebic yw yr neb a wasgarei gemeu mawrweirhyawc dan draet moch he is like one who should scatter precious stones under the feet of swine* RB. II. 122.

### The Imperative.

**115.** In the active the imperative has two persons in the singular and three in the plural; in the passive it is identical in form with the subjunctive. The negative is **na**. Examples:—**gat** i mi vynet *allow me to go*; **na wiscet** dim ymdanei *let her not put anything on*; kyrchu tref arall a **wnawn** *let us make for another town*; **na rodher** *let there not be given*. The only idiom that calls for special notice is the following:—mi a rodaf vy iarllaeth yth uedyant a **thric** gyt a mi *I will give my earldom into thy possession, if thou wilt stay with me* (lit. *and stay with me*) RB. 278, 14.

### The Participle Passive in -edic.

**116.** Examples:—arueu y gwyr **lladedic** *the arms of the slain men*; ynteu **madeuedic** **yw** ganthaw y godyant ef *as for him, the injury done to him is forgiven by him* WB. 404; Gwawl . . . a doeth parth ar wled a **oed darparedic** idaw *Gwawl went to the feast that was prepared for him* RB. 14, 22.

### The Verbal in -adwy.

**117.** Examples:—nyt **barnadwy** yn volyant *it is not to be judged a praise* Hg. II. 83; nyt **kredadwy** *it is not to be believed* CM. 111; a chanys **credadwy** yw y anedigaeth **credadwy** y varwolyaeth *and since his birth is credible, his death is credible* CM. 21; midwyf bard **moladwy** *I am a poet worthy of praise* FB. 203; odit a uo **molediw** *few are worthy of praise* FB. 272; os da gennyti ac or byd **ragadwy** bod it *if thou approvest and if it is pleasing to thee* RB. II. 133; a **phrofadwy** yw ry golli ohonaf i vyn ngolwc *and it is clear that I have lost my sight* Hg. I. 83; vegys bilein **profadwy** *like a proved villain* Hg. II. 129.

## The Verbal Noun or Infinitive.

## FORMATION.

118. The following are the chief types of formation of the verbal noun :—

(a) The prehistoric suffix has disappeared, so that the verbal noun is now identical in form with the stem of the verb. Examples:

<b>amheu</b> <i>doubt</i> : <b>amheu-af</b> <i>I doubt</i>	<b>galw</b> <i>call</i> : <b>galw-af</b>
<b>cyvarch</b> <i>ask</i> : <b>cyvarch-af</b>	<b>gellwng</b> <i>let go</i> : <b>gellyng-af</b>
<b>dianc</b> <i>escape</i> : <b>diangh-af</b>	<b>gwarandaw</b> <i>listen</i> : <b>gwaran-daw-af</b>
<b>diodef</b> <i>suffer</i> : <b>diodev-af</b>	<b>llad</b> <i>slay</i> : <b>llad-af</b>

Further in some denominatives, e.g. **bwytta** *eating*: **bwytta-af**, **cardotta** *begging*, **lledratta** *stealing*, **pyscotta** *fishing*.

119. (b) The verbal noun still shows a suffix.

(a) -i, e.g.—

<b>bod-i</b> <i>drown</i> : <b>bod-af</b>	<b>mol-i</b> (O.W. <i>molim</i> ) <i>praise</i> :
<b>cyvod-i</b> <i>rise</i> : <b>cyvod-af</b>	<b>mol-af</b>
<b>erch-i</b> (O.W. <i>erchim</i> ) <i>ask</i> :	<b>per-i</b> <i>cause</i> : <b>par-af</b>
<b>arch-af</b>	<b>tew-i</b> <i>be silent</i> : <b>taw-af</b>
<b>meneg-i</b> <i>shew</i> : <b>manag-af</b>	<b>torr-i</b> <i>break</i> : <b>torr-af</b>

(β) -u, e.g.—

<b>can-u</b> <i>sing</i> : <b>can-af</b>	<b>gwassanaeth-u</b> <i>minister</i> :
<b>car-u</b> <i>love</i> : <b>car-af</b>	<b>gwassanaeth-af</b>
<b>dysg-u</b> <i>teach</i> : <b>dysg-af</b>	<b>mynn-u</b> <i>desire</i> : <b>mynn-af</b>
<b>gall-u</b> <i>be able</i> : <b>gall-af</b>	<b>pryn-u</b> <i>buy</i> : <b>pryn-af</b>

This is the common form of the verbal noun from denominatives in -**ha**-, e.g. **cennatta-u** *send message*: **cennatta-af**, **dynessa-u** *approach*: **dynessa-af**, **rydha-u** *free*: **rydha-af**.

(γ) -aw, e.g.—

<b>gwisg-aw</b> <i>clothe</i> : <b>gwisg-af</b>	<b>bedydy-aw</b> <i>baptize</i> : <b>bedydy-af</b>
<b>lliw-aw</b> <i>colour</i> : <b>lliw-af</b>	<b>medyly-aw</b> <i>think</i> : <b>medyly-af</b>

(δ) -at, -et, -ut, e.g.—

<b>adeil-at</b> <i>build</i> : <b>adeil-af</b>	<b>gorderch-at</b> <i>make love</i> : <b>gorderch-af</b>
<b>cerd-et</b> <i>go</i> : <b>cerd-af</b>	<b>yv-et</b> <i>drink</i> : <b>yv-af</b>
<b>gwel-et</b> <i>see</i> : <b>gwel-af</b>	
<b>dywed-ut</b> (also <b>dywedwyt</b> ) <i>say</i> : <b>dywed-af</b>	<b>ymchoel-ut</b> <i>turn</i> : <b>ymchoel-af</b>

(ε) Various suffixes found only in a few verbs :—

<b>cymryt</b> <i>take</i> : <b>cymmer-af</b>	<b>dilit</b> <i>follow</i> : <b>dilyn-af</b>
<b>dyffryt</b> <i>protect</i> : <b>differ-af</b>	<b>ymlit</b> <i>pursue</i> : <b>ymlyn-af</b>
<b>edvryd</b> <i>restore</i> : <b>adver-af</b>	<b>godiwes</b> <i>overtake</i> : <b>godiwed-af</b>
<b>goglyt</b> <i>shun</i> : <b>gogel-af</b>	<b>arhos</b> <i>await</i> : <b>arho-af</b>
<b>adolwyn</b> <i>entreat</i> : <b>adolyg-af</b>	<b>dwyn</b> <i>lead</i> : <b>dyg-af</b>
<b>amwyn</b> <i>protect</i> : <b>amyg-af</b>	
<b>ehed-ec</b> <i>fly</i> : <b>ehed-af</b>	<b>red-ec</b> <i>run</i> : <b>red-af</b>
<b>ered-ic</b> <i>plough</i> : <b>ard-af</b>	
<b>caffael, cael</b> <i>get</i> : <b>caff-af</b>	<b>gallel</b> (by <b>gallu</b> ) <i>be able</i> : <b>gall-af</b>
<b>gadael</b> (by <b>gadu</b> ) <i>allow</i> : <b>gad-af</b>	<b>sev-yll</b> <i>stand</i> : <b>sav-af</b>
<b>chwerthin</b> <i>laugh</i> : <b>chward-af</b>	<b>igian</b> <i>sob</i> : <b>igi-af</b>
<b>darllein</b> <i>read</i> : <b>darlle-af</b>	<b>llevain</b> <i>cry</i> : <b>llev-af</b>

#### USAGE.

**120.** The infinitive, being merely a verbal noun, has all the constructions of a noun; it has, however, become so far attached to the verbal system that it forms a perfect by prefixing the particle **ry** (§ 96c). Examples :—

(a) **nyt oed vynyth yt gaffel** *bud it was not a common thing for you to get profit*; **mynneu a ryuedeis gallu ohonaw ef mynet yn dirybud y mi** *I wondered that he could go without informing me*; **gwedy llad y gwyr hynny** *after those men had been slain*; **cyn awch mynet ymdeith ateb a geffwch** *before you depart* (lit. *before your*

going) *you shall get an answer*; heb y **uenegi** imi *without showing it to me*; y eu **gochel** *to avoid them*.

(b) gwedy clybot yn Rufein **ry oresgyn** o Garawn ynys Brydein *after it had been heard in Rome that Carawn had conquered the island of Britain*. Sef a wnaethant lldiaw yn vwy no meint am **ry wneuthur** ac wynt kyfryw dwyll a hwnnw *they were exceeding wroth that such treachery had been done to them* RB. II. 75.

121. The verbal noun has no distinction of voice. If it depends upon **gallu** *to be able* or **dylyu** *to owe*, then, if the sense be passive, **gallu** and **dylyu** are put in the passive, e.g. gwreic **y gellir dywedut** idi y bot yn deckaf or gwraged *a woman of whom it can be said that she is the fairest of women*; ni a atwaenwn y neb a **dylyer y kymryt** y gantaw *we know those that ought to be taken from him* RB. 16, 20.

122. The agent with the verbal noun is commonly expressed by the preposition **o** following the noun (cf. the corresponding Irish construction with *do*), e.g. gwedy **gorwed ohonaw ef** ar traws yr auon *after he had lain across the river*; gwedy **ry gyscu ohonaw** *after he had slept*; rac dy **lad ohonaw** *lest thou shouldst be slain by him*. It may also be expressed by the preposition **y**, e.g. **tygu llyein mawr udunt wynteu** y vot yn wir *they swore great oaths that it was true* Hg. II. 131; **kymryt ofyn mawr y Vradmwnd** *Bradmwnd became sore afraid* Hg. II. 133; gwedy **udunt oresgyn** yr holl wlat *after they had conquered the whole country* RB. II. 116; gwedy **y Amic gaffel kennyat** *after Amic had got permission* Rev. Celt. IV. 218; nyt oed neb o vilwyr y vort gronn heb **idaw eu bwrw** oll yr llawr *there was no one of the warriors of the Round Table that he had not thrown down* Hg. I. 9; yr **y pawb disgynnu** *though everyone else dismounted* RB. 105, 7. Or the verbal noun may be preceded by a possessive adjective, e.g. gwedy **eu dyuot** yr weirglawd *after they came to the meadow* Hg. I. 9.

123. The verbal noun is often used in periphrasis with **gwneuthur** *to do*, e.g. **dysgynnu** ar y pren a **wnant** *they will alight upon the tree*; ac yna **ymlad** a **wnaem** ninneu am y maen *and then we would fight for the stone*; a **cherdet** recdi yr coet a

**oruc** ý uorwyn *and the maiden went on to the wood*; **rodi** penn y karw a **wnaethpwyf** y Enid *the head of the stag was given to Enid*.

**124.** The verbal noun may carry on the construction of a finite verb, e.g. **drýchael** ý wýneb a oruc ynteu ac **ýdrých** arnei ýn llidiawc *he raised his face and looked on her angrily* WB. 419; kennatau ý mab a orucpwyf, ae **dýuot** ýnteu ýr llýs *and the boy was sent for and came to the court* WB. 454; ac a dywawf na wnaethpwyf oe bleit ef drwc yn y byt y Briaf, namyn **rodi** Esonia idaw ef o achaws y dewret *and he said that on his part no evil in the world had been done to Priam, but that Hesione had been given to him for his valour* RB. II. 5; pan **bebillo** Lloegir in tir Ethlin a **guneuthur** Dýganhuý dinas degin *when the English shall encamp in the land of Ethlin, and make Deganwy a strong fort* BB. 28<sup>a</sup>; pan gyfodes y bobyl a **chael** Lawnslof megys yn uarw *when the people rose and found Launelot like one dead* Hg. I. 155.

**125.** Without a preceding finite verb the verbal noun may serve as an historical infinitive, e.g. tra yttoed vilwyr Arthur yn ymlad ar gaer, **rwygaw** o Gei y uagwyr a **chymryf** y carcharawr ar y geuyn *while Arthur's warriors were fighting with the city, Kei broke through the wall and took the prisoner on his back* RB. 131, 28; **deuy** yrof a Duw, heb ynteu. ae **dwyn** gyt ac ef yr uort oe hanuod, ac **erchi** idi vwyta yn uynych "*between God and me thou shalt come,*" said he. *And he took her to the table against her will and asked her repeatedly to eat* RB. 289; a gwedy disgynnu Arthur yr tir **dýuot** seint Iwerdon attaw y erchi nawd idaw *and after Arthur landed, the saints of Ireland came to him to ask his protection* RB. 136; **dýuot** (= **dyuot** a **oruc** RB. 126) ý porthawr ac **agori** ý porth *the porter came and opened the gate* WB. 487.

**126.** The verbal noun has special uses with certain prepositions.

(a) With **yn** the verbal noun has the force of a present participle (cf. the Irish construction with *oc*), e.g. val y gwelas y gwr...Peredur **yn dyuot** *as the man saw Peredur coming*; lleidyr...a geueis **yn lletratta** arnaf a thief whom I caught stealing from me. It is often used with the substantive verb to express continuing action; e.g. yr hynny hyt hediw **yd wyf i yn darparu** gwled yiti *from that time*

*till to-day I have been preparing a feast for thee* RB. 182; *canys ar y medwl hwnnw yd wyt titheu yn trigyaw since it is on this purpose that thou art fixed* RB. 253; *ual yd oed y sarff yn dyuot or garrec, y tharaw a oruc Owein a chledyf as the snake was coming from the rock, Owein struck it with a sword.* When the verbal noun precedes the verb **yn** may be added, but it is more commonly omitted, e.g. **yn eisted yd oedynt** *ar garrec Harlech they were seated on the rock of Harlech* RB. 26, **yn adolwc y mae y ti arglwyd** (= **adolwyn** *itti arglwyd y mae* Erbin WB. p. 205) *ellwng Gereint y uab attaw he entertains thee, Lord, to let go his son Gereint to him* RB. 264; **dywedut** *rydunt ehun y maent they are saying among themselves* WB. p. 211; **medylyaw yd wyf** *I am considering* RB. 75, 26 (but **yd wyf yn medylyaw** RB. 76, 22).

(b) With **gwedy** *after* the verbal noun has the force of a perfect participle (cf. the use of Irish *iar n-*), e.g. *ý mae gwedy mýnet gyd a Gwenhwývar ý hýstavell he has gone with Gwenhwyvar to her chamber* WB. 408, *a phan yttoedynt gwedy gware talym, sef y klywynt kynnwryf mawr when they had played a while, they heard a great din* RB. 157; *a ffan welas ý gwr...Gereint gwedy caffel dýrnawd and when the man saw that Gereint had received a blow* WB. 398; *Enýt a oed heb gýscu ý mýwn ýstauell wýdrin, ar heul ýn týwynnu ar ý gwely, ar dillad gwedy rý lithraw ý ar ý dwý uron ef Enid was sleepless in a chamber of glass, with the sun shining on the bed, while the clothes had slipped from his breast* WB. 416.

(c) With **can** *with* and **tan** *under* the verbal noun is used in sentences like the following: *Pascen...a gyffroes y bobyl honno... gan adaw udunt anheruynedic amylder o eur ac aryant Pascen stirred up that people, promising them an unlimited abundance of gold and silver* RB. II. 169; *tywyssawc Kernyw ae hymlynawd gan eu llad the prince of Cornwall followed them slaying them* RB. II. 191; *dyuot dracheuynt at Wenhwyuar dan gwynaw y dolur she came back to Gwenhwyuar bewailing her anguish* RB. 249; (*wynt*) *a gyrchassant parth a Ruuein dan anreithaw a wrthwynepei udunt they set out towards Rome, plundering all who resisted them* RB. II. 75.



## PARADIGM OF THE REGULAR VERB.

127. Types: *caru to love*, and the denominative *rydhaü to set free*. Forms in brackets are forms that have not been noted from a verb of the type.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.	sing.	plur.
1.	car-af	car-wn	rydha-af	rydha-wn
2.	cer-i, cer-y	cer-wch	rydhe-y	rydhe-wch
3.	car	car-ant	rydha	rydha-ant
pass.	cer-ir		rydhe-ir	

## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	car-wn	car-em	rydha-wn	(rydha-em)
2.	car-ut	car-ewch	rydha-ut	ryda-ewch
3.	car-ei	cer-ynt	rydha-ei	rydhe-ynt
pass.	cer-it		rydhe-it	

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	cereis	carass-am	rydheeis	rydhaass-am
2.	cereis-t	carass-awch	rydheeis-t	rydhaass-awch
3.	caras	carass-ant	rydha-awd	rydhaass-ant
pass.	carat		rydha-wyt	

## PLUPERFECT.

1.	carass-wn	(carass-em)	(rydhaass-wn)	(rydhaass-em)
2.	carass-ut	(carass-ewch)	(rydhaass-ut)	(rydhaass-ewch)
3.	carass-ei	(carass-ynt)	rydhaass-ei	rydhaess-ynt
pass.	carass-it		(rydhaass-it)	

## IMPERATIVE.

1.		car-wn		(rydha-wn)
2.	car	cer-wch	rydha	rydhe-wch
3.	car-et	car-ent	rydha-et	(rydha-ent)
pass.	car(h)-er		rydha-er	

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	car(h)-wyf	car(h)-om	rydha-wyf	rydha-om
	car(h)-oef			
2.	cer(h)-ych	car(h)-och	rydhe-ych	(rydha-och)
3.	car(h)-wy	car(h)-wynt		
	car(h)-oe	car(h)-oent		
	car(h)-o	car(h)-ont	rydha-o	rydha-wynt
				rydha-ont
pass.	car(h)-er		rydha-er	

## PAST.

1.	car(h)-wn	car(h)-em	rydha-wn	(rydha-em)
2.	car(h)-ut	car(h)-ewch	rydha-ut	rydha-ewch
3.	car(h)-ei	cer(h)-ynt	rydha-ei	rydhe-ynt
pass.	cer(h)-it		rydhe-it	

## REMARKS ON THE VERBAL PARADIGM.

## Present and Future Indicative.

128. (a) sg. 3. Many verbs show vowel infection (§ 5), e.g. *eirch*: *arch-af* *I ask*, *ceidw*: *cadw-af* *I preserve*, *ceiff*: *caff-af* *I get*, *geilw*: *galw-af* *I call*, *lleinw*: *llanw-af* *I fill*, *peir*: *par-af* *I cause*, *peirch*: *parch-af* *I honour*, *seif*: *sav-af* *I stand*, *teifi*: *tafi-af* *I cast*, *etteil*: *attal-af* *I stop*, *gweheird*: *gwa-hard-af* *I forbid*, *lleveir*: *llavar-af* *I speak*, *edeu*, *edy*: *adaw-af* *I leave*, *edeu*: *adaw-af* *I promise*, *gwerendeu*, *gwerendy*: *gwarandaw-af* *I listen*, *teu*: *taw-af* *I am silent*, *tereu*, *tery*: *traw-af* *I strike*, *gwyl*: *gwel-af* *I see*, *gweryt*: *gwared-af* *I help*, *cyll*: *coll-af* *I destroy*, *dyt*: *dod-af* *I put*, *llysg*: *llosg-af* *I burn*, *hyllt*: *hollt-af* *I split*, *ryd*: *rod-af* *I give*, *tyrr*: *torr-af* *I break*, *egyr*: *agor-af* *I open*, *envyn*: *anvon-af* *I send*, *ervyll*: *arvoll-af* *I receive*, *erhys*: *arhos-af* *I await*, *deffry*: *deffro-af* *I arouse*, *ffy*: *ffo-af* *I flee*, *try*: *tro-af* *I turn*. It should be noted that, except in the 3 sg. of the present,

no vowel but **a** is subject to infection in the verb, e.g. 2 pl. **gwel-wch**, **rod-wch**, **ffo-wch** (cf. § 7 note 1).

NOTE.—Irregular are: **menyc**: **manag-af** *I shew*; **dyweit**: **dywed-af** *I say*.

(b) From the denominatives in **-hau**, **-a** spreads as an ending to other verbs, e.g. **cerda**: **cerdet** *to go*, **teruyna**: **tervynu** *to end*. Further, it is added again to the denominatives, e.g. **gnotta**: **gnotta-af** *I am wont*. Form **-áa** comes by contraction in Mod.W. **-á**.

129. In the older language some other forms appear.

sg. 1. By **-af**, **-if** is sometimes found, e.g. **gwneif** *I will make* FB. 62, **cenif** *I will sing* MA. 140<sup>a</sup>, **gweinif** *I will serve* 142<sup>a</sup>, **cerif** *I will love* 147<sup>b</sup>.

sg. 2. In this person there is also an ending **-yd** (i.e. **yđ**, cf. Bret. **-ez**, Corn. **-yth**), e.g. **ceryd** *thou lovest*, **gwesceryd** *thou scatterest*, **dywedyd** *thou sayest*, **nodyd** *thou protectest*, **clywyd** *thou hearest*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1873, pp. 143 sq.

sg. 3. In O. Irish there are two forms of the ending, a longer which is found only in simple verbs, and a shorter which is used in compound verbs, and also in simple verbs when a negative or certain other particles precede, e.g. **berid** (from **\*bhereti**) *he carries*, but **ní beir** (from **\*bheret**) *he does not carry*, **do-beir** *he gives*. In Early Welsh there are traces of a similar distinction of ending, e.g. **pereid y rychen**. **ny pharae ae goreu** *the trenches remain, he who made them remains not* FB. 289; and in the proverb: **trengid golud, ní threing molud** *wealth perishes, fame perishes not*. Further examples of the ending are: **prinit buys**, **agit, egit** *goes* (= Mid.W. **eyt** FB. 304) in the O.W. glosses; **llicrid**: **llygru** *destroy*, **reuhid**: **rewi** *freeze*, **ottid**: **odi** *snow*, **gosgupid swoeps**, **tohid**: **toi** *cover* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>, **meccid**: **magu** *nourish* BB. 45<sup>b</sup>, **briuhid**: **briwaw** *break* BB. 46<sup>a</sup>, cf. further Arch. Cambr. 1872, pp. 303 sq., 1873, pp. 145 sq. It will be seen that the **h** which appears in the old future (§ 130), and in the subjunctive has also made its way into these presents. In usage Mid.W. agrees with O.Ir. in that the longer ending is not found when the verb is preceded by a negative, it differs from O.Ir. in that the longer ending has spread to compound verbs. In early poetry there seem to be instances of a corresponding present in **-awt** (which would originally belong to **ā**-stems, cf. O.Bret. **-ot** in **fleriot** gl. **ridolet**, O.Ir. **caraid**, from **\*carāti**, *loves*, Lat. **amat**); **barywhaud** *grows a beard*, **gvýrhaud** *bends* l:B. 45<sup>a</sup>, **llewychawt** *shines* FB. 117, **gwisgawt** *clothes* FB. 307.

pl. 3. In the O.W. glosses by the ending **-ant** in **iterclndant** gl. **subigant** there appears also **-int** in **limnint** gl. **tondent**, **nertheint** gl. **arnant**, **scamnehint** gl. **levant**. This ending seems to survive in Mid.W. poetry, e.g. **diurýssint hasten** BB. 45<sup>a</sup>, 54<sup>b</sup> (cf. **pan vryssyant** FB. 257), **dywedýnt** *will say* FB. 223, **torrynt** *will break* FB. 229. It seems probable that this served as a primary ending, but the matter demands further investigation.

Passive.—In the passive there is found in poetry and occasionally in proverbs a variety of forms in **-tor**, e.g. **megittor** *will be nourished* BB. 31<sup>b</sup>, **kenhittor** *will be sung* BB. 26<sup>b</sup>, **kwynitor** *is lamented* FB. 280; **kymysgetor** *is mixed* FB. 181, **kyrbwylltor** *will be mentioned* FB. 200;

*traethattor will be discoursed* FB. 137, *canhator is sung* FB. 209 : *brithottor is variegated* BB. 17<sup>a</sup>. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1872 pp. 305 sq., Dottin, *Désinences verbales en R*, 177 sq. These forms, which are clearly based on the longer form of the 3 sg. act., are especially common in the poetry of the twelfth century. Their syntactical function is present or future.

130. In Early Welsh there are also some specially future forms :  
sg. 3 (a) -hawt (i.e. -hawd), e.g. *parahawd will continue* BB. 50<sup>b</sup>, *briuhawd will break* BB. 29<sup>b</sup>, *methawd will fail* WB. 457, *lletawt will spread* FB. 236, *llwyprawd (:llwybraw) will travel* MA 232<sup>b</sup>. Cf. CZ. III. 402.

(b) After a negative, -haw : *ny chaffaw will not get* BR. 4<sup>b</sup>, *nys gwnaw will not make* FB. 126 ; but also a *wnaw who will make* FB. 150.

Pl. 3. -hawnt, e.g. O.W. *cuinhaunt gl. defleebunt, gwnahawnt will make* FB. 124, *pebyllyawnt will encamp* FB. 212.

Pass. -hawr, e.g. *agorawr will be opened* WB. 456, *ffohawr there will be flight* FB. 126, *talhawr will be paid* BB. 16<sup>a</sup>, *nyn lladawr we shall not be killed* WB. 475, *edmyccaer will be honoured* BB. 29<sup>b</sup>. Cf. Dottin, *op. cit.*, 169 sq., CZ. III. 403.

NOTE.—There also occur forms of the type of -ettor, -attor above, e.g. *torredawd will break* FB. 236, *llettatawt will spread* FB. 129, *dygettaur will be led* BB. 13<sup>a</sup>, *llosetawr will be burned* FB. 119, *galwetawr will be called* FB. 165.

### Imperfect Indicative and Conditional.

131. sg. 3. (a) In poetry there is also an ending -i, infecting a preceding a, e.g. *ceri loved, nodi protected, torri broke, clywi heard*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1874, p. 117, Cymmrod. IX. 54, Rev. Celt. VI. 16.

(b) There is also an ending -at (i.e. -ad) ; see the irregular verbs *gwybot* (§ 143), *adnabot* (§ 144), *pieu* (§ 160), and the verb *bot* (§ 152). So in the plup. *ry dywedysyat had said* MA. 485<sup>b</sup>.

pl. 3. In this person there is an ending -eint :—*achubeint* WB. 466 = pass. *achubitt* RB. 110, 28, *caneint* LA. 95 = *cenynt* Hg. II. 447, *deueint, syrthyeint* LA. 97, *traweint* Hg. II. 184, *llauuryeint* ib. 213 ; cf. the subjunctive ket *ývein though they drank* FB. 66, *wyntwy yn llad gyt as ledeint they slaying though they slew them* FB. 276 = a *chin ri llethid ve latýsseint and before they were slain they had slain* FB. 38, cf. Cymmrod. IX. 67. This -eint is an analogical formation to sg. 3 -ei.

NOTE.—More peculiar is *ný lesseint* BB. 32<sup>a</sup> which seems to mean *they were not slain* (cf. *yt lesseint* FB. 285, *lleseint* MA. 194<sup>a</sup>), apparently based on *llas was slain* ; cf. further *meithyeint was reared?* *lledeseint were slain?* *colledeint were destroyed?* FB. 264, MA. 94<sup>b</sup>.

## Preterite and Perfect Indicative Active.

132. sg. 3. In this person there is a variety of endings.

(a) -as, e.g. *bradas betrayed*, *caffas got*, *gwelas saw*.

(b) -es, e.g. *agores opened*, *dodes put*, *gweles saw*.

(c) -is, e.g. *erchis asked*, *edewis left*, *gelwis called*.

(d) -wys, becoming -ws, e.g. *bendigwys* and *bendigws blessed*, *cyscwys* and *cyscws slept*. In the southern dialect -ws became the characteristic ending in this person.

(e) -awd (i.e. awđ), e.g. *parawd caused*, *cerdawd journeyed*, *parhaawd continued*. This is an encroaching ending, whence comes the Mod. literary Welsh ending -ođ.

NOTE.—In early poetry there is an absolute ending -sit (corresponding to the present ending -it (§ 129), e.g. *kewssit got*, *prynessid bought*, *delyessid (: dala) held*. Cf. *Arch. Cambr.* 1873, pp. 151 sq. It corresponds to the O. Bret. ending in *tinsit gl. sparsit*, *toreusit gl. attriuit*.

I pl., 3 pl. In these persons by -sam, -sant, there appear also -som, -sont.

Plur.—In the plural there are three types of formation, (a) -sam, etc., (b) -assam, etc., (c) -yssam, etc., e.g.—

(a) *cawsam*, *cawsawch*, *cawsant*: *caffael got*, *kymersam*, *kymersant*: *cymryt take*, *gwelsam*, *gwelsant*: *gwelet see*.

(b) *dywedassam*: *dywedut say*, *lladassant*: *llad slay*, *nessaassant*: *nessaü approach*.

(c) *dodyssam*, *dodyssant*: *dodi place*, *kwplayssam*: *kwplaü complete*, *nessayassant*: *nessaü approach*.

133. In Mid.W., as in Mid.Ir., the s-preterite has become the prevalent formation, in which the other types of the preterite tend to merge. But particularly in poetry, and especially in the 3 sg., there are examples of two other types of the preterite.

(a) The t-preterite (corresponding to the Irish t-preterite, e.g. *asbert he said*: *asbeir says*).

*canu sing*: sg. 1 *ceint* and *ceintum*, sg. 2 *ceuntost*, sg. 3 *cant*.

*gwan pierce*: sg. 1 *gweint*, sg. 3 *gwant*.

*cymryt take*: sg. 3 *kymerrth*, *kymyrth*.

*diffryt protect*: sg. 3 *differth*, *diffyrth*.

**mynet** *go*: **aeth** (= Ir. *acht*) *went* (§ 140); in composition **doeth** (§ 141), and sg. 1 **ymdeith** *went about*, sg. 3 **ymdaeth**.

**gwneuthur** *make*: **gwnaeth** (§ 142).

**magu** *nourish*: sg. 3 **maeth**, pl. 3 **maethant**.

**dyrreith** *returned* (√reg-).

**amwyn** *protect*: sg. 3 **amwyth**.

**dydwyn** *bring*: sg. 3 **dydwyth**.

(b) Forms with reduplication, or unreduplicated forms of the type of O.Ir. **rāith** *ran*: **rethid** *runs*.

**clybot** *hear*: sg. 1 **kigleu** (= Ir. *cūala* from \**cuklova*) and **kiglef**, sg. 3 **kigleu**.

**adnabot** *recognize*: **atwaen** (§ 144).

**dywedut** *say*: sg. 3 **dywawt**, also **dywot**, **dywat** (cf. Ir. *adcuaid* *has related* from \**ad-co-fāith*).

**godiwes** *overtake*: sg. 3 **godiwawd**.

**gwaret** *help*: sg. 3 **gwarawt** (= Ir. *fo-rāith* *helped*).

The same form of inflexion is exhibited by:—

**amwyn** *defend*: sg. 3 **amuc**.

**dwyn** *lead*: sg. 1 **dugum**, sg. 2 **dugost**, sg. 3 **duc**, pl. 1 **dugam**, pl. 3 **dugant**.

**gwneuthur** *make*: **goruc** (§ 142).

Here seems to belong also **amkawd** *said*, pl. 3 **amkeudant**, frequent in the WB. text of Kulhwch and Olwen.

### Preterite and Perfect Indicative Passive.

134. In origin the Welsh like the Irish preterite passive developed out of a past participle passive in **-to-**, identical in formation with Latin participles like *captus*, *amatus*, etc.

(a) In **llas** (= Ir. *-lass*): **llad** *slay* and **gwys** (= Ir. *-fess*): **gwybot** *know*, the **t** of the suffix together with the dental of the root has become **ss**, **s** (§ 11a; cf. Lat. *missus*: *mitto*, etc.).

(b) **-at**, e.g. **gwelat**: **gwelet** *see*, **caffat**: **caffael** *get*.

(c) **-et**, e.g. **dodet**: **dodi** *place*, **llosged**: **llosgi** *burn*.

(d) **-it**, e.g. **edewit**: **adaw** *promise*, **erchit**: **erchi** *ask*, **gelwit**: **galw** *call*.

(e) -wyt, liable to become -wt, e.g. *cymeryt*: *cymryt* *take*, *hewyt*: *heü* *sow*, *lladwyt*: *llad* *slay*, *kennatawyt*: *kennataü* *send*.

(f) Forms in -pwyt, e.g. *dywespwyt* and *dywetpwyt*: *dywedut* *say*, *clywspwyt*, *clywyspwyt*: *clybot* *hear*, *dechreuspwy*: *dechreu* *begin*, *roespwy*: *roi* *give*, *kanpwyt*: *canu* *sing*, *gwanpwyt*: *gwanu* *pierce*, *ducpwyt*: *dwyn* *lead*, *maethpwyt*: *magu* *nourish*, *gwassanaethpwyt*: *gwassanaethu* *serve*, *talpwyt*: *tal* *pay*. Cf. *Cymmrod.* IX. 75 sq.

### Pluperfect Indicative.

135. Corresponding to the three types in the plural of the preterite active, there are in the pluperfect three types (a) -swn, (b) -asswn, (c) -ysswn, e.g. :—

(a) *cawssei*: *caffael* *get*, *gwelsei*, *gwelsynt*, pass. *gwelsit*: *gwelet* *see*, *edewssit*: *adaw* *leave*.

(b) *mynasswn*: *mynessynt*, pass. *mynassit*: *mynnu* *desire*, *cysgassei*: *cysgu* *sleep*, *lladassant*, pass. *lladessit*: *llad* *slay*, *gnottaessynt*: *gnottaü* *be accustomed*.

(c) *archyssei*, pass. *erchyssit*, *archyssit*: *erchi* *ask*, *managyssei*: *menegi* *shew*, *lladyssit*: *llad* *slay*, *mynnessynt*: *mynnu* *demand*, *gnottayssei*: *gnottaü* *be accustomed*.

136. (a) In the active there is a periphrastic pluperfect with -oed *was* in *athoed* (§ 140), *doethoed* (§ 141), *gwnaethoed* (§ 142). Forms in -oed occur also from *caffael* *get*, e.g., sg. 1 *cawssoe-dwn*, sg. 2 *cawssoe-dut*, sg. 3 *cawssoe-d*, *cassoed*, *cawssoe-dyat*, pl. 3 *cassoedynt*, pass. *cassoedit*; further *mynnassoed*: *mynnu*; *planasoed*; *rodassoed*, *roessoed*; *rossoed*, pass. *rossoedit*: *rodi*. Cf. *Cymmrod.* IX. 76 sq.

(b) In the passive there are some periphrastic forms with -oed :— sg. 3 *archadoed* *had been asked*: *erchi* *ask*, *dysgadoed*: *dysgu* *teach*, *ganadoed*, *ganydoed*: *geni* *be born*, *managadoed*: *menegi* *shew*; further *cathoed*: *caffael* *get*. Cf. *Cymmrod.* IX. 77.

## Imperative.

137. sg. 2. From denominatives in **-haü** **a** spreads as an ending to other verbs, e.g. **prydera** : **pryderu** *be anxious*, **paratoa** : **paratoï** *prepare*. Further **a** is added again to the denominatives, e.g. **cwplaä** : **cwplaü** *complete*, **naccaä** : **naccaü** *refuse*. From **-ää** comes Mod.W. **-â**.

sg. 3. There appears sometimes an ending **-it**, e.g. **bernit** (v.l. **barned**) : **barnu** *judge* MA. 182<sup>b</sup>, **elhid** : **mynet** *go* WB. 31<sup>a</sup>, **gobwyllit** : **gobwyllaw** *take heed* FB. 199, **gwrthledit** : **gwrthlad** *repulse* LA. 26, **gwrthottit** : **gwrthot** *repel* FB. 125, **rwydheytt** : **rwydhaü** *make easy* RB. 228, **madeuit** : **maddeu** *forgive* Hg. II. 185, **rothit** : **rodï** *give* BB. 47<sup>a</sup>. It will be observed that these forms shew the subjunctive stem.

## Present Subjunctive.

138. In the 3 sg. and 3 pl. the **o** forms become the regular forms in Mid.W. Sometimes **o** spreads to the 1 sg., e.g. **gwysgof** WB. 97. In the pass. an **wy** form appears in **rothwyr** FB. 109.

NOTE.—For *duch may he lead*, *gwares may he help*, see § 110, note 2.

## Past Subjunctive.

139. In the passive by **-it** there is found sometimes **-et** : **cladhet** WB. 469 = **cledit** RB. 112 : **cladu** *bury*, **gofynnet** WB. p. 220 = **gouynnït** RB. 286 : **govynnu** *ask*, **llafassed** : **llavassu** *dare* BB. 27<sup>a</sup>.

## IRREGULAR VERBS.

140. **mynet** *go*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.
1.	<b>af</b>	<b>awn</b>
2.	<b>ey</b>	<b>ewch</b>
3.	<b>a</b>	<b>ant</b>
pass.	<b>eir</b>	

NOTE 1.—sg. 3 absolute O.W. **agit**, **egit**, Mid.W. **eyt**.



## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

	sing.	plur.
1.	<b>awn</b>	<b>aem</b>
2.	<b>aut</b>	
3.	<b>acy</b>	<b>eynt</b>
pass.	<b>eit</b>	

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

(a) 1.	<b>euthum</b>	<b>aetham</b>
2.	<b>aethost</b>	<b>aethawch</b>
3.	<b>aeth</b>	<b>aethant, aethont</b>
pass.	<b>aethpwyt</b>	

NOTE 2.—sg. 3 absolute **eithyd** FB. 179, 188.

(b) 1.	<b>athwyf, adwyf, ethwyf, ethym</b>	
	<b>edwyf</b>	
2.	<b>athwyt, adwyt</b>	
3.	<b>ethyw, edyw</b>	<b>ethynt, edynt</b>

NOTE 3.—Forms (b) have a perfect sense, cf. § 141, note 4.

## PLUPERFECT.

1.	<b>athoedwn</b>	
2.		
3.	<b>athoed, adoed</b>	<b>athoedynt</b>

## IMPERATIVE.

1.	<b>awn</b>
2.	<b>dos</b>
3.	<b>aet</b>
	<b>ewch</b>
	<b>aent</b>

NOTE 4.—sg. 3 also **elhid** (§ 137).

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	<b>el(h)wyf</b>	<b>el(h)om</b>
2.	<b>el(h)y ch</b>	<b>el(h)och</b>
3.	<b>el</b>	<b>el(h)wynt, el(h)ont</b>
pass.	<b>el(h)er</b>	

NOTE 5.—Also, in future sense, sg. 3 **aho** RB. 140, 16, pl. 3 **ahont** FB. 128.

	sing.	PAST.	plur.
1.	el(h)wn		
2.	el(h)ut		
3.	el(h)ei	el(h)ynt	
pass.	(el(h)it)		

141. *dyvot* *come*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1.	deuaf	deuwn, down
2.	deuy, doy	deuwch
3.	daw	deuant, doant

NOTE 1.—sg. 2 *doit* (i.e. *doyd*) BB. 51<sup>b</sup>l.

NOTE 2.—In poetry there is also another set of forms in a future sense:

1.	dybydaf	
3.	{ dybyd, dyvyd, dybydawt deubyd dypi, dybi, dyvi deupi, deubi	dybydant

NOTE 3.—Preceded by *dy-*: sg. 3 *dydaw*, pl. 3 *dydeuant*, pass. *dydeuhawr*.

## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	down	
2.	dout, deuyt	
3.	deuei, deuhei, doey, doi	doynt
pass.	deuit	

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

(a) 1.	deuthum, doethum	doetham
2.	deuthost, doethost, daethost	doethawch, doethoch
3.	doeth, deuth, daeth	deuthant, doethant, dothant, doethont
pass.	deuthpwyt, doethpwyt	

	sing.	plur.
(b) 1.		
2.	dyvuost	
3.	dybu, dyvu, deubu	dybuant, dyvuant
(c) 1.	dothwyf, dodwyf	dodym, deuthym
2.	dothwyt, dodwyt	dodywch, doethywch
3.	doethyw, dothyw, dodyw, dedyw	dodynt, dethynt

NOTE 4.—Forms (b) are chiefly poetical, but *dyvuost*, *dyvu*, *dyvuant* occur in the prose of WB. Forms (c) are perfect in sense; in later Mid. W. they are replaced by forms (a), e.g. *deuth* RB. 126, 9=*dodýw* WB. 486, *deuthum* RB. 105, 21=*dothwýf* WB. 459, *doeth* RB. 115, 25, *deuth* RB. 126, 9,=*dodýw* WB. 473, 486.

## PLUPERFECT.

1.	dathoedywn	
2.		
3.	doethoed, daethoed, dathoed, dothoed	doethoedynt, dothoedynt

## IMPERATIVE.

1.		down
2.	dyret, dabre	dowch
3.	deuet, doet	deuent, doent

NOTE 5.—There is also a 3 sg. *deuit* Hg. II. 51, and *delit* Hg. I. 4, 307.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	del(h)wyf	del(h)om
2.	del(h)ych	del(h)och
3.	del	del(h)wynt, del(h)ont
pass.	del(h)er	

NOTE 6.—There are also forms sg. 1 *dybwyf*, sg. 3 *dyppo*, *dyffo*, *dyvo*, *deupo*, *dideuho*, pl. 3 *dyffont*, pass. *dyffer*.

## PAST.

1.	del(h)wn	
2.	del(h)ut	del(h)ewch
3.	del(h)ei	del(h)ynt

NOTE 7.—There is also 3 sg. *dybei* and *dyffei*.

142. *gwneuthur* to make.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.
1.	<i>gwnaf</i>	<i>gwnawn</i>
2.	<i>gwney</i>	<i>gwnewch</i>
3.	<i>gwna</i>	<i>gwnant</i>
pass.	<i>gwneir</i>	

NOTE 1.—Fut. sg. 3 *gunahaud* BB. 27<sup>b</sup>, *gwnawt* FB. 224, *gwnaw* FB. 126, 150, pl. 3 *gwnahawnt* FB. 124.

## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	<i>gwnawn</i>	<i>gwnaem</i>
2.	<i>gwnaut</i>	<i>gwnaewch</i>
3.	<i>gwnaei</i>	<i>gwnaent</i>
pass.	<i>gwneit</i>	

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

(a) 1.	<i>gorugum</i>	<i>gorugam</i>
2.	<i>gorugost</i>	
3.	<i>goruc</i>	<i>gorugant</i>
pass.	<i>gorucpwy</i> t	
(b) 1.	<i>gwneuthum</i>	<i>gwnaetham</i> , <i>gwnaethom</i>
2.	<i>gwnaethost</i>	<i>gwnaethawch</i>
3.	<i>gwnaeth</i> , <i>gwneuth</i>	<i>gwnaethant</i> , <i>gwnaethont</i>
pass.	<i>gwnaethpwy</i> t	

NOTE 2.—In poetry there is also sg. 3 *goreu*, cf. Mid.Bret. *guereu*.

NOTE 3.—The *gwnaeth* forms encroach at the expense of the *goruc* forms, e.g. *gorucpwy*t WB. 452, 477, 487 = *gwnaethpwy*t RB. 100, 118, 127.

## PLUPERFECT.

1.	<i>gwnathoedwn</i>	
2.	<i>gwnaethodut</i>	
3.	<i>gwnaethoed</i> , <i>gwnath-</i> <i>oed</i> , <i>gwnadoed</i>	<i>gwnathoedynt</i>
pass.	<i>gwnathoedit</i>	

	IMPERATIVE,
sing.	plur.
1.	gwnawn
2. gwna	gwnewch
3. gwnaet	gwnaent
pass. gwnel(h)er	

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1. gwnel(h)wyf	
2. gwnel(h)ych	gwnel(h)och
3. gwnel	gwnel(h)wynt, gwnel(h)- ont
pass. gwnel(h)er	

NOTE 4.—sg. 3 also *gunelwŷ* BB. 24<sup>a</sup>, *gunaho* BB. 35<sup>b</sup>, *gwnaho* FB. 119, 235, pl. 3 *gynahont* BB. 31<sup>a</sup>, *gwnahon* FB. 155. With fut. ending *gwnelawr* FB. 213.

## PAST.

1. gwnel(h)wn	
2. gwnel(h)ut	
4. gwnel(h)ei	gwnel(h)ynt
pass. gwnel(h)it	

143. *gwybot* *know*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

1. gwnn	gwdam, gwdom
2. gwydost, gwdost	gwydawch, gwdawch, gwdoch
3. gwyr	gwydant, gwdant
pass. gwnys	

## IMPERFECT.

1. gwydwn, gwydywn	gwydem, gwydyem
2. gwydut, gwydyut	
3. gwydat, gwydyat	gwydynt
pass. gwydit	

## ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.
1.	gwybydaf	
2.	gwybydy	gwybydwch
3.	gwybyd	gwybydant
pass.	gwybydir	

NOTE 1.—In poetry there is also 3 sg. **gwybi**.

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	gwybydem
2.	gwybydut                      gwybydwch
3.	gwybydei
pass.	gwybydit

NOTE 2.—This comes to be used for the past subjunctive, e.g. *Bei ath wybydem if we had known thee* FB. 122.

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	gwybuum
2.	gwybuost
3.	gwybu                      gwybuant
pass.	gwybuwyd

## PLUPERFECT.

3.	gwybuyssyt
pass.	gwybuassit

## IMPERATIVE.

1.	gwybydwn
2.	gwybyd                      gwybydwch
3.	gwybydet, gwypet              gwybydent
pass.	gwybyder

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	gwypwyf                      gwypom
2.	gwypych                      gwypoch
3.	gwypwy, gwypo              gwypwynt, gwypont
pass.	gwyper

	sing.	PAST.	plur.
1.	gwypwn		
2.	gwyput		
3.	gwypei	gwypynt	

144. *adnabot recognize.*

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	adwaen, adwen, atwen	atwaenwn
2.	atwaenost	etweynwch, atweynwch, etwenwch
9.	edwyn, atwen	atwaenant

## IMPERFECT.

1.	atwaenwn	adwaenam
2.	atwaenut	
3.	atwaenat, atwaeniat	atwaenynt
pass.	etweinit	

## ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1.	adnabydaf, etnebydaf	adnabydwn
2.	adnabydy	
3.	adnebyd, ednebyd	adnabydant
pass.	adnabydir	

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	adnabydem
2.	
3.	adnebydei

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	adnabuum	adnabuam
2.		
3.	adnabu	adnabuant

## IMPERATIVE.

sing.

plur.

1.

2. ednebyd, adnebyd

adnebydwch

3.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.

adnapom

2. adnepych

3. adnapo

adnappoent, adnappont

pass. adnaper

## PAST.

1.

2.

3. adnapei

pass. adnepit

145. caffael, caffel, cahel, cael *get.*

## INDICATIVE.

Pres. and Fut. :—caffaf, ceffy, ceiff, etc.; also caf, cehy, cey, etc.

Imperf. and Cond. :—caffwn, etc, also cawn, etc.

Pret. and Perf. :—ceveis, ceis, ceveist, cavas, cawssam, cawssawch, cawssant, cawssont; pass. caffat, cavat, cahat, cat.

Pluperf. :—(a) cawsswn, etc., (b) cawssodwn, etc. (§ 136<sup>a</sup>).

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres. :—caffwyf, etc.

Past :—caffwn, etc., also cahwn, cawn, etc.

NOTE.—For an enumeration of forms see Cymmrod. IX. 111 sq.



**146. rodi, roi give.**

The peculiarity of this verb is that it has forms with and without **d**, e.g. ind. pres. sg. 2 **rody** and **roy**, imper. sg. 2 **ro**, subj. pres. sg. 3 **rotho**, **rodo** and **ro**. In the ind. pret. by **rodeis**, **rodeist**, **rodes** occur **roesum**, **roesost**, **roes**, and in the pass. by **rodet**, also **roespwyt**. In the plup. by the regular forms occur sg. 2 **roessut**, sg. 3 **roessei**, **royssei**, **roessoed**, **rasoed**, pl. 3 **rassoedynt**.

**147. tawr, dawr.**

This verb is used impersonally, e.g. **ny-m-tawr** *it does not concern me* RB. 284, 28, **pathawr** (= **pa-th-dawr**) *what does it concern thee?* RB. 279, 19, **nŷ-m-torei** WB. 172 = **ny-m-torei** RB. I. 238, *it would not concern me*, **ni-m-dorbi** BB. 30<sup>b</sup>. In the same sense is found the compound **didawr**; verb. noun **didarbot** Hg. I. 320.

**148. moes give.**

Only as imperative :—sg. 2 **moes**, pl. 2 **moeswch**.

**149. hwde take.** Used only as imperative.**150. med says.**

Inflected in the present and imperfect; it is used in quotation, e.g. **a wdost di pw yw?** heb hi. **gwnn**, heb ynteu. **Edyrn uab Nud yw**, **med ef** "*dost thou know who he is?*" *says she*. "*Yes,*" *said he*. "*He is Edyrn son of Nudd, he says,*" RB. 259; **y gouynnei** beth yssyd yman. Broch, **medynt** wynteu *he asked what was there*. "*A badger,*" *said they* RB. 15.

**151. heb says.**

This word, of adverbial origin and uninflected, is used like **Ir.** **ol** to give the very words of the speaker, **heb ef** *says he*, **heb wynt** *they say*, etc.

Before a proper name **heb** is followed by **y**, **yr**, e.g. **heb y Goewin**, **heb y Gwenhwyfar**, **heb yr Arthur**. The same is not infrequently found before a pronoun, e.g. **heb y mi** RB. 32, 7, **heb yr ynteu** RB. 245, 181 = **heb ynteu** WB. 386, p. 217, **heb yr ef** WB. 386 = **heb ef** RB. 245, **heb yr wynt** WB. 185 = **eb wynt** WB. p. 93<sup>a</sup>; cf. Mod. W. **ebr**. No satisfactory explanation of this has yet been given.

THE SUBSTANTIVE VERB *bot to be*.

## Paradigm.

## INDICATIVE.

## 152. PRESENT.

	sing.	plur.
1.	wyf	ym
2.	wyt	ywch
3.	iw, yw	ynt
	mae	maent
	oes	
	ys	
	neut	
	nyt <i>is not</i>	
	nat <i>is not</i> (dependent)	
	os <i>if it is</i>	
	yssit <i>there is</i>	yssydynt
	ossit <i>if there is</i>	
	yssyd, syd, yssy, sy, rel. <i>who, which is, are</i>	
	Impersonal ys, ydys	

## PAST.

1.	oedwn	oedem
2.	oedut, oedyt	oedewch
3.	oed, oedat, oedyat	oedynt
	Impersonal oedet	

NOTE 1.—There are also forms preceded by *ytt*, *yd*: *yttwyf*, *yttiwi*, *ydiw*, *yttloedwn*, etc.

## ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1.	bydaf	bydwn
2.	bydy	bydwch
3.	byd	bydant

NOTE 2.—Specially future forms: sg. 3 *bythawt*, *bydhawt*, *bydawt*, *biawt*, *bi*; pl. 3 *bydawnt*.

NOTE 3.—In poetry there seems to be a consuetudinal sg. 3 *bit*, cf. FB. 245, 247, where the imperative sense does not suit.

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

	sing.	plur.
1.	bydwn	bydem
2.	bydut	bydewch
3.	bydei	bydynt
impers.	bydit	

NOTE 4.—Poetical forms: sg. 3 buei, bwyat, pl. 3 buyint (i.e. bwyynt).

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	buum, bum	buam
2.	buost	buawch
3.	bu	buant, buont
impers.	buwyt	

## PLUPERFECT.

1.	buasswn	
2.	buassut	
3.	buassei	buassynt, buessynt, buyssynt

## IMPERATIVE.

1.		bydwn
2.	byd	bydwch
3.	bit, boet, poet	bint

NOTE 5.—bynt is clearly imperative BCh. 17, cf. bint LA. 81. RB. 105 has bint where WB. 457 has the future bythawd.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	bwyf, bof	bom, bwym
2.	bych	boch
3.	bo	bwynt, boent, bont

NOTE 6.—There are, particularly in poetry, analogical subjunctive forms from the indicative stem: sg. 1 bydwyf, sg. 2 bydych, sg. 3 bytho, pl. 3 bydont.

## PAST.

1.	bewn	beym
2.	beut	
3.	bei	beynt

NOTE 7.—Both in poetry and in prose the past indicative is often used for the subjunctive, e.g. kyny bydwn WB. 172=kyn ny bewn RB. 238. The impersonal pan uythit WB. 104=pan vydit RB. 76 is a subjunctive form based on the indicative.

REMARKS ON *bot*.

## Present and Imperfect.

**153.** The precise syntactical functions of the various forms of these tenses still require a detailed investigation, particularly their uses in early poetry. From the material to hand the following points of prose usage may be noted, (A) where the forms have the function of a substantive verb predicating existence, (B) where the forms are merely copular.

**154. A.** Substantive verb.

(a) In the 3 sg. pres. *he is*, etc., is expressed by **mae**, pl. **maent**, unless the verb is preceded by the negative or by other preverbal particles and conjunctions which are not followed by the particle **yd** (§ 93 g sq.), e.g. *yma y mae brenhin Iwerdon here is the king of Ireland*; *o ellwng Riannon or poen y mae yndaw from releasing Riannon from the punishment in\which she is*; *nat gan y vod y mae yn dyuot that it is not with his will that he is coming*; *y mae y enw yn barawt his name is ready*; *y maent yn symudaw enweu they are changing names*. **Mae** is also used in the sense of *where are*? e.g. **mae** *Ynwl iarll . . . ae wreic ae uerch. maent (= y maent RB. 256) yn y loft racco where are Ynwl and his wife and his daughter? They are in the chamber yonder WB. 400.* In the sense of *there is, there are* **yssit, yssydynt** are found, e.g. **yssit** *nas keffych there is something that you will not get RB. 121 sq.; chwedleu porth y gennynt. ysydynt gennyf hast thou tidings of the gate? I have RB. 126.* If the verb is preceded by a negative, etc., then (a) if the subject is definite **yttiu, ydyw**, pl. **yttynt, ydynt** are used, (β) if the subject is indefinite **oes** is used, e.g.—

(a) **nyt yttiu y clawr y lle kyntaf y kefeist the board is not where thou didst get it first RB. 241**; **nat ydiw y uorwyn honno yn y byt that that maiden is not in the world RB. 113**; **nyt yttynt namyn pedwar they are only four CM. 46**; **neut ydynt yn gynyon boneu vy esgyll the stumps of my wings are like wedges RB. 130**; **a yttiu Kei yn llys Arthur. yttiw is Kei in Arthur's court? He is WB.**

(β) **nyt oes** yndi neb nyth adnapo *there is no one in it who will not recognize thee* RB. 3; **a oes** borthawr. **oes** is there a porter? *There is* RB. 103. With **o** if, the definite form is **ot ydiw**, e.g. **ot ydiw** yg karchar *if he is in prison* RB. 179, the indefinite **ossit**, e.g. **osit** rann y mi oth uab di *if I have any part in thy son* RB. 109; **osid** ay hammehuo *if there is any one who doubts it* BCh. 53. The relative form is **yssyd**, e.g. y gwr hir **yssyd** yno *the tall man who is there*; pa ryw chwedleu **yssyd** gennynt. **nyt oes** namyn da *what kind of news hast thou?* *Only good news.*

NOTE 1.—In poetry **yssit** is found also with a definite subject, e.g. **yssit** imi teir kadeir *I have three seats* FB. 154; **yssit** ym argluyd *I have a lord* MA. 176<sup>a</sup>. It seems to be a disappearing form, cf. y mae yni beth a wnelom *we have something to do* Hg. l. 10, y mae ym . . a wnelwyf 69. **Ossit** also seems to be a disappearing form; for **ossit** a uynho *if there is anyone who desires* WB. 122, RB. 197 has: or byd neb kyehofnet.

(b) In the first and second persons the subject is always definite, and here after negatives etc., **yttwyf**, **ydwyf** are usual both in the present and in the imperfect, e.g. **nyt yttwyf** (= **nyt ydwyf** i WB. 437) yn ansawd *I am not in a condition* WB. p. 219; **nyt yttoedwn** i yn holi dim ytti *I was not claiming anything from thee* RB. 5. In the third persons of the imperfect there is in the Mabinogion a very general distinction after negatives etc., between (a) **yttoed**, **ydoed** when the subject is definite, (b) **oed** when the subject is indefinite, e.g. (a) ydrŷch yn y chylch a oruc **a yttoed** ef yn deffroi *she looked about her to see if he was stirring* WB. 424; **pann yttoed** (= **pan ydoed** WB. 99) y dyd yn dyuot *when the day was coming* RB. 72; **tra yttoed** ef yn hynny *while he was in that* RB. 133; **ynŷ yttoŷd** y chwŷs ar gwaet yn dwyn lleuer y llŷgeit udunt *until the sweat and the blood were taking the light of their eyes from them* WB. 398; (b) **nyt oed** dim yno *there was nothing there* RB.; Gereint a ofynnawd y wr y ty **a oed** getymdeithon idaw . . . oes, heb ynteu *Gereint asked the master of the house if he had friends. "I have," said he.*

NOTE 2.—But there are a good many instances of (b for (a): **nat oes** (= **nat ydiw** RB. 113) hi yn y byt *that she is not in the world* WB. 470; **kwt ynt plant y gwr** *where are the children of the man?* WB. 453; **pan oed** y dyd yn goleuhau *when the day was becoming light* RB. 72; **yny oed** yn y eidaw ef Arduwy *till Arduwy was in his possession* RB. 77; **yny oed** y

*gwaet yn lliaw y llenn till the blood was colouring the mantle* WB. 391 = RB. 249; *yny oed (=hyny yttoed* WB. p. 218) *eu llygeit yn colli eu llenner till their eyes were losing their light* WB. 435 = RB. 283.

NOTE 3.—In a number of cases the *ytt*-, *yd*- forms are found not preceded by a negative, etc.: *berth yd ytwyt (=yd wyt* RB. 115) *finely thou art* WB. 473; *yth ewyllys yd ydym we are at thy will* RB. 66; *hyt yd ydiw dayar as long as the earth is* WB. 459 = RB. 105; *ar hynny yd yttoed yn deffroi thereupon he was stirring* WB. p. 212; *yma yd yttoedwn (=yd oedwn* WB. 441, RB. 287) *yn kerdet there I was journeying* WB. p. 221; *ual yd yttoed yn kerdet* WB. 170 = RB. 236; *ynlodeu dy dewred yd yttwyt (=yt wyt* WB. 413 = *yd wyt* RB. 266) *thou art in the flower of thy might* WB. p. 207; *for: o hynny yd yttoed* RB. 218, WB. 149 *has ae hyny yttoed*, and *for ae yd yttoed yn troi* RB. 215 WB. 145 *has y doeth yd ydoed yn troi*. So in the present impersonal forms occur: *vyg karcharu yd ydys (yd ydys* om. WB. 235) *I am imprisoned* RB. 187; *yn y gyveistydaw yd ydys (=yd yttys* WB. 167) *it is being besieged* RB. 233, *by yd ys yn kadw or enw hwnnw that name is preserved* RB. 60; *yd ys yn lluydaw yn an hol there is a hosting after us* RB. 63, 1.

NOTE 4.—In Hg. I. *ytti*w, etc., are not unfrequently copula forms, e.g. *gwell yttiwy vy marw it is better that I should die* 145, *pa un ytwyt who art thou* 95; cf. *hyny yttoedynt (=yny oedynt* WB. 446, RB. 291) *kystal ae y buont oreu eiroet till they were as good as they had ever been* WB. p. 223.

### 155. B. Copula.

(a) In the third person of the present there is a variety of forms:—

(α) *ys*, used (like Ir. *is*) at the beginning of a clause before its predicate, e.g. *is gwell it is better*; *is gohelyon hwnn he is a remnant*; *ys mi ae heirch it is I who ask her*. It is often preceded by the conjunction *can*, e.g. *kanys gwell yw genyt ti since thou preferrest*; *kanys arnam ni y berneist since it is on us that thou hast passed judgment*.

NOTE 1.—In poetry *ys* is used with an infixed personal pronoun, e.g. *yssim ediuar I repent* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>, cf. O.Ir. *issum eēen it is necessary for me*.

(β) *yw*, used when the predicate precedes, e.g. *negessawl yw wrthyt he has business with thee*; *pwyt yw hi who is she?* *miui yw Llwyd I am Llwyd*; *y deu lygat yw y dwy lynn the two lakes are his two eyes*; *nyt gwr yw hwnnw that is not a man*; *kanys mawr yw since it is great*. It is also used after the conjunction *pan*, e.g. *y dyuedassant wynteu pan yw merchet ieirll oedynt they said that they were daughters of earls* (cf. § 226, 5).

(γ) *ynt* is the plural form, e.g. *bychein ynt wynteu they are small*; *nyt ynt iach they are not whole*.

(δ) **nyt** is a negative form, e.g. **nyt oet** ymi gwreicka *it is not time for me to wed*; **nyt egŷlyon** ŷ rei racko *those yonder are not angels*; **nyt wyntwy** bioed yr antur *it is not to them that the adventure belonged.*

(ε) **nat** is the dependent negative, e.g. **menegwch . . . nat hawd** gennyf ynheu nae lad ef nae diuetha *declare that it is not easy for me to slay him or to destroy him.*

(ζ) **os** is the form with **o** if, e.g. **os da** gennyt ti *if it seems good to thee*; **os wynteu** ae med hi *if it is they that have it in their power.*

(η) **ae** is the interrogative = *is it?* e.g. **ae gwell** *is it better?* **ae kyscu** yd wyt ti *art thou asleep?*

(θ) **ponyt** is the interrogative = *is it not?* e.g. **ponyt** dros y neb yssyd yna *is it not for one who is there?*

(ι) **neut** is the copula form with the particle **neu** (§ 220), e.g. **neut araf** *he is gentle.*

(κ) The relative form is positively **yssyd**, negatively **nyt**, e.g. **kanys mi yssyd athro** itt *for it is I who am thy teacher*; **gwaew nyt gwaeth** *a spear that is not worse.*

(λ) **mae** seems to be used where according to § 159 the predicate follows, e.g. **am hŷnnŷ ŷ may reit ŷ** titheu uot *therefore it is necessary for thee to be* WB. 396, **o achaws hynny y mae dygassawc** yr adar yr tylluan *because of that the birds are enemies to the owl* RB. 80; **ŷn ŷ mae goreu** y gwyr *where the men are best* WB. 119. **Mae** is used also in indirect speech, e.g. **menegi ŷ Arthur mae** mi ath vŷrŷawd *to declare to Arthur that it is I who have thrown thee* WB.; **ereyll a deueyt e may** hyn eu y naud *others say that this is his protection* BCh. 9.

(μ) Otherwise the forms **wyf**, etc., are used for the copula, e.g. **pwŷ wyt** *who art thou*, **yd ym drist ni** *we are sad*, **nyt oed ef nes idi** *he was no nearer to her.*

### bydaf and bydwn.

156. **bydaf** is used :—

(a) As an iterative or consuetudinal present, e.g. **mi a uydaf** borthawr y Arthur bop duw kalan Ionawr *I am Arthur's gate-*

*keeper every New Year's Day* RB. 103, 7; *lle ny bo dysc ny byd dawn where there is no learning there is no gift* FB. 244.

(b) As an historical present, e.g. *ual y bydant yn eisted wynt a welynt gwreic as they were sitting they saw a woman* RB. 8; *a chyuaros Gereint a oruc yny uyd yn agos idi and she waited for Gereint till he was near her* RB. 271, 1.

(c) As a future, the most common use, e.g. *y gyt a mi y bydy yn dyscu marchogaeth thou shalt be with me learning horsemanship; mi a vydaf athro it I shall be thy teacher.*

157. **bydwn** is used:—

(a) As an iterative or consuetudinal past, e.g. *a pheii vwyhaf uei y vrys ef pellaf vydei hitheu y wrthaw ef the greater his haste the further she was from him* RB. 9, 5.

(b) Describing a single action in past tense: *ual y bydynt yn eisted wynt a welynt y wreic as they were sitting they saw the woman* RB. 9, 29.

(c) As a secondary future or conditional, e.g. *wynt a welsant or kaffei vedic da y bydei vyw they saw that if he got a good leech he would live* RB. 212, 12.

### Past Subjunctive.

158. The following forms are to be noted: **pei yt uewn i** (= **bei etuóni** WB. 71) *yn dechreu vy ieuenctit if I had been in the beginning of my youth* RB. 51, 24; **beyt uei** *ar y ffuryf iawn if she had been in her proper form* RB. 175, 18; *ar mul æ kanlynawd megys pei at uei milgi and the mule followed him as if it had been a hound* Hg. I., 336; *hi a vynnei pet vei hi a Lawnsloet yn y fforest she would that she and Launcelot were in the forest* Hg. I., 368; *a phettut un wreic di or byt, ny mynnwn i ddim ohonat ti and if thou wert the only woman in the world, I would desire nothing of thee* Hg. II., 315. Like the modern **pettwn** these forms seem to express unreality.



## POSITION OF THE COPULA.

**159.** In Middle Welsh prose in positive affirmative sentences (with the exception of **ys** which always precedes the predicate) the normal position of the predicate is before the copula, e.g. **Lunet wyf i** *I am Lunet*, **cennadeu ym ni** *we are messengers*, **llawen vu** *he was glad*, **reit vyd** *it will be necessary*, **trwy gynghor Branwen uu** *hynny oll all that was through the advice of Branwen*. But the predicate follows the copula in the imperative, in negative and interrogative sentences, in subordinate clauses, and very generally when an adverb or an adverbial phrase precedes, e.g. **a vo penn bit bont** *let him who is head be bridge*, **nyt da dy gyghor thy advice is not good**, **a wyt uorwyn art thou a maiden?** **o byd reit** *if it is necessary*, **tra vu da** *as long as it was good*, **ual y bydynt gadarnach** *so that they would be stronger*, **paham ydwyf trist i** *why am I sad?* **yna y bu marw** *there he died*, **undyd ym penn y vlwydyn y bu barawt** *on the same day at the end of the year it was ready*. But after adverbs and adverbial phrases there are instances where the predicate precedes, e.g. **yna ryued uu gan Arthur hynny** *then Arthur wondered at that* Hg. I., 339; **am hynny reit vyd** *therefore it will be necessary* Hg. I., 311 (by **am hynny y byd reit** 307); **ar eil vlwydyn mab mawr oed** *and the second year he was a big boy* RB. 69. 4.

NOTE 1.—This order seems to have developed from sentences in which a copula form **ys**, etc., preceded, such as, e.g. **cany s gwr uuassei** lit. *since it is a man that he had been*, **os byw vyd** lit. *if it is alive that he shall be*. Thus the development would be parallel to that of sentences like **Peredur a oruc Peredur did** (§ 85).

NOTE 2.—In the early poetry the copula freely precedes the predicate, as in Irish. And in the more archaic prose there are instances of the same order, e.g. **oed dyhed** (= **ys oed gryssyn** RB. 116) **kelu y ryw** *was hwnn it were a grievous thing to hide such a lad as that* WB. 475; **oed melynach**, **oed gwynnach** WB. 476 = **melynach oed**, **gwynnach oed** RB. 117; **oed reit** WB. 487 = **asoed reit** RB. 126, 27; **oed glyssyn** WB. 151 = **ys oed gryssyn** RB. 220; **oed dyhed mawr**, **oed iawn** RB. 173; **oed well** RB. 176. As to **as oed**, **ys oed** the **as**, **ys** is in origin the infixing particle **a** (§ 94) with an infixed pronoun which has become meaningless, cf. **as bwyf may I be!** MA. 142<sup>b</sup>; this usage has developed from cases like **ys caffo drugared may he find mercy!** MA. 224<sup>b</sup>, where formally **s** may be an anticipation of the object.

## COMPOUNDS OF bot.

160. ar-gan-vot *perceive*, can-vot *perceive*, cyv-ar-vot *encounter*, dar-vot *to be ended*, gor-vot *overcome*, han-vot *to be sprung*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

	sing.	plur.
1.	canhwyf; handwyf; hanwyf, henwyf	handym, hanym, henym
2.	handwyt, hanwyt, henwyt	
3.	cenyw; deryw, derw; henyw	derynt; henynt

NOTE 1.—sg. 3 handit RB. 71, 178, and frequently in poetry; cf. *Cymnrod.* IX. 116, CZ. III. 389. hanvit Hg. I. 200.

## IMPERFECT.

	sing.	plur.
2.	handoedut	
3.	canoed; daroed; handoed, hanoed	hannoedynt

## FUTURE.

1.	gorvydaf	gorvydwn
2.	gorvydy; henbydy	cyvarvydwch
3.	cyvervyd; dervyd; hanbyd, henbyd	
pass.	gorvydit	

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

3.	cyvarvydei; gorvydei; hanbydei	gorvydynt
pass.	gorvydit	

NOTE 2.—sg. 3 handei RB. 85.

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1. arganvum; cyvarvum; darvuam; gorvuam  
gorvum
2. cyvarvuost; gorvuost gorvuawch, gorvuoch
3. arganvu; darvu; gorvu, arganvuant; gorvuant
- pass. arganvuwyd; cyvarvu-  
wyd; gorvuwyd

## PLUPERFECT.

3. cyvarvuassei; darvuassei;  
gorvuassei
- pass. gorvuessyt

## IMPERATIVE.

3. hanvit

NOTE 3.—sg. 3 derffit RB. 155.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1. cyvarffom; gorffom
2. henpych
3. arganffo; cyvarffo; cyvarvoent  
darffo; gorpo,  
gorffo; hanffo
- pass. gorffer

## PAST.

3. cyvarffei; darffei; cyverffynt  
hanffei

## Pieu.

161. The primary use of **pieu** is in interrogation, direct or indirect, in the sense of *whose is?* e.g. **pieu** y gaer, heb wynt. nyt oes yn y byt ny wypo **pieu** y gaer honn "*whose is the city?*" said they. "*There is no one in the world who does not know to whom this city belongs*" RB. 126; Peredur a ovynnawd **pioedynt** gwyr wy *Peredur asked whose men they were* Hg. I. 314. But it is

frequently used with lenation *bieu*, etc., but not preceded by relative *a*, in a non-interrogative sense *to whom belongs*, e.g. *Effrawc iarll bioed iarllaeth y gogled to Effrawc the earl belonged the earldom of the north* RB. 193, 1; *Duw bioedynt they belonged to God* Hg I. 426. The inflexion follows that of *bot*, e.g.

## INDICATIVE.

Pres.:—Sg. 2. *piwynt*; 3. *pieu*; pl. 3. *piewynt*.

Imperf.:—Sg. 3. *pieuoed*, *pioed*, *piewed*, *pieuat*; pl. 3. *pioedynt*.

Fut.:—Sg. 3. *pieivyd*; pl. 1. *pieivydwn*.

Condit.:—Sg. 3. *pieivydei*.

Pret.:—Sg. 3. *pieivu*, *pieuu*.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres.:—Sg. 3. *pieuvo*.

Past.:—Sg. 3. *pieiffei*, *pieuvei*.

NOTE.—cf. Bezz Beitr. XVII. 292 sq. In: *ni ae pieifydwn we shall possess them* CM. *pieu* has developed into a transitive verb *to possess*, as it did in Cornish, cf. Cymmrod. IX. 100.

## THE PREPOSITION.

162. *ac*, *a* *with*; with the article *ar*; with possessive pronouns *am*, *ath*, *ae* etc., e.g. *minneu a chwaryaf a thitheu I shall play with thee*; *wrth ryuelu a Gwrtheyrn to fight with Vortigern*; *yny oedynt gynefin ac ef till they were familiar with him*; *taraw a oruc Owein a chledyf he struck Owein with a sword*; *llanw crochan a dwfyr to fill a vessel with water*; *taw ath ucheneidaw have done with thy sighing*; *peidaw a bwyta a oruc he stopped eating*; in *amvin* *ev terwin a guir Dulin defending their land from the men of Dublin*. It is often used after verbs compounded with *ym*, e.g. *ymadaw a oruc Arthur ar llyn Arthur left the lake*; *ymgolli ae gedymdeithon to lose his comrades*; *a doyy ymwelet ac Arthur wilt thou come to see Arthur?*

163. *ach*. In the phrase *ach y law beside him*.

**164. am** (Ir. *imm*) *about, on account of*, e.g. corn canu **am y vynwgl** *a horn about his neck*; gwisce **ymdanat** *dress thyself*; **am y uagwyr ar karcharawr** *on the other side of the wall from the prisoner*; iawn y medreis i **am benn** y carw *rightly did I determine about the head of the stag*; hyt na dywedit **am vn vorwyn** vwy noc **amdanei** *so that there was not more talk about any maiden than about her*; **am hanner bwytta** amofyn a oruc y gwr *about the middle of the meal the man asked*; haelaf oed **am rodyon** *he was most liberal with respect to gifts*; y oual **am y wreic** *his anxiety about his wife*; or sarhaet a wnathoed **am adaw** y llys *for the outrage which he had committed in leaving the court*; dothyw **am Oweyn Owein** *has perished* MA. 252<sup>a</sup>; a derŷv **am Keduyv** *has K. perished?* BB. 1<sup>a</sup>; trist oed **am angeu** y uab *he was grieved because of the death of his son*. In the phrase **am benn**, e.g. yn y del y iarll . . . **am penn** y lle hwnn *until the earl comes to attack this place*; pan yttoedynt pawb yn mynu mynet **am penn** y Saeson *when they were all eager to attack the Saxons*.

**ymdan**, e.g. **ymdan y varch** *about his horse*.

**y am** (O.W. *diam*) *from off*, e.g. y dynnu y wisc hela **y amdanaw** *to pull off his hunting dress*; dogyn o arueu **y am hynny** *plenty of arms besides* WB. p. 225; o lu uii nyn **e am e mam ay tat** ae y brodir a chuairt *by the oath of seven people including her mother and her father and her brothers and her sisters* BCh. 36.

**165. ar** *on*, etc., **ar uarch** *on a horse*; Lawnsloŷ a eistedawd y vwyta **ar y bwrđ** *Launcelot sat down at the table to eat*; edrych a wnaeth Manawydan **ar y dref** *Manawyddan looked upon his town*; **y dodet ar yr avon** *Hafrē the river was called the Severn*; ae geuyn **ar yr heul** *and his back towards the sun*; cymryt cleuyt **arnaw** a oruc *he pretended to be ill*; rac meint karyat y brenhin **arnei** *because of the greatness of the king's love for her*; rac caffael y gaer **arnaw** *lest the city should be taken on him*; **y wassanaethu arnaw** *to wait upon him*; **taerwn arnei** ehun diuetha y mab *let us insist that she herself killed her son*; nyt **gwerth arnaw** ef dim *it is not worth anything*; hitheu . . . a gytsynnywys **ar anvōn** y mab y Pwyll *she agreed to send the boy to Pwyll*; dyuot a oruc ef **ar**

(=att RB. 287) **Enyd** *he came to Enid* WB. p. 221; a roti y uanec **ar** (=att RB. 116) **y kymhar** *and he gave the glove to his wife* WB. 473.

In phrases, e.g. **ar y drydyd** *with two others*; **ar y ganuet** *with a hundred men*; sef y key yn nef **ar y ganuet** *thou shalt receive in heaven a hundredfold*; **ar vrys** *in haste*; am eu carcharu **ar gam** *because they were wrongfully imprisoned*; **ar gel** *secretly*; **ar gyhoed** *publicly*; y marchawc y gwnaethpwynt **ar y odeu** *the knight for whom it has been made*; y marchogyon goreu a oed **ar y helw** *the best horsemen that were in his possession*; **ar hynny** *after that*; **ar hyt** y glynn *along the valley*; **ar hyt** y dyd *throughout the day*; **ar eu hol** *after them*; **ar uedwl** mynet *with the intention of going*; **ar uessur** llad y benn *with the purpose of cutting off his head*; **ar tal** y pebyll *before the tent*; **ar tal** y lin *on his knee*; **ar** draws yr avon *across the river*; y tharaw **ar** draws y hwyneb *he struck her across her face*.

NOTE 1.—For the phrase **ar y ganvet** see Rev. Celt. 28, p. 206.

**y ar** (O.W. **diar**), **odyar** *from*, e.g. y dygwydawl yn varw **y ar y uarch** *he fell dead from his horse*; byrywch awch blinder **y arnawch** *cast your weariness from you*.

NOTE 2.—But **y ar** is used also in the sense of **on**, e.g. y gwelynt wreic **y ar uarch** *they saw a woman on a horse* RB. 248.

NOTE 3.—In O.W. **guar** (=Ir. **for**), e.g. **guar ir dreb** gl. *edito*, **guar ir henn rit** *above the old ford* Lib. Land. 73. In Lib. Land. is also found **ar**, cf. Ir. **ar**. In Mid. W. the two prepositions are confused.

166. **att to**, e.g. dyuot a oruc **att y uorwyn** *he came to the maiden*; y chwedyl a doeth **att Uatholwch** *the tidings came to Matholwch*; dyret y gyt a mi **hyt att Arthur** *come with me to Arthur*.

167. **can, gan** (corresponding in sense to Ir. **la**) *with, by*, e.g. mynet a oruc Mabon **ganthaw** *Mabon went with him*; ef a edewis **genthi** dwy iarllaeth *he left with her two earldoms*; a **chan gennyat** y ewythr cychwyn ymeith *and with his uncle's leave he set out*; nawd a geffy . . **gan uynet** dracheuyn y fford y deuthost *thou shalt have mercy on condition that thou returnest by the way by*

*which thou hast come*; hyny yttoed eu llygeit yn colli eu lleuer **gan y chwys ar gwaet** *till their eyes were losing their light with the sweat and the blood*; atdeb nys kauas ef **genthi hi** *he got no answer from her*; ny phrynit dim **ganthunt** *nothing was bought from them*; ny chollet oen eiryoet **ganhaw** *not a lamb had ever been lost by him*; **gan lan** y weilgi *by the shore of the sea*; os da **gan y uorwyn** da yw **gennyf ynneu** *if it pleases the maiden, it pleases me*; drwc vyd **gantunt** *it will be displeasing to them*.

**y gan** *from*, e.g. cymer gedernit **y ganhaw** *take security from him*; annerch **y genhyf i** ef *greet him from me*.

168. **cer, ger** *near by*, e.g. **ker tir** Tyssilyaw *by the land o Tyssilyaw* MA. 237<sup>b</sup>; **ger glan** yr avon *by the bank of the river*; ae kymerth **ger y avwyneu** *he took him by his reins* CM. 56; yn ymauael ar ebawl **geir y vwng** *seizing the foal by its mane*. In some phrases:—**ger bronn**, e.g. ae vwrw **ger bronn** Owein *and threw it before Owein*; ar abat . . . a doeth ac ef hyt **geyr bronn** yr allawr *and the abbot took him before the altar*; **ger llaw**, e.g. ae doddi **ger llaw** y gerwyn *and placed it beside the cauldron*.

169. **cyvrwng** *between*, e.g. **kýfrwg deu ýskýuarn** Twrch Trwyth *between the ears of Twrch Trwyth*; **cyfrwng mor a glan** *between sea and shore*.

170. **cyn** *before*, e.g. **kynn y nos** *before night*; **cyn myned** mab Cynan y dan dywawd *before Cynan's son went under the sod* MA. 140<sup>a</sup>.

171. **cyt** *union* serves as a preposition in the phrases **cyt ac, y gyt ac** *together with*, e.g. mynet a orugant **gyt ar mackwy** *they went along with the youth*; yn gorymdeith **y gyt ar amherawdyr** *walking together with the Emperor*.

172. **eithyr** (= Ir. *echtar*) *outside of, except, beyond*, e.g. neb rýw dim ný welýnt **eithyr guydlwdyn** *they saw nothing except wild beasts*; a phan welas Chyarlys hynny ryuedu a oruc **eithyr mod** *and when Charlemagne saw that he was astonished beyond measure*.

**dieithyr**, e.g. ef a edewis y holl longeu . . . **dyeithyr un llong** *he left all his ships except one ship*.

**odieithyr**, e.g. gwede mýnet Arthur **odieithyr y llýs** *after Arthur*

*went out of the palace* ; ef . . . ae cassaawd **odieithyr** messur *he hated him beyond measure.*

**173. erbyn** (prep. **er** + dat. of **penn** *head* = Ir. *ar chiunn* cf. § 25) *against, before, by*, e.g. *mi ae paraf . . . yn gyniachet erbyn penn y mis ac y gallo marchogaeth I will make him so well by the end of the month that he will be able to ride* ; *ar abat yna erbyn y law ae kymmerth and the abbot then took him by his hand.*

**174. gwedy, wedy** (O.W. *guetig*) *after*, e.g. **gwedy y gawat** *goleuhau a oruc yr awyr after the shower the sky cleared* ; *uot y crydyon wedy duunaw ar y lad that the cobblers had conspired to slay him* ; **hyd guedy** *gospur till after evening.*

**175. heb** (= Ir. *sech*) *past, without, besides*, e.g. *nyd kynt yd yskynn ef ar y uarch noc yd a hitheu hebdaw ef no sooner did he mount his horse than she passed him* ; **heb dant** *yn y phenn without a tooth in her head* ; *abreid vu eu hattal heb torri eu hamot they could hardly be kept from breaking their covenant* ; *y kahat o ynys Prydein ehun trugein mil o varchogyon aruawc heb deg mil a adawssei urenhin Llydaw there was got from the island of Britain itself sixty thousand armed horsemen besides ten thousand that the King of Brittany had promised.* In the phrase **heb law**, e.g. *pan yttoed honno yn kerdet heb law Breint when she was going past Breint* RB. II., 246.

**176. herwyd** *according to, by*, e.g. **herwyd anyan** *according to nature* ; **herwyd vyg gallu i** *according to my power* ; *a chymryt y mab herwyd y draet and he seized the boy by his feet.*

**177. hyt** (a prepositional use of **hyt** *length*) *as far as, up to*, e.g. *o vor Ut hyd vor Iwerton from the English Channel to the Irish Sea* MA. 202\* ; **hyt dyd brawt** *until Doomsday* ; **educher** (= **hyt ucher**) *until evening.*

NOTE.—In O.W. there are also prepositional phrases **behet**, e.g. *behet hirmaim as far as the long stone* Lib. Land., *bet rit ir main as far as the ford of the stone* ib., and **cihit**, e.g. *cihit i nant to the valley*, *cihitan*, e.g. *cihitan clouric* Lib. Land., and **cihitun**, e.g. *cihitun ceng ir esceir* Ox. gl.

**178. is** (= Ir. *is*) *below*, e.g. **is nef** *below heaven.* In the phrase **islaw** *below*, e.g. *kawc a oed islaw y drws a bowl that was below*



*the door*; y dodit **islaw** y teulu *he was placed beneath the household*; **odis**, e.g. neur disgynnassei Arthur . . . **odis Kaer Vadon Arthur** *had descended beneath Caer Vaddon* RB. 151, 22; **adhis Guaissav** Lib. Land. 241.

**179. ithr** (only O.W. = Ir. *etir*) *between*, e.g. **ithr ir dwy ail** *between the two eyelashes* Mart. Cap.

**180. mynn** (a nominal preposition = Ir. *mind* a *holy relic*, an *oath*) *by* (in oaths), e.g. **myn dy law di** . . . mi a af y gyt a thi *by thy hand I will go with thee*; **myn vvg cret** nyth gredaf *by my faith I do not believe thee*.

**181. mywn** (nominal preposition) *in*, e.g. wynteu a dywedassant bot adanc **mywn gogof** *they said that there was a monster in a cave*; ryuedu . . . a orugant bot **mywn un dyn** . . . hanner hynny o nerth *they marvelled that half as much strength should be in one man*; neuad a welsant **y mywn** (= **o vewn** WB. p. 93a) **y gaer** *they saw a palace within the city* RB. 87, 17.

**182. nes** (cf. **nes** *nearer*) *until, unless*, e.g. ny cheffir Mabon vyth . . . **nes caffel** Eidoel *Mabon will never be got till Eidoel is got*; **nes dyuot** Guilenhin urenhin Ffreinc nŷ helir Twrch Trwyth vŷth hebdaŷ *unless Gwilenhin King of France comes, Twrch Trwyth will never be hunted without him* RB. 124, 28.

**183. o, a** *of, from, by*; with the article **or**; with possessive pronouns **om, oth, oe** etc.; before pronouns beginning with a vowel there is also a form **oc**; **oc awch** *of your*, **oc eu** *of their*, **oc a** *of what*, e.g., mil **o bunneu** aryant *a thousand pounds of silver*; y rann vwyhaf **or vlwydyn** *the greatest part of the year*; mawr **a beth** yw gwelet dwyawl dial ar y bobyl *a great thing it is to see divine vengeance on the people*; pebyll **o bali** *a tent of satin*; **yn llawn** **or dwfyr** *full of the water*; kany cheffynt **o ennyt** wiskaw eu harueu *for they got no time to put on their arms*; pei karei Duw wynt **o dim** *if God loved them at all*; aduet **o oet** ripe *in years*; wytt ditawl **o bob chwant** *thou art free from every desire*; o mynwn nineu **arueru o rydit** *if we wish to enjoy freedom*; na naccaa ui **ohonunt** *do not refuse them to me*; ef a gychynnwys **o Arberth** *he set forth from Arberth*; yn dyuot **or coet** allan

*coming out of the wood*; am lad **ohonat titheu** y gwr priawt *because her husband has been slain by thee*; na ellir kynnal dy gyuoeth di namyn **o wilwryaeth ac arueu** *that thy dominion can be maintained only by valour and arms*. In phrases, e.g. **o achaws** *because of*; **oe vod** *with his will*; **oe hanvod** *against his will*; **or diwed** *at last*; **o hynny allan** *from that time forth*; **o barth** y vam *on his mother's side*; **oc eu plith** *from among them*.

**184. parth** *part*, in **parth ac**, **parth ac att** *towards*, e.g. bryssyaw a orugant **parth ar mwc** *they hastened towards the smoke*, yn dyuot ar hyt y dyffryn **parth ac attaf** *coming along the valley towards me*.

**185. py** (= Ir. co) *to*; with possessive pronoun **pwyl, py**, e.g. or mor **pwyl gilyd** *from one sea to the other*; ar ffo o le **py gilyd** *in flight from place to place*; ac yna y kymertth Seint Alban Amphibalus yd oedit **awr py awr** yn y dwyn oe verthyru ac y kudywys yn y dy ehun = *quorum Albanus confessorem suum Amphibalus a persecutoribus insectatum et iam iamque comprehendendum primum in domo sua occuluit* RB. II. 107.

**186. rac** *before, against, on account of*, e.g. mal heu **rac moch** meryerid *like scattering pearls before swine*; kymer di y pedwar meirch a gyrr **rac dy vronn** *take the four horses and drive them before thee*; kerdet a orugant **racdunt** hyt att vwyalch Gilgwri *they went on till they came to the blackbird of Kilgwri*; am notwy **rac auar** *may he protect me against grief*; nys kelaf **ragot** *I will not hide it from thee*; ffo ditheu ymeith **rac dyuot** *ohonaw flee forth lest he should come*; yn keissaw diffryt y deu wr **rac eu bodi** *in seeking to save the two men from drowning*; llidiaw a oruc Arthur **rac hwyret** y gwelei y vudugolyaeth yn dyuot idaw *Arthur was angry because he saw the victory coming to him so slowly*; y kenir efferenneu **rac y eneit** *masses are sung for his soul*; yn aballu **rac newyn** *dying of hunger*.

**y rac** *from*, e.g. ninheu a dygwn **y racdunt** yr eidunt *we will take their property from them* RB. II. 207.

**187. rwng, y rwng** *between*, e.g. **rwg nef a dayar** *between heaven and earth*; **y rwng deuglust** Twrch Trwyth *between the*

*ears of Twrch Trwyth*; pany bei ammot **yrof am gwlat** amdanunt *if there were not a covenant between me and my land about them*; **rwng dicter a llit** taraw ym plith y llygot a wnaeth *between rage and anger he struck among the mice*; dywedut **y ryingthunt** ehunein y maent *they are saying among themselves*; **rwg deu** onadunt *between two of them* RB. II. 141; y kerdwys **y ryingtaw a Ruuein** *he set out to Rome* RB. 85, cf. ib. 12, 24.

**odyrwnng** *from between*, e.g. a ducpwyt yn teirnossic **odyrwnng y vam** ar paret *who when three nights old was taken from between his mother and the wall* RB. 129, 10.

188. **tan, dan, ydan, adan** (cf. O.W. **guotan**) *under*, e.g. flynnawn a welwn **dan y prenn** *I saw a fountain under the tree*; y clywei dygyuor . . . **y dan** (= **dan** WB. 92 = **adan** RB. 66) baret yr ystauell *he heard a commotion under a wall of the chamber* RB. 67, 15; gobennyd **dan penn y elin** *a cushion under his elbow*; **dan wynt a glaw** *under wind and rain*; y ellwnng y gwn **dan y coet** *to let loose his dogs in the wood* RB. 1, 10; awn **adanunt** (= **ydanunt** RB. 48) **a lladwn** *let us attack and slay them* WB. 67; yny uyd y llygot yn gwan **adan y groft** *until the mice were falling upon the field* RB. 53, 27, cf. RB. 28, 29; dyuot a wnaeth Corineus at Locrinus **dan dreiglaw** bwyell *Corineus came to Locrinus brandishing an axe*.

189. **trag, tra** *beyond, across*, e.g. ton **tra thon** toid tu tir *wave beyond wave covers the side of the land* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>; ac eigyl racdaw draw **dra thonneu** *and angels before him yonder across the waves* MA. 196<sup>a</sup>; maith dy dreisiau **drag Ewas** *great are thy deeds of violence across Ewas* MA. 145<sup>a</sup>; oes **trag oes** *age beyond age* FB. 230; **tra messur** *beyond measure* FB. 155; rybud **drae gilyd** = *quotidianos rumores* RB. II. 131.

NOTE.—Often in the phrase *drachefyn back*, by which there are also forms with possessive adjectives, e.g. **tra-m-kefyn** WB. 232 = *drachefen* RB. 169, 16, **tra-th-gefyn** WB. 124 = *drachefyn* RB. 198, 25, **dra-e-gefyn** CM. 73, **dra-e-chefyn** RB. 177, 12, **dra-e-kefyn** CM. 45, also forms like **drach eu kefyn** Hg. I. 301.

190. **trus, tros, dros** *across*, e.g. **trus ir minid** *across the*

*mountain* Lib. Land; ual yd oed . . . yn kerdet **dros** **vynydd** as *he was journeying across a mountain*; yny ehedawd y glot **dros** **wyneb y deyrnas** until his fame flew over his dominion; y ymlad **dros y wlat** to fight for his country; y rodes Hengyst atdeb idaw **dros y gedymdeithyon** Hengist answered him on behalf of his companions; pan allasant wy gyntaf talu drwc **dros da** as soon as they were able to return evil for good.

191. **trwy, drwy** (Ir. tre) *through*, e.g. **trwy y koet** *through the wood*; **trwy gynghor Branwen** *through the advice of Branwen*; ar tes oed vawr, ar arueu **trwy y chwys ar gwaet** yn glynu wrth y gnawt *and the heat was great, and the armour by reason of the sweat and blood was sticking to his flesh*; ar dyd hwnnw ar nos honno a treulassant **trwy gerdeu a didanwch** *and that day and that night they spent in songs and entertainment* WB. p. 204; Arthur **drwy amlaf rodyon** ae henrydedei Arthur honoured him with many gifts.

192. **tu** *side in* **tu ac, tu ac att** *towards*, e.g. pan daw **tu ar drws** *when he goes towards the door*; yn dyuot . . . **tu ac attat** *coming towards thee*.

193. **uch** (Ir. ūas) *above*, e.g. **uch nef** *above heaven*; yn eisted **uch penn** y weilgi *sitting above the sea*; **uch law** y bont . . . y gwelynt kastelltref *above the bridge they saw a fortified town*.

**diuch**: **diuch i lan** Lib. Land. 73.

**oduch**, e.g. **oduch y dwvyr** *above the water* WB. p. 90<sup>b</sup>; eithyd **oduch gwynt** *he went above the wind* FB. 179; pei delhei y byt **oduchti** *if the world should come above it* WB. 481.

194. **wrth** (O.W. gurth, Ir. fri) *against, towards*, etc., e.g. ny ellir dim **wrth a uynho Duw** *nothing can be done contrary to what God wills*; pan yuei o wual yuei **urth peduar** *when he drank from the horn, he would drink against four* BB. 48<sup>b</sup>; **wrth y drws** llyma vab bychan *at the door was a little boy*; yn eu pobi **wrth y tan** *being cooked at the fire*; yn dyuot **wrth y diaspat** *coming at the cry*; pob kyfryw anieueleit a ducpwynt yno **wrth eu haberthu** *every kind of animals was led there to be sacrificed*; reit oed ym **wrth gynghor** *I had need of counsel*; y

dynu a orugant **wrth raffeu** y mywn *they pulled him in with ropes*; **wrth ych kynghor** y bydaf *I will follow your advice*; llew **wrth aer** a llwfr **wrth eirchyeid** *a lion for battle and a weakling towards suppliants*; cyt bei lityawc ef **wrthi hi** *though he was angry with her*; **wrthyt ti** y mae vy neges *my business is with thee*; yn glynu **wrth y gnawt** *sticking to his flesh*; y dywawt y dat **wrthaw** *his father said to him*; sef a wnaeth gwyr Rufein drychafel Geta yn vrenhin . . . **wrth hanuot** y vam o Rafein *the men of Rome raised Geta to be king because his mother was sprung from Rome*; **wrth hynny** *therefore*; **y wrth** *from*, e.g. yr pan athoed **y wrthunt hwy** *since he had gone from them*; ny ry giglef i eirmoet dim **y wrth y uorwyn** *I have never heard anything of the maiden*.

195. **y** (O.W. *di*, Ir. *do*) *to*. With the article **yr**; with possessive adjectives **ym**, **yth**, **yw**, etc. (§ 58*b*), e.g. dyuot **yw** (= **y** RB. 284) *lety came to his lodging* WB. p. 219; gwyr Troea ae hymlytassant **y eu llogeu** *the men of Troy pursued them to their ships*; y deuynt drannoeth oc eu hamdiffyn *they would come on the following day to defend them*; deu uab oed **im** *I had two sons*; keuynderw **dý** (= **y** RB. 100, 13) *Arthur oed he was a cousin of Arthur* WB. 452; or tu draw **yr bont** *on the further side of the bridge*; heb wybot **yr kawr** *without the knowledge of the giant*; mi ae talaf **ywch** *I will pay it to you*; ni ae dywedwn **itti** *we will tell it to thee*; gouyn a oruc Gwrhryr **idi** *Gwrhryr asked her*; na hawl ef **ynni** *do not demand him of us*; pan daruu **udunt** darllein *when they had finished reading*.

NOTE.—In Irish *do*=*to* (cf. Bret. *da*), *di*=*from*. Already in Old Welsh *di* has the sense of Ir. *do*, e.g. *map di Iob*=Ir. *mac do Iob* *a son of Jupiter*, *anu di Iuno*=Ir. *ainm do Iuno* *a name of Juno*, *di erchim* *to ask*. The sense of *from* is kept before other prepositions, e.g. *di am* *later y am from off*, **y wrth** *from*, and in some phrases, e.g. *blwydyn y hediw* *a year from to-day*, *y dreis* *by violence*, **y werth** WB. p. 214=*ar werth* RB. 277, 21 *for a price*.

196. **yn** (Ir. *i n-*) *into, in*. With possessive pronouns **ym**, **yth**, e.g. *kyllell a edýw y mwyt* a *llynn y mual* *(the) knife has gone into (the) food and (the) drink into the horn*; dyuot a orugant **hyt yn lle** *yd oed karw Redynure they came to where the stag of*

*Redynwre was* ; nŷ chlyweist **yth wlat** dŷ hun eirjoet kerd kŷstal ac a ganant hwŷ *thou hast never heard in thy own country such song as they will sing* ; ny byd vy eneit **ym korff** *my life will not be in my body* ; pa rŷw weith ŷd wŷti **yndaw** *in what manner of work art thou engaged?* **ym penn** y seith mlyned *at the end of the seven years* ; gormod vyd agheu gwas kystal ac Edern **yn sarhaet** *morwyn the death of so excellent a youth as Edern will be too much for an insult to a maiden.* In many phrases :—dwy (ŷstondard) yssyd **yn y vlaen** a dwy **yn y ol** *two standards are before it and two after it* ; **yn ol** y twryf y daw kawat *after the noise will come a shower* ; **ym bron** *close by* ; **yg kylch** y tan round *about the fire* ; edrych a orugant **yn eu kylch** *they looked around them* ; **yg gwyd** Arthur *in the presence of Arthur* ; nat elych **ym herbyn** *that thou shalt not go against me* ; **yn herwyd** gweledigaeth *according to appearance* ; **y mywn** cadeir *in a chair* ; ef a chwawl or a gollassei **hyt yn oet** y tlws lleihaf a gafas *he got all that he had lost even to the smallest treasure* ; ef a welei bebyll **ym plith** y pebylleu ereill *he saw a tent among the other tents* ; y vrenhines a eistedawd **yn ymyl** Galaath *the queen sat beside Galahad.*

197. **yr**, *er for, on account of, since*, e.g. oes obeith gennyt ti ar gaffel dy ellwng ae **yr aur** ae **yr aryant** *hast thou any hope of obtaining thy liberation either for gold or for silver?* py glot a geffy ti **yr llad** gwr marw *what fame wilt thou get for slaying a dead man?* nyt **yr drwc** itti y deuthum *I have not come to thee for evil* ; pei tebygwŷn y wneuthur ohonat ti **yrof i** beth *if I thought that thou wouldst do something for me* ; **yr y byt** na wnewch hynny *for the world do not do that* ; **yr Duw** a wdost ti dim y wrth Uabon *for God's sake, dost thou know anything of Mabon?* **yr mwyn** y gwr mwyhaf a gery arho vi *for the sake of the man whom thou most lovest, wait for me* ; pa hustyng bynnac **yr y vychanet** a uo y rwng dynyon *whatever whisper, however low, there is between men* ; **yr a** uyrŷt yndi ny bydei lawnach no chynt *however much was thrown into it, it was not fuller than before* ; oed llesach yr march pei ass archut **yr meittyn** *it would have been better for the horse if thou hadst asked it a while ago* ; y gwr y buost **yr ys talyŷm** o amser yn

y geissaw *the man whom thou hast been seeking for a long time* (lit. *since it is a while of time*).

NOTE.—This preposition is frequent with *oet time*, together with a possessive adjective, e.g. ny ry giglef i eirmoet *I have never heard*; na welsei eiryoet *that he had never seen*. The form eiryoet becomes petrified into a phrase used of all persons, e.g. ny chiglef i eiryoet *I have never heard*; ny chlyweist eiryoet *thou hast never seen*.

## THE CONJUNCTION.

198. **a** *and*; **ac** before vowels and the negative particles **ny**, **na**, and sometimes before other consonants; with the article, **ar**; with possessive adjectives: **am**, **ath**, **ae** etc., e.g. vyg kewilyd **am** llit *my disgrace and my anger*; **a** phryderu a oruc yn uawr *and she was very anxious*. **a—a** *both and*, e.g. y gwassanaeth goreu a allwyf i mi ae gwnaf **ac** idaw **ac** y uarch *the best service that I can I will render both to him and to his horse*; **a** hediw **a** pheunydydd *both to-day and every day*. After the comparative of equality (§ 39), e.g. vn kyndecket **a** hi *one so fair as she*; similarly, a honno a aei trwy gallonneu y dynyon ae hofnockaei **yn gymeint ac** y collei y gwyr eu lliw ac eu nerth *and that went through the hearts of the people and terrified them so that the men lost their hue and their strength*. Introducing an accompanying or qualifying circumstance, e.g. gwelem . . . mynyd mawr geir llaw y coet **a** hwnnw **ar** gerdet *we saw a great mountain beside the wood, and it walking* RB. 35, 26; goueileint a delis yndaw o gambet idaw attal y mab gantaw **ac** ef **yn** gwybot **y** vot **yn** vab **y** wr arall *he was seized with great sadness because of the wrong that he did in keeping the boy with him though he knew that he was the son of another man* RB. 22, 20; nyt **a** mi **yn** uyw yd aho ef y Gernyw *he shall not while I live go to Cornwall* RB. 140, 16. Adversatively, e.g. mi a rodaf y carcharawr itti **ac** ny darparyswn y rodi y neb *I will give thee the prisoner, although I had not intended to give him to anyone* RB. 128, 26.

199. **achaws** (nominal conjunction) *because*, e.g. galw Gwrhryr Gwalltawt (leg. Gwalstawt) Ieithoed, **achaws** (om. WB. 471) yr holl ieithoed a wydyat *he summoned Gwrhryr, the interpreter of*

*tongues, because he knew all languages* RB. 114, 14; *o achaws na chaffant gennyf because they do not get from thee* RB. 85, 26.

200. **am na** *because not*, e.g. *tristuart uytaf am na daw I shall be a sorrowful bard because he will not come* MA. 183<sup>b</sup>; **am na weles** *ef yno na gwr na gwreic ryued vu ganthaw he was astonished because he saw there neither man nor woman* Hg. I., 154.

201. **yr awr** (nominal conjunction) *when*, e.g. **yr awr y kenych** *ef a a y nŷl ymdeith when thou soundest it the cloud will vanish* WB. 451; **yr awr y rodes** *un llef arnaw yd aeth y nŷl ymdeith when he blew a single blast on it the cloud vanished*, ib.

202. **can** *for, since*; neg. **can ny**; with the present of the copula, **cany**s, e.g. **yr hŷnnŷ hŷt hediw yd wŷf i yn darparu gwled ytti, can gwŷdŷwn i y dout ti ym keissyaw i from that time till to-day I have been preparing a feast for thee, for I knew that thou wouldst come to seek me** WB. 249; **kanŷ gollŷngy** *yr hŷnnŷ mi a rodaf it pedeir punt ar ugeint o arŷant since thou wilt not let it go for that, I will give thee twenty-four pounds of silver* WB. 78; a **chanys** *vy lles i yd oedut ti yn y uenegi im, manac pa fford vei hynny and since thou wert shewing me my advantage, shew how that might be* RB. 177, 15.

NOTE.—The copula form **cany**s comes to be used simply in the sense of **can**, e.g. a **chanys nys gwnn** (=a **chanys gwnn** WB. 76) *since I do not know it* RB. 54, 30.

203. **cwt, cw** *where*, e.g. **kwt ynt plant y gwr where are the children of the man?** WB. 453; **mŷnet a oruc y brenhin yg kŷghor kwt gaffei wreic the king took counsel where he could get a wife** ib.; a **wdosti cwd uyd nos yn arhos dyd knowest thou where is night waiting for day?** FB. 146; a **thrydit ryuet yv merwerit mor, cv threia, cud echwit, cvd a, cvd ymda, cv treigil, cv threwna and the third wonder is the tumult of the sea where it ebbs, where it swells, where it goes, where it moves about, where it rolls, where it settles** BB. 44<sup>b</sup>.

204. **cyn** *before*, (a) with indicative, e.g. **gwr a rodei gad kyn dybu i dyt a man who used to give battle before his day came** MA. 141<sup>a</sup>; (b) with subjunctive, e.g. **gweinif i hagen ym Reen ri**



**cyn bwyf** deierin *I yet will serve my Lord King before I am of the earth* MA. 142<sup>a</sup>, **a chin ri llethid** ve llatysseint *and before they were slain they had slain* BB. 36<sup>b</sup>.

205. **cyt, cyn, though**; negative **cyn ny, cyny, cany**.

(a) With indicative, e.g. **kid y lleinv** keudaud nis beirv calon *though it fills the body, it does not stir the heart* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>; **cyd doeth** ef nid aeth yn warthegawc *though he came, he did not go with spoil of cattle* MA. 140<sup>b</sup>.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. **kȳn nȳ buȳf** arglwȳdes, heb i, mi a wnn beth ȳw hȳnnȳ *"though I am not a lady," said she, "I know what that is"* WB. 51; **ked archwyf** ym llyw y lloergant yn rot, efam ryt yn geugant *though I ask of my sovereign the moon's orb as a gift, he will assuredly give it me* MA. 212<sup>a</sup>; a thydi am gwely i **kany welwyf** i dydi *and thou wilt see me, though I see thee not* RB. 173; a **chyt bei** lityawc ef wrthi hi, ef a gymyrth y rybud *and though he was angry with her, he took the warning* WB. p. 215; nyt oed ef nes idi yna no **chyn bei** ar y gam *he was no nearer to her there than though he had been at a walking pace*; neur daruydei yr dayar y lynku heb wybot dim y wrthaw mwy no **chyn ny ry fei** eiryoet vch y dayar *the earth had swallowed it so that nothing more was known of it than though it had never been above the earth* RB. II., 141; annoc y Brytanyeit **megys kyt** bei un onadunt *he incited the Britons as though he had been one of them* RB. II., 94.

NOTE.—In the verb "to be" after **cyt** the 3 sg. imper. regularly takes the place of the 3 sg. pres. subj., e.g. ar mab a geiff enw **kyt** boet drwc gennyt ti *and the boy shall get a name though it displease thee* RB. 69, 23.

206. **cyt union** in the phrase **y gyt ac**, e.g. **y gyt ac y doethant** rac bron Kynan y hannerchassant o bleit amherawdyr Rufein *as they came before Cynan they greeted him on behalf of the Emperor of Rome* RB. II. 113; **y gyt ac nat** oes *since there is not* BCh. 81.

207. **delw** (nominal conjunction) *as*, e.g. **delw yt wytt** pen rieu pen reith yt wyf pen prifueirt om prifyeith *as thou art head of princes, head of law, I am head of chief bards from my most excellent speech* MA. 157a.

**208. eissoes** *however, nevertheless*, e.g. a dic vu wreic y melinyd wrth Peredur, ac **eissoes** y melinyd a rodes aryant yn echwyn idaw *and the miller's wife was wroth with Peredur; nevertheless the miller gave him a loan of money* RB. 229.

**209. eithyr na** *except that not*, e.g. ac erbyn auory y vot yn gystal ac y bu oreu, **eithyr na** byd llyueryd gantaw *and by the morrow he will be as good as he ever was, except that he will not have the power of speech* RB. 31.

**210. gwedy** *after*; negative **gwedy na** :—(a) with indicative, e.g. keugant kŷwraghaun (MS. -um) **wide kywisscarun** (MS. -an) *verily we shall meet after we part* BB. 12<sup>b</sup>; a **gwedy na allwys** Kaswallawn kael y gwr . . . gogyuadaw Auarwy a oruc *and after Kaswallawn could not get the man, he threatened Avarwy.*

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. a **gwedy byryer** llawer yndi, ef a ovyn itt *and after a quantity has been thrown into it, he will ask thee* RB. 14; mwy boen yw koffau kyuoeth **gwedy coller** *it is a greater torment to remember power after it is lost* RB. II. 67; kanys ymdirect a wnaei ef caffel clot . . . **gwedy y gorffei** ar y alon *for he trusted that he would get fame after he had conquered his enemies* RB. II. 7; kanys **gwedy darffei** idaw ef llad Galogryuant diogel oed ganthaw y lledit ynteu **gwedy hynny** *for after he had slain Galogryvant he was sure that he would be slain after that* Hg. I. 114; a **gwedy na chaffei** dagneued o neb ryw ford y gantaw, sef a wnaeth anuon y geissaw nerth a chanorthwy y gan Ulkesar *and after he could not get peace from him in any way, he sent to seek support and help from Julius Caesar* RB. II. 89.

**211. hagen** *yet, however*, e.g. a phan deuthant yno tybygu rylad Kei. wynt a welsant **hagen**, or kaffei vedic da y bydei vyw *and when they came there, they thought that Kei had been killed. They saw, however, that if he got a good leech he would live* RB. 212, 11.

**212. herwyd, yn herwyd** (nominal conjunction) *according as*, e.g. a **herwyd y dyweit y kŷuarwŷdyt** ef a uu arglŷwd wed y hynny ar Wyned *and as the story says, he was lord over Gwynedd after that* WB. 111; a **gwedy eu hannoc uelly yn herwyd y gallei**, erchi a wnaeth dineu delw efydeit drwy danawl geluydyt *and after he had*

*thus exhorted them to the best of his power, he asked that a bronze effigy should be cast through the art of fire* RB. II. 138.

**213. hevyt** *further, also, likewise*, e.g. *ý Duv ý harchaw arch hewid of God I will ask a request still* BB. 36<sup>a</sup>, *ac enryuedodeu ereill heuyt a weleist yno and other wonders likewise thou sawest there* RB. 233, 2.

**214. hyt** (nominal conjunction).

1. *as long as, as far as*.

(a) With the indicative, e.g. *ti a geffy y kyfarws a notto dy benn ath dauawt, hyt y sych gwynt, hyt y gwlych glaw, hyt y treigyl heul thou shalt have the gift that thy mouth and thy tongue indicate, as long as wind dries, as long as rain wets, as long as the sun revolves* RB. 105, 25; *hyt y gwelir ymi gwlat ffrwythlawn yw hon as far as appears to me, this is a fruitful land* RB. II. 116; *nyt aeth neb is nef hyt yd aeth ef no one under heaven went as far as he* FB. 197.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. *taw hyt y mynnych be silent as long as thou wilt* RB. 13, 8.

2. **hyt na** *so that not*.

(a) With indicative (of consequence), e.g. *drycyruerth a wnaeth hyt nat oed well genti y byw noe marw she made lamentation so that she did not deem her life better than her death* RB. 51, 18.

(b) With subjunctive (of purpose), e.g. *carchara wynt hyt nat elont dracheuyn imprison them so that they may not go back* RB. 34, 14.

**215. lle** (nominal conjunction) *where*; negative **lle ny**, e.g. *lle y gwelych eglwys kan dy pader wrthi wherever thou seest a church, recite thy pater to it* RB. 195; *am uenegi ohonaf i ytti dy les lle nys metrut dy hun because I shewed thee thy advantage where thou didst not think of it thyself* RB. 177.

**216. mal, val** (O.W. *amal* = Ir. *amail*).

1. **as**, *when*.

(a) With indicative, e.g. *sef mal yd eistedassant that is how they sat* WB. p. 224; *pei gwypwn vot yn da gennyti ti mal y mae da gennyf i if I knew that it pleased thee as it pleases me* RB. 213; *ual y daw y mywn arganuot yr adanc a wnaeth as he came in, he perceived the monster* RB. 226, 5; *ýd adnabu ýr amherawdyr ý wlat*

**mal y gwelas** *the emperor recognised the country when he saw it* WB. 186.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. **mi wnafl ual y dywettych di** *I shall act as thou mayest direct* RB. 276; **hwýnt ae torrýnt ual y dyckid attunt** *they broke them as they were brought to them.*

2. *as if* (with past subjunctive), e.g. **mal pei teu uei** *as if it were thine* RB. 127; **dyuot yma auory ym kymryt i mal na wyppwn i dim y wrth hynny** *to come here to-morrow to take me as if I knew nothing about it* WB. p. 215.

3. *so that.*

(a) With indicative (of consequence), e.g. **kyscu a wneuthum i ual na wybuum** *pan aeth ef I slept so that I did not know when he went* RB. 247, 27.

(b) With subjunctive (of purpose), e.g. **par weithon wahard y llongeu . . . ual nat el neb y Gymry** *issue now a prohibition to the ships so that no one may go to Wales* RB. 34, 12; **ereill a gyghorei itt rodi dy uerch y un o dyledogyon y deyrnas hon ual y bei vrenhin gwedy ti** *others advised thee to give thy daughter to one of the nobles of this kingdom so that he might be king after thee* RB. II. 114.

### 217. megys ; megys na.

1. *as*, e.g. **y gwledychwys Peredur gyt ar amherodres pedeir blyned ar dec, megys y dyweit yr ystoria Peredur** *ruled with the empress for fourteen years, as the story tells* RB. 232; **megys y gallwys gyntaf ef a aeth parth a Chaerwynt** *as soon as he could he went towards Caermynt* RB. II. 173; **megys y del y coelbrenn udunt y deholir** *as the lot falls to them they are banished* RB. II. 131.

2. *as if*, e.g. **ymgaru a orugant megys na ry ymwelynt drwy lawer o yspeit kyn no hynny** *they embraced one another, as if they had not seen one another for a long time before that* RB. II. 186.

3. *so that*, e.g. **pa achaws na ladwn ni y mynach hwnn megys y kaffo Gwrtheyrn gwedy hynny y deyrnas** *why do we not slay this monk, that Vortigern may thereafter get the kingdom?* RB. II. 129.

218. **myn** *where*, e.g. **dyuot a orugant myn yd oed yr heussawr** *they came to where the herdsman was* RB. 115, 13; **myn yd vo truin yd uit trev** *wherever there is a nose, there will be a sneeze* BB. 42a.

**219. namyn, namwyn** *except, but.*

e.g. nýt edewis uynet **namyn** hýt yd elhut titheu *I did not promise to go except so far as thou shouldst go* WB. 472; paham y kymerwn ninneu hynny y gan y taeogeu lladron . . . **namyn** eu llad hwy oll *why do we take this from these thievish churls and not rather slay them all?* RB. 49; y prenn a dyfawd yn dec . . . **namyn na** thyfawd neb ryw ffrwyth arnaw *the tree grew fairly, except that no manner of fruit grew upon it* Hg. I. 130.

**220. 1. neu** = (Ir. *nō*) *or*, e.g. nýt oed un llestyr . . . **namyn** eur **neu** aryant **neu** uuelyn *there was not a single vessel...except gold or silver or horn* WB. 227.

**221. 2. neu**, before vowels **neut**; with the present of the copula **neut**; with **ry**, **neur** (§ 95 note), with infixed pronoun: **neu-m**, etc. The original meaning may have been *now*, but the precise force of the particle is not altogether clear.

e.g. pan douthume attad oeth bichan vi anuad. **neu rimartuad** oth laur kiueithad *when I came to thee, my ill was small; now I have been blackened through thy...co-operation* BB. 11<sup>b</sup>; och, heb y Riannon, paham y rody di atteb uelly; **neus rodes** uelly arglwydes yg gwyd gwyrd, heb y mackwy "*Alas!*" said Riannon, "*why dost thou answer so?*" "*I have so answered, lady, before nobles,*" said the youth RB. 13; **neus gwarchae** mynwent y mynwes daear, **neud** gwar gwawr trydar *now the graveyard imprisons him in the bosom of the earth, now the light of battle is gentle* MA. 160<sup>a</sup>; **neu** chwithau pan doethawch. **neur doetham** y erchi Olwen *whence have ye come? We have come to ask for Olwen* RB. 118. Many examples will be found in MA. 275<sup>b</sup>.

**222. no, noc** *than*; with the article, **nor**; with possessive adjectives **nom**, **noth**, **noe** etc., e.g. oed melynach y fenn **no** blodeu y banadyl *her head was yellower than the blossom of the broom* WB. 476; **noc** amws naw gayaf oed mwy *he was bigger than a stallion of nine years* WB. 472; nachaf y twryf yn dyfot yn vwy . . . **noc** y dywedassei y gwr du *behold the din became greater than the black man had said* WB. 231; a llawenach uuwyth wrthyf y nos

hono **nor** nos gynt *I had greater welcome that night than the night before* WB. 233.

With the particle **et**, **nocet**, **nocyt**, **nogyt**, e.g. dial Duw arnaf onyt dewissaf (*leg. dewissach*) genhyf uy agheu oe law ef **nocet** o law arall *God's vengeance on me if I would not rather die by his hand than by the hand of another* WB. p. 210; pa beth yssyd iawnach weithon **nocyt** na chretter idaw *what is more proper now than that he should not be believed?* CM. 76.

NOTE.—For **et** see Rev. Celt. VI. 57.

223. **nu**, *now*, e.g. **nu** ným car i Guendit *now Gwendydd loves me not* BB. 25<sup>b</sup>; yth law di **nu** y rodaf i *into thy hand now I will give it* RB. 266; beth bynnac **nu** a dylyych, kymer yr un march ar dec *whatever then thou art entitled to, take the eleven horses* RB. 279.

NOTE.—In the usual Mid.W. orthography the word should be written *nw* (=Ir. *nu*); it had gone out of use, and so the scribes retained the spelling of an earlier period. Cf. Loth Mab. II. 195.

224. **o**, before vowels **ot** *if*; also **or**, **os**; negative **ony**, before vowels **onyt**; with the present of the copula **os**, negative **onyt**.

(a) With present indicative, e.g. **ot** **ey** yr hon (sc. *fford*) issot ny deuy trachefyn vyth *if thou goest by the lower one, thou wilt never return* WB. p. 223; **os** býw uyðaf i . . . ti a glywý chwetleu **o** dianghaf *if I live, thou shalt hear tidings, if I escape* WB. 392; **or** dianghaf i . . . uýg kýwirdeb am cariat a uyd ar ý uorwýn . . . **ony** dianghaf uinheu kýndiweiret uyð ý uorwýn a chýnt *if I escape, the maiden shall have my loyalty and my love; if I do not escape, she will be as pure as before* WB. 396; mi ath amdiffýnaf **os** gallaf *I will defend thee if I can*; ný mwynha ý gwaet **onyt** yn dwým ý keffir *the blood is of no use unless it is got warm*.

NOTE 1.—A negative clause continuing a clause introduced by **o** has **ae na** with the subjunctive (§ 236, note 1).

NOTE 2.—**onyt** sinks to the sense of *except, but* (Mod.W. *ond*), e.g. ny mynnaf i dim **onyt** mynet yr gware *I desire nothing but to go to the play* WB. p. 224; ny mynnaf i neb **onyt** Duw *I desire no one but God* Hg. I. 178.

(b) With the preterite and pluperfect, e.g. **or** **bu** (= **os** RB. 104) ar dy gam ý dýuost ý mýwn, dos ar dý redec allan *if thou camest in at a walk, go out at a run* WB. 458; **o** **ry** dywedyssei hitheu

dim a uei wrthwyneb ganthaw ef, hi a wnaei iawn idaw *if she had said anything to displease him, she would give him satisfaction.* Hg. II. 130.

(c) With the past subjunctive, e.g. **o bei** orderch itt goreu gorderch oedut *if thou hadst a mistress, thou wouldst be a matchless lover* WB. 237; **or bei** eisseu dim arnaw nŷ adei ef hun uŷth ar legat dŷn *if he lacked anything, he would never allow sleep on any man's eye* WB. 465; dywedut na bydei vy eneit ym corff **ony delei** = **deuhei** WB. 256) ef ym amdiffyn i *they said that my life would not be in my body, unless she came to defend me* RB. 187.

NOTE 4.—It will be observed that in the last example corresponding to what in direct speech would be **o daw** the older text has the imperfect indicative, the later the past subjunctive.

NOTE 5.—**os** contains the infixed pronoun of the third person singular, **os gallaf** *if I am able (to do) it*; from such cases **os** develops into a special form of the conjunction. **or** comes from **o + ry** as **neur** from **neu + ry** (§ 95 note), so that originally it would have been used before those tenses with which **ry** was used. But it tended to spread beyond its proper bounds, cf. **or clywy**, or **gwely** RB. 195 = **o chlywy**, **o gwely** WB. 119, 120.

225. 1. **pan** *whence?* e.g. **pan iv** dŷ echen *whence is thy lineage?* BB. 49<sup>b</sup>; **gaur llv pŷ dv pan doit.** **Ban deuaw** o kad *“hero of a host, whence comest thou?”* “*I come from battle*” BB. ib.; **pa le pan deuy di . . . pan deuaf** o lys Arthur *“whence comest thou?”* “*I come from Arthur's court*” RB. 200, 1. Note the repetition of **pan** in the answer.

226. 2. **pan** *when.*

(a) With present (or future) indicative, e.g. **kŷntaw** geir a dŷwedaw ŷ bore **ban kyuodaw** *the first word that I will say in the morning when I arise* BB. 41<sup>b</sup>; **ban wanh**a ŷ gnaud *when his flesh becomes feeble* BB. 10<sup>a</sup>; **pan agorawr** (= **agerer** RB. 103, 24) ŷ porth . . . **bŷdhawt** ragot ti gŷntaf ŷd agorawr ŷ porth *when the gate is opened, it will be opened for thee first* WB. 456.

NOTE.—This construction gives place to **pan** with the subjunctive.

(b) With a past tense of the indicative, e.g. a **phan yt** oed yn mynet yr llog ac **na welei** neb y gyt ac ef namyn ar y drydyd . . . **y dywawt** *and when he was going to the ship and saw no one with him save his two companions, he said* RB. II. 67; a **ffan deuthum**

yno hoffach oed genhŷf *and when I came there it pleased me more* WB. 229; **pan glywssynt** hwy y uarwolyaeth ef yd ym-gynullyssynt *when they had heard of his death, they had assembled* RB. II. 173.

(c) With the subjunctive, e.g. **pan delych** dy hun yth wlat ti a wely *when thou thyself comest to thy land thou wilt see* RB. 6, 10; **pan agorer** y creu beunydyd a allan *when the pen is opened every day, it goes forth* RB. 78; **pan elhei** y teulu y yvet y gwin . . . nyt aey ef y gyt a neb onadunt wy *whenever his household went to drink the wine he would not go with any of them* RB. 85.

3. In some phrases.

(a) **hyt pan until**, e.g. ar pump meib hynny a uagassant **hyt pan uuant** weisson mawr *and those four boys they reared till they were big lads* RB. 43; Duw a wyr nat ymchoelwn **hyt pann welhom** y uorwyn *God knows that we will not return till we see the maiden* RB. 117.

(b) **or pan from the time that**, e.g. **or pan gauas** y tir ny allwys na chi na dyn na march y ganhymdeith *from the time that it reached the land neither dog nor man nor horse could keep up with it* RB. 141; **or pann agoroch** y drws hwnnw ny ellwch uot yno *after ye open that door ye will not be able to be there* RB. 40.

(c) **yr pan since the time that**, e.g. kyvriuwch awch treul **yr pan doethawch** yma *reckon up your expenditure since ye came hither* RB. 228; gwedy dwyn ar gof onadunt eu collet **yr pan gollyssynt** arglwydiaeth ynys Brydein *after they called to mind their losses since they had lost the lordship of Britain* RB. II. 108.

4. *since*, e.g. gwae ni **pann yn** trewit o delli woe to us *that we have been struck by blindness* LA. 84; pa gyfryw wr yw awch tat chwi **pan allo** lleassu pawb uelly *what kind of a man is your father that he can kill everyone in this way?* RB. 221; pa drwc a digoneis i ytti **pan wnelut** titheu ymi . . . a wnaethost hediw *what evil have I done to thee that thou shouldst do to me what thou hast done to-day?* WB. 232.

5. *that*, e.g. ny wydyem **pan** oed ti a grogem *we knew not that it was thou whom we were crucifying* FB. 122. In prose it is



common in the phrase **pan yw** *that it is*, e.g. *y dywawt y gwr . . . pan yw* Peredur ae goruwassei *the man said that Peredur had overcome him* RB.

227. **pei** *if*, negative **pei na**; followed by the past subjunctive or by the pluperfect indicative which takes its place (§ 109c), e.g. **pei as gwypwn** mi ae dywedwn *if I knew it, I would tell it* RB. 130; *nyt oed gyfyg gennyf ymlad a thidi bei na bei yr anifeil gyt a thi I should not think it difficult to fight with thee if the beast were not with thee* RB. 189; a **phei na ry bylei** y cledyf ar vodrwyau y benffestin ef a vuassei agheuawl or dyrnawt honnw *et nisi collisioe cassidis mucronem hebetasset, mortiferum vulnus forsitan intulisset* RB. II. 198; buassei well itti **pei rodassut** nawd yr mackwy *it would have been better for thee if thou hadst given protection to the youth* RB. 216.

NOTE.—**pei**, **bei** is in origin sg. 3 past subjunctive of **bot**. By itself it has the sense of *if it were*, e.g. **pei oet idaw** ef a ladyssit *if he had been of age, he would have been slain* RB. 193.

228. **pryt na** (nominal conjunction) *since not*.

(a) with the indicative, e.g. **py holy di y mi pryt nam gedy yn** y tarren honn *what dost thou seek of me that thou dost not leave me in peace on this stony height?* RB. 128; a **phryt na thygyawd** idaw geissyaw mynet y mywn trist vu ganthaw *and since he did not succeed in getting in he was sad* Hg. I. 39.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. **pa uedwl yw dy teu di unben pryt na bwyttehych** *what is in thy mind, sir, that thou dost not eat? (that keeps thee from eating)* RB. 292; **py wyneb yssyd arnat ti pryt na delut** y edrych y gofut a uu arnaf i *what face hast thou that thou didst not come to see the grief that was upon me?* RB. 176.

229. **pyr** (**py** + **yr** for *what?*).

1. *Why?* e.g. **pyr** (= **py rac** RB. 126) **y kyuerchy dy** *why dost thou call?* WB. 486.

2. *Since, that*, e.g. **gvae vi pir imteith** genhide in kyueith *woe to me that I walked in associateship with thee* BB. 11<sup>b</sup>.

230. **tra** *while*; often preceded by **hyt**.

(a) With the past indicative, e.g. **ny omedwyt neb tra barhaawd** *no one met with refusal while it lasted* RB. 17; **y**

tyuawd heint yndaw a nychtawt **hyt tra uu** uyw *there developed in him a sickness and a wasting as long as he lived* RB. 108.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. **tra vych** ti yn kyscu mi a af y ymwelet ar iarll *while thou art sleeping, I will go to see the earl* WB. p. 214; **hyt tra ym gatter** yn vyw hanbyd gwaeth drem vy llygeit *while I am left alive my eyesight will be worse* RB. 119; **tra uei** y mywn coet ar vric y coet y kerdei *while he was in a wood he would walk on the tops of the trees* RB. 108; **pei nam goganewch** . . . mi a gysgwn **tra uewn** yn aros vy mwyt *if you would not laugh at me, I would sleep while I wait for my food* RB. 162; **hyt tra uei** yn gorffywys yd archei eu blygaw yn vyw rac y vron *while he was resting he asked that they should be flayed alive before him* RB. II. 79.

231. **wrth** *because*; negative **wrth na**, e.g. **adolwyn** yw genhyf itt y gadw yn da, **wrth nas rodwn** i ef iti yr y seith dinas goreu yth gyuoeth, ac **wrth** hefyt **y lledir** dy benn etwa ac ef *I entreat thee to guard it well, because I would not give it thee for the seven best towns in thy kingdom, and because too I will yet cut off thy head with it* CM. 31; **guerth na buost** vffil *because thou hast not been submissive* BB. 11<sup>b</sup>.

232. **yn** 1. *where*, e.g. dos ragot y lys Arthur **yn y** (= **yn lle** RB. 195) **mae** goreu y gwyr *go to Arthur's court where the men are best* WB. 119; **yn** (= **lle** RB. 195) **y gwelych** eglwys can dy pater wrthi *where thou seest a church, recite thy pater to it* WB. 119.

2. *when*, e.g. **yn y** bo canmoledig Gruffudd . . . cerddwn weithon ar ddarogan Merddin *when Gruffudd has been praised, let us now pass to the prophecy of Merlin* MA. 723<sup>a</sup>; **yn y** bei orchyuygedic angheu a gyuodes y trydyd dyd *who, when death had been overcome, arose on the third day* Hg. II. 76.

NOTE.—See Rev. Celt. 28, p. 198.

### 233. **yny** *until*.

(a) With a past indicative (or historic present), e.g. wynt a drigyassant **yny daruu** idaw ef hynny *they stayed until he had finished that* RB. 267; dyuot a orugant yr holl niferoed **hyny**

**vydant** yn emyl y kao *the whole multitude came till they were beside the enclosure* WB. p 224.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. arhowch y gyt a mi **yny darffo** ym gymryt gwrogaeth vyg goreugwyr *wait with me till I have received the homage of my nobles* RB. 267 ; y byryw[y]t y kalaned yn y peir **yny uei** yn llawn *the corpses were cast into the cauldron till it should be full* RB. 39.

**234. yr na** *since not, though not.*

(a) With indicative, e.g. am ernyw **yr na daw** *it afflicted me since he will not come* MA. 183<sup>b</sup>.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. darogan yw idaw kaffel etiued ohonat ti **yr nas kaffo** o arall *it is his fate that he shall have offspring of thee though he has had none of another* RB. 101 ; ny chyffroes un aelawt ar Gopart yr y uedru mwy noc **yr na metrit** *not one limb of Copart was affected, though it was hit more than though it had not been hit* Hg. II. 149.

## NEGATIVE PARTICLES.

**235. ny**, before a vowel **nyt** ; infixed pronouns **ny-m-**, **ny-th-**, **ny-s-**, etc.

(a) Except before the imperative, **ny** is the regular negative in main clauses, e.g. **ny chelaf** *I will not conceal* ; **ny lyuassei** neb *no one dared* ; **nyt oed** da gennyf ynneu hynny *that did not please me* ; **ny bo** teu dy benn *may not thy head be thine*.

(b) **ny** introduces relative clauses (where Bret. and Corn. like Ir. have **na**), e.g. yn y wlad **ny ry welei** eiroet *in a country that he had never seen*.

NOTE.—In such clauses **na** is exceptional in Welsh, e.g. **yssit nas keffych** (by **yssyd ny cheffych** 120) *there is something that thou wilt not get* RB. 121—123.

**236. na**, before a vowel **nat** ; with infixed pronouns **na-m-** etc. This is the regular negative in dependent clauses, e.g. ryued yw gennyf i **nam atwaenost** *I wonder that thou dost not know me* ; ef a gadarnhaei y gwennwynei y dwfyr hwnnw genedyl y Corannyeit

ac **na** ladei ac **nat** eidigauei neb oe genedyl ehun *he gave assurance that that water would poison the race of the Corannyeit, and would not kill and would not harm anyone of his own race* RB. 96; breid vu **na** syrthyawd yr llawr *she almost fell to the ground* Hg. I. 308; mi a wnaft itt **na** bo reit itt uot yn trist *I will bring it about for thee that there will be no need for thee to be sad*; golychaf y wledic pendefic mawr **na** bwyf trist *I will entreat the king, the great Prince, that I may not be sad* FB. 182. Further examples will be found under the conjunctions (but **can ny**, **cyn ny**, **ony**).

NOTE 1.—**na** is found in the second member of a conditional sentence introduced by *o* (of which the negative is **ony**), e.g. *o gwely vwyf a diawt, or byd reit itt wrthaw ac na bo o wybot a dayoni y rodi itt, kymer dy hun, ef if thou seest food and drink, if thou hast need of it, and no one has the courtesy and kindness to give it thee, take it thyself* RB. 195.

NOTE 2.—The use of **na** may be noted in sentences like the following: *kanystrawn genedyl a phaganyeit yweh ac nat atwen inheu etwa nach moes nach deuoden for ye are foreigners and pagans, and I do not yet know your character or your customs* RB. II. 134; *a gwedy menegi y bawp o tywyssogyon Freinc ar neilltu ac na chanas na phorth na nerth after he had set forth the case to each of the chiefs of France separately and got neither help nor support* RB. II. 74.

237. **na**, before vowel **nac** (cf. Ir. *näch*-); with infixed pronouns **na-m-** etc. **na(c)** is used:—

(a) As the negative with the imperative, e.g. **na dos** *do not go*; **nac amouyn** *amdanaw do not ask about it*. **na** is also sometimes found with the subjunctive used in an imperative sense, e.g. **na discynnych** *do not dismount* WB. 399.

(b) In negative answers to questions (§ 241).

(c) Not preceded by a question, in vivid negation, e.g. *dyret y uwyttu, heb ef. nac af yrof a Duw, heb hi "come to eat," said he. "I will not go, between God and me," said she* RB. 289; *eres yw gennyf na uedrut gymedroli ar wneuthur esgidyeu wrth uessur. na uedreis, heb ynteu. mi ae metraf weithon "I am surprised that thou couldst not succeed in making shoes by measurement." "I could not," said he; "I shall be able to do it now"* RB. 70; *erchi a oruc y iarll y Enit ymdiarhenu a chymryt gwisce arall ymdanei. na uynnaf yrof a Duw, heb hi the earl asked Enid to unrobe*

*herself and put on another dress. "I will not, between God and me," said she.*

NOTE.—For a similar usage in the other British languages and in Irish see the "Transactions of the London Philological Society" 1898-9, page 54, note.

**238. na**, disjunctive particle; before vowels **nac**; with the article **nar**; with infixed possessive adjectives **nam**, **nath**, **nae** etc., e.g. *tegach oed noc y gallei neb y gredu nae dywedut he was fairer than anyone could believe or tell* CM. 1; *heb wybot dim or vrat nae thybyaw without knowing or suspecting anything of the treachery* RB. II. 218; **na—na**, e.g. *ny byd reit itt torri na gwaew na chledyf there will be no need for thee to break either spear or sword*; *y Duw y dygaf vyg kyffes nae werthu nae ellwng nas gwnaf i I vow to God that I will neither sell it nor let it go* RB. 56; *beth bynnac a uo y marchawc racco na byw na marw whatever becomes of yonder knight, whether he lives or dies* RB. 289; *py beth bynhac a gaffer drwy na thwyll na chedernit whatever is got through treachery or force* RB. II. 206; *pan dycko beich na mawr na bychan uo when he brings a load whether it be great or small* RB. 109.

## INTERROGATIVE AND RESPONSIVE PARTICLES.

### INTERROGATIVE PARTICLES.

**239. a**; with the present of the copula **ae** (§ 155η).

(a) In direct questions, e.g. *a weleist di varchawc hast thou seen a horseman? ae amser ynni vynet yr byrdeu is it time for us to go to table?*

(b) In indirect questions, e.g. *govyn a oruc y gwr y Peredur a wydyat llad a chledyf the man asked Peredur whether he knew to smite with a sword*; *edrych a oruc a yttoed ef yn deffroi she looked to see if he was stirring.*

(c) **ae—ae** *whether—or*, e.g. *yn amheu beth a dywedei ae gwir ae geu doubting whether what he said was true or false* RB. II. 47; *e kefreyth a deueyt bod en yaun provy ae moruyn ae nyt*

moruyn *the law says it is right to try whether she is a maiden or whether she is not a maiden* BCh. p. 40; ny wydyat hitheu beth a wnaei . . . ae dywedut hynny **ae** tewi *she did not know what she should do, whether she should tell that or keep silent* R.B. 270; either—or, e.g. a uynny di **ae** diawt **ae** dim *dost thou desire drink or anything?* RB. 276; a thebic yw genhyf i na doeth y wrthunt heb lad **ae** rei onadunt **ae** cwbyl *and I think that he did not leave them without slaying either some or all of them* WB. p. 221.

**240. pony** (= Ir. cani), before vowels **ponyt**; with the present of the copula **ponyt** = *nonne*? e.g. **pony** chlywy di *dost thou not hear?* RB. 272; **ponyt** oed iawn y titheu *would it not be right for thee?* RB. 246.

#### RESPONSIVE PARTICLES.

**241.** In answers to questions the verb or the predicate noun is often repeated, e.g. a gaffaf i letty gennyti ti, heb y Peredur. **keffy**, heb ynteu, yn llawen “*shall I get a lodging with thee?*” said Peredur. “*Yes,*” said he, “*gladly*”; a yttiwi Kei yn llys Arthur. Yttiwi “*is Kei in Arthur’s court?*” “*Yes*”; ae amser ynni vynet yr byrdeu. **amser** “*is it time for us to go to table?*” “*Yes*.” In negative answers **na(c)** is used, e.g. a atwaenost di y marchawc racco mawr. **nac atwen** “*knowest thou yonder great horseman?*” “*No*”; dywet, heb ef, a vu ef gennyti ti a gwneuthur anuod arnat. **na vu**, myn vyg cret, heb hi, na cham nys goruc ym “*tell me,*” said he, “*was he with thee and did he do violence to thee?*” “*No,*” said she, “*and he did me no wrong*”; ae byw. **na vyw** “*is he alive?*” “*No*.” In answer to **ae**, **nac ef** (= Mod.W. **nage**) is found, e.g. dywet unbenn, heb ef, ae o anwybot ae o ryfyc y keissut ti colli ohonof i vy mreint . . . **nac ef**, heb y Gereint, ny wydywn i kaethu fford y neb “*tell me, sir, is it through ignorance or arrogance that thou didst seek to make me lose my privilege?*” “*No,*” said Gereint, “*I did not know that the road was debarred to any one*” WB. p. 217.

NOTE.—**nac ef** is also found without a preceding question, e.g. arhowech vi yma, heb y Peredur, mi a af y ymwelet ar pryf. **nac ef**, arglwyd, heb wynt, awn y gyt y ymlad ar pryf “*wait for me here,*” said Peredur, “*I will go to visit the worm.*” “*Nay, lord,*” said they, “*let us go together to fight with the worm.*”

242. Certain particles are used in answer.

**ie, ieu**, affirmatively, e.g. *ae gwr y Arthur wyt ti. Ie myn vyg kret, heb y Peredur "art thou one of Arthur's men?" "Yes, by my faith," said Peredur; gouyn a wnaeth ef yr gwr . . . ae offeiryat oed ef. Ieu arglwyd, heb ynteu he asked the man if he was a priest. "Yes, Lord," said he.*

**do** (cf. Ir. *tó*) affirmative, **nado** (Ir. *nā thō*) negatively, in answer to a preterite (or pluperfect of indirect question), e.g. *a unben, heb ef, a leweist ti dy ginnyaw. do, heb ef "Sir," said he, "hast thou eaten thy dinner?" "Yes," said he; deffroi a oruc Arthur a gofyn a gysgassei hayach. do arglwyd, heb yr Owein, dalym Arthur awoke and asked if he had slept for some time. "Yes," said Owein, "for a while." a vwyteeist di dim hediw. nado, heb ynteu "hast thou eaten anything to-day?" "No," said he.*

NOTE.—Both *ie, ieu* and *nado* are found without a preceding question, e.g. *ar hýnny llýma hitheu ýr iarles ýn datlewygu. ie, heb hi, ae kychwyn a nýnný ti. ie, heb ef thereupon to the countess recovered from her swoon. "Really," said she "dost thou desire to set forth?" "Yes," said he WB. 119; ie (=ieu RB. 210), heb y Peredur, ýma y býdwn heno "truly," said Peredur, we will remain here to-night" WB. 139; mi a debygaf...na cheueist na bwyt na diawt. nado yrof a Duw, heb ynteu "I think that thou hast got neither food nor drink." "No, between God and me," said he RB. 275.*

## THE INTERJECTION.

243. Interjections proper are :—

**a, ha** (= Ir. *ā*), in address, e.g. *a vorwýn, heb y Peredur, a doý ti ý dangos imi ýr aniueil hwnnw "maiden," said Peredur, "wilt thou come to shew me that beast?" ha (=a WB. 169) unbenn, heb y uorwyn, pei gwnelut vyg kyghor . . . ti a gaeut y drws "Lord," said the maiden, "if thou wouldst follow my advice, thou wouldst shut the door" RB. 235.*

**oi a**, e.g. *oi a uorwyn dec a bery di bot vym march i am arueu yn vn lletty a mi heno hark! my fair maid, wilt thou see that my horse and my arms are in the same lodging with me to-night? RB. 217; dyhed a beth bot gwr kystal a thi heb gedymdeith;*

**oi a wrda** y mae y mi gedymdeith "*it is a strange thing that a man like thee should have no companion.*" "*But, my lord, I have a companion*" RB. 127.

**oian a**, e.g. **oian a parchellan** a parchell dedwit *ho! little pig, happy pig* BB. 26<sup>b</sup>.

**och**, e.g. **och Iessu** na dýffv wý nihenit kým dýffod ar wi llave lleith mab Guendit *O Jesus that my end had come before the death of Gwendydd's son came upon my hand* BB. 25<sup>b</sup>; **och**, heb y Riannon, paham y rody di atteb uelly "*alas!*" said Riannon, "*why dost thou answer thus?*" RB. 13; erchi y vendyth a wnaeth; **och a truan**, heb ef, ny dylly gaffel bendyth *he asked him for his blessing. "Unhappy wretch," said he, "thou dost not deserve a blessing"* RB. 236.

**ub**, e.g. neu chwithau pwý ýwch. kenhadeu Arthur ýssýd ýma yn erchi Olwenn; **vb wyr** nawd dýw ragoch, ýr ý být na wnewch hýnný "*and who are you?*" "*Messengers of Arthur that are here seeking Okwen.*" "*Alack! men, God preserve you. For the world do not do that*" WB. 473.

244. Of an interjectional character are the following:—**llyma** *lo here!* (like Fr. **voici**), e.g. **llyma** weithon ual ýd hellawd Arthur ý carw *Lo now! this is how Arthur hunted the stag* WB. 402; **llyma** ý uorwýn ý kefeist ti dy warthrud oe achaws *See here is the maiden on whose account thou didst get thy shame* WB. 407. Also **llyman** RB. 87, WB. 185, p. 92<sup>b</sup>; **llyna** *lo there!* (like Fr. **voilà**), e.g. **llyna** ýssýd iawnaf am hýnný *Lo! that is the fairest course with reference to that* WB. 406; ie vorwýn, heb y Kei, **llyna** vedru ýn drwc "*Indeed, woman,*" said Kei, "*that is ill behaviour*" WB. 123; **nachaf** *lo! behold!* e.g. **nachaf** uarchawc yn dyuot yr porth *behold a horseman coming to the gate* RB. 233; **wely dy** (lit. *dost thou see?*) *lo! behold!* e.g. **wely dý** racco (= **weluch chwi** racw WB. p. 94<sup>a</sup>) ý gaer *Lo! yonder is the city* WB. 185.



# A Middle-Welsh Reader



## I. LEAR AND HIS DAUGHTERS.<sup>a</sup>

FROM THE RED BOOK OF HERGEST.

1. Ac yna gŵedy marô Bleiddut y drychafwy<sup>1</sup> Lyr y vab ynteu yn vrenhin. A thrugein<sup>2</sup> mlyned y bu yn llywyaô y vrenhinyaeth<sup>3</sup> yn wraôl, ac a adeilôys dinas ar auon Soram, ac ae gelôis Kaer Lyr; ac yn Saesnec y gelôir Leissestyr. Ac ny bu idaô un mab namyn teir merchet. Sef oed 5 enôeu y verchet:<sup>4</sup> Goronilla, Ragaô,<sup>5</sup> Cordeilla. A diruaôr y karei eu tat ôynt, a môyaf eissoes y karei y verch jeuaf idaô Cordeilla.

2. A phan yttoed yn llithraô parth ae henein,<sup>1</sup> medyliaô a wnaeth pa ôed y gadawei<sup>2</sup> y gyuoeth gŵedy ef y<sup>3</sup> verchet. 10 Sef a ônaeth profi pŵy vŵyaf oe verchet ae karei, ôrth rodi idi y ran oreu or kyuoeth gan wr. A galô a ôn[a]eth<sup>4</sup> attaô y verch hynaf idaô Goronilla, a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi efo.<sup>5</sup> A thygu a ônaeth hitheu y<sup>6</sup> nef a<sup>7</sup> daear<sup>8</sup> bot yn vŵy y karei hi euo noe heneit ehun. A chredu a 15 ônaeth ynteu idi<sup>9</sup> hynny, a dyôedut,<sup>10</sup> kan oed kymeint<sup>11</sup> y karei hi euo a hynny, y rodei ynteu draean<sup>12</sup> y gyuoeth genti hi y ôr<sup>13</sup> a deôissei yn ynys Prydein.

3. Ac yn ol honno galô attaô Ragua<sup>1</sup> y verch eil hynaf idaô, a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi euo. A thygu a 20 ônaeth hitheu y gyuoethu y nef ar daear<sup>2</sup> na allei hi<sup>3</sup> dyôedut ar y thauaôtleueryd pa veint y karei hi euo.<sup>4</sup> A chredu a ônaeth ynteu hynny, ac adaô idi hitheu y rodi<sup>5</sup> yr gôr a deôissei, a thraean<sup>6</sup> y gyuoeth<sup>7</sup> genti.

<sup>a</sup> Letters enclosed in square brackets [ ] are wanting in the MS.

VARIANTS FROM BRITISH MUSEUM, ADDITIONAL 19,707.

Ch. 1.—1 drycheuit 2 thrugeint 3 yn y llywaô hi 4 eu henweu 5 ragau

Ch. 2.—1 a heneint 2 yd adaôei 3 yô 4 wnaeth 5 ef 6 yr 7 ar 8 dayaer 9 idi hi 10 dywedut ôrthi 11 gymeint 12 drayan 13 yr gôr

Ch. 3.—1 ragau 2 dayar 3 om. 4 y karhei 5 y rodei hi (hi *over line*) 6 thrayan 7 kyfoeth

4. Ac yna y gelwis<sup>1</sup> y verch jeuaf idaŵ attaŵ, a gouyn  
 idi pa veint y karei hi euo.<sup>2</sup> A dyŵedut a ŵnaeth hitheu  
 y rygaru<sup>3</sup> ef eiryoet<sup>4</sup> megys y dyliei uerch garu y that,  
 ac nat ytoed etŵa<sup>5</sup> yn peidaŵ ar karyant hŵnnŵ<sup>a</sup> ac erchi  
 5 idaŵ gŵarandaŵ yn graff pa veint oed hynny. A sef<sup>6</sup> oed  
 hynny, y<sup>7</sup> veint y bei y gyuoeth ae jechyt ae deŵred. A  
 blyghau a lldiaŵ<sup>8</sup> a oruc ynteu, a dyŵedut ŵrthi, kan oed  
 kymeint y tremygassei euo<sup>9</sup> a hynny, val na chare<sup>10</sup> hi euo  
 megys y karei y chwioryd ereill,<sup>11</sup> y diuarnei ynteu hi hyt  
 10 na<sup>b</sup> chaffei neb ryŵ ran or ynys y gyt ac ŵynteu. Ny  
 dyŵat<sup>12</sup> ynteu nas rodei hi<sup>13</sup> y wr ny hanffei<sup>c</sup> or ynys, o  
 damŵeinei yr kyfryŵ ŵr hŵnnŵ y herchi heb argyfreu  
 genti. Hyn heuyt a gadarnhaei hyt na lauuryei y  
 geissaŵ gŵr idi megys yr rei ereill.<sup>14</sup> Kanys mŵy y  
 15 karyssei ef hi nor rei ereill eiryoet,<sup>15</sup> a hitheu yn y  
 dremygu ynteu<sup>16</sup> yn vŵy nor rei ereill.<sup>17</sup>

5. A heb ohir o gytgyghor y wyrda y rodes y dŵy  
 verchet hynaf idaŵ y dywyssogyon<sup>1</sup> yr Alban a Chernyŵ,  
 a hanner y gyuoeth<sup>2</sup> gantunt hyt tra [vei]<sup>3</sup> vyŵ ef, a  
 20 gŵedy bei varŵ, y kyuoeth gantunt<sup>4</sup> yn deu haner. Ac  
 yna gŵedy clybot o Aganipus vrenhin Freinc clot a  
 phryt a thegŵch Cordeilla, anuon kenadeu a ŵnaeth oe  
 herchi yn wreic idaŵ, a dyŵedut ŵrth y that y genadŵri.<sup>a</sup>  
 Ac ynteu a dyŵaŵt<sup>5</sup> y rodei y verch idaŵ ef heb argyfreu  
 25 genti,<sup>6</sup> kan daroed idaŵ rodi y gyuoeth ae eur ae aryant  
 y<sup>7</sup> dŵy verchet ereill.<sup>8</sup> A phan gogleu Aganipus tecket y  
 vorŵyn,<sup>9</sup> kyflaŵn vu oe charyat. A dy[ŵ]edut<sup>10</sup> a wnaeth bot  
 idaŵ ef digaŵn o eur ac aryant, ac nat oed reit idaŵ ef  
 ŵrth dim namyn gŵreic delediŵ<sup>11</sup> dylvedaŵc y kaffei blant

Ch. 4.—1 y gelwis ynteu 2 y karei ef 3 ac y dywawt hithen y karei  
 4 eiroet 5 om. <sup>a</sup>karyat hŵnŵ 6 ac ysef 7 yny 8 a lldiaŵ om. 9 hi euo  
 10 ual y karei 11 megys y chŵioryd y lleill <sup>b</sup>dyuarnei ynteu hi na  
 12 dywaŵt 13 na rodei ef hi <sup>c</sup>hanfei 14 megys y lleill 15 hihi nor  
 lleill 16 tremygu ef 17 nor lleill

Ch. 5.—1 tywyssogyon 2 y kyfoeth idaŵ 3 tra uei 4 yn gŵbyl udunt  
 ŵynteu <sup>a</sup>genadŵri 5 ac y dywaŵt ynteu 6 om. 7 gan y 8 y lleill 9 ae  
 thelediwet add. 10 dywedut 11 telediŵ

ohane<sup>12</sup> yn etiued ar y kyuoeth. Ac yn diannot<sup>13</sup> y kadarnhaŷt y briodas y rygtunt.<sup>14</sup>

6. Ac ym pen yspeit yg kylch diŷed oes Lyr y goresgynnŷs y dofyon y ran or kyuoeth<sup>1</sup> a ganhalassei<sup>2</sup> ef yn ŷraŷl drŷy hir o<sup>3</sup> amser; ac y rannassant y rygtunt 5 yn deu hanner. Ac o gymodloned y kymertth Maglaŷn tyŷysaŷc yr Alban Lyr attaŷ a deugein marchaŷc y gyt ac ef, rac bot yn geŷilid gantaŷ bot heb varchogyon yn<sup>4</sup> y osgord. A gŷedy bot Lyr yn y wed honno gyt a Maglaŷn, blyghau a oruc Cordeilla<sup>5</sup> rac meint oed<sup>6</sup> o 10 varchogyon gyt ae that,<sup>7</sup> ac rac eu gŷasanaethŷyr ŷynteu yn teruysgu y llys. A dyŷedut a ŷnaeth ŷrth y gŷr bot yn<sup>8</sup> digaŷn deg marchaŷc ar hugeint gyt ae that, a gellŷg y rei ereill ymdeith. A gŷedy dyŷedut hynny ŷrth Lyr, lldiaŷ a oruc, ac ymadaŷ a Maglaŷn, a mynet 15 hyt at arll Kernyŷ y daŷ y llall; ae erbynyeit o hŷnnŷ yn anrydedus.

7. Ac ny bu benn y vlŷydyn yny daruu teruysc y rwg eu gŷasanaethwyr. Ac ŷrth hynny y sorres Ragua y verch ŷrthaŷ, ac erchi idaŷ ellŷg y varchogyon y ŷrthaŷ 20 eithyr pump marchaŷc ae gŷasanaethei. A thristaŷ a ŷnaeth Lyr yna yn vaŷr, a chychŷyn odynd elchŷyl hyt at y verch yr hynaf idaŷ, o dybygu trugarhau ohonaei ŷrthaŷ oe gynnal ae varchogyon y gyt ac ef. Sef a ŷnaeth hitheu drŷy y lliit tygu y gyuoetheu nef a dayar 25 na chaffei ohir, ony ellygei y holl varchogyon y ŷrthaŷ eithyr vn y gyt ac ef ae gŷasanaethei; a dy[ŷ]edut nat oed reit y wr kyuoet ac euo vn lluosogrŷyd y gyt ac ef, na theulu namyn vn gŷr ae goassanaethei. A gŷedy na chaffei dim or a geissei gan y verchet, ellŷg y varchogyon 30 a ŷnaeth eithir vn y gyt ac ef.

Ch. 5.—12 ohonei 12 dianot 13 y rydunt

Ch. 6.—1 ŷ dofyon arnaŷ y gyfoeth 2 gynhalassei 3 *om.* 4 ŷrth 5 Goronilla *recte* 6 a oed 7 gyt ac ef 8 *from here to* odynd (ch. 10, l. 7) *om.*

8. A gŵedy bot velly rynaŵd, dŵyn ar gof a oruc y gyuoeth  
ae deilygdaŵt ae anrydet ae vedyant, a thristau yn vaŵr,  
a medyliaŵ gofŵy y verch a athoed y Freinc idaŵ. Ac  
ovynhau hynny heuyt a ŵnaeth rac mor digaryat y  
5 gellygassei ef hi y ŵrthaŵ; ac eissoes ny allŵys diodef y  
dianrydedu mal y daroed. A chychŵyn tu a Ffreinc a  
ŵnaeth.

9. A phan ytoed yn mynet yr llog ac na ŵelei neb y gyt  
ac ef namyn ar y drydyd, gan ŵylaŵ y dyŵaŵt yr  
10 ymadraŵd hŵnn: "Ae chŵichŵi tyghetuennu! pa le y  
kerdŵch chŵi dros aŵch gnotaedic hynt? Pa achaŵs y  
kyffroassaŵch chŵi vivieiryoet y ar vyg gŵastat detwydŷt?  
Kanyŵ mŵy boen yŵ koffau kyuoeth gŵedy coller, no  
chytdiodef achenoctit heb ordyfneit kyuoeth kyn no  
15 hynny. Mŵy boen yŵ genyf i yr aŵr hon goffav uyg  
kyuoeth am anryded yn yr amser hŵnnŵ, yn yr hŵn yd  
oed y saŵl gan mil o varchogyon ym damgylchynu yn  
kerdet y gyt a mi, pan vydŵn yn ymlad ar keŵyll ac ar  
dinassoed ac yn anreithaŵ kyvoeth vyg gelynyon, no  
20 diodef y poen ar achenoctit a ŵnaeth y gŵyr hynn y mi,  
y rei a udynt yna dan vyn traen.<sup>a</sup> Och vi, a dŵyweu  
nef a dayar! pa bryt y daŵ yr amser y gallŵyf y talu  
elchŵyl yn y gŵrthŵyneb yr gŵyr hynn? Och Cordeilla  
vyg karedic verch! mor wir yŵ dy ymadraŵd teu di,  
25 pan dyŵedeist panyŵ val y bei vyg gallu am medyant am  
kyuoeth am jeuegtit, panyŵ velly y karut ti vyui! Ac  
ŵrth hynny, tra vu vyg kyuoeth i yn gallu rodi rodyon,  
paŵb am karei; ac nyt mi a gerynt namyn vy rodyon am  
deuodeu am donyeu. Ac ŵrth hynny, pan gilyŵys y  
30 rodyon, y foes y karyat. Ac ŵrth hynny pa ffuruf y  
gallaf rac keŵilyd adolŵyn nerth na chanhorthŵy y genyt  
ti, ŵrth rysorri yg kam ohonaf i ŵrthyt ti am dy doethineb

<sup>a</sup> *leg. traet.*

di, ath rodi yn dremygedic gan debygu bot yn waeth dy diŵed noth whioryd ereill, a thitheu yn well ac yn doethach noc ŷyntŷy? Kanys gŷedy a rodeis i o da a chyuoeth udunt hŷy, y gŷnaethant hŷy vyui yn alltut ac yn echenaŵc om gŷlat am kyuoeth.” 5

10. Ac y dan gŷynaŵ y aghyfnerth ofut yn y wed honno ef a doeth hyt ym Paris, y dinas yd oed y verch yndaŵ. Ac anuon amylder o annercheu at y verch a ŷnaeth y dyŵedut y ryŵ agkyfreith a gyuaruu ac ef. A gŷedy dyŵedut or gennat nat oed namy[n] ef ae [y]swein, sef a 10 wnaeth hit[h]eu anuon amylder o eur ac aryant, ac erchi mynet ae that odyo hyt y myŷn<sup>1</sup> dinas arall, a chymryt arnaŵ y vot yn glaf, a gŷneuthur enneint idaw, ac ardymheru y gorff a symudaŵ<sup>2</sup> dillat, a chymryt attaŵ deugein marchaŵc ac eu kŷeiraŵ<sup>3</sup> yn hard ac yn syberŵ<sup>4</sup> o veirch<sup>5</sup> a 15 dillat ac arueu; a gŷedy darffei hynny, anuon oe ulaen at<sup>6</sup> Aganipus vrenhin ac at<sup>6</sup> y uerch y dyŵedut y vot yn dyuot. A gŷedy daruot gŷneuthur kymeint ac a archyssei,<sup>7</sup> anuon a ŷnaeth llythyreu<sup>8</sup> at y brenhin\* ac at y verch ynteu y dyŵedut<sup>9</sup> y uot<sup>10</sup> yn dyuot<sup>11</sup> ar y deugeinuot o varchogyon<sup>12</sup> 20 gŷedy y<sup>13</sup> rydehol oe dofyon o ynys Prydein, yn dyuot y geissaŵ porth gantunt ŷynteu<sup>13</sup> y oresgyn y gyfoeth dracheuen.<sup>14</sup> A phan gogleu y brenhin hynny, kychŷyn a ŷnaeth ef ae wreic ae deulu<sup>15</sup> yn y erbyn<sup>16</sup> yn anrydedus, mal yd oed deilŷg<sup>17</sup> erbyneyt<sup>18</sup> gŷr a uei yn gyhyt ac euo<sup>19</sup> 25 yn vrenhin ar ynys Prydein. A hyt tra uu yn Freinc, y rodes y brenhin lywodraeth<sup>20</sup> y gyuoeth<sup>21</sup> idaŵ, mal<sup>22</sup> y bei haŵs idaŵ caffel porth a nerth y oresgyn y gyuoeth drachefyn.<sup>23</sup>

11. Ac yna yd anuonet gŷys dros ŷyneb teyrnas Freinc

Ch. 10.—1 hyt yn 2 y *add.* 3 kyweiraŵ 4 yn hard syberŵ 5 veiryech 6 ar 7 kymeint a hynnŷ 8 llyr \*brenhin 9 ynteu y dywedut *om.* 10 ef *add.* 11 yn dyuot *om.* 12 deugeinuot marchaŵc 13 *om.* 14 kyuoeth drachefyn 15 teulu 16 yn erbyn llyr 17 teilŷg 18 erbyneyt 19 ef 20 llywodraeth 21 kyuoeth 22 val 23 idaŵ ef *add.*

y gynulla<sup>1</sup> holl deðred y uynet<sup>2</sup> gyt a Lyr y oresgyn y  
gyuoeth<sup>3</sup> drachefyn ida<sup>4</sup>. A gŵedy bot pob peth yn  
bara<sup>5</sup>t, kychŵyn a oruc Lyr a Chordeilla y verch ar llu  
hŵnn<sup>6</sup> gantunt, a cherdet yny doethant y ynys Prydein,  
5 ac yn diannot ymlad ae dofyon a chael<sup>4</sup> y fudugolyaeth.  
A gŵedy gŵedu pob peth or ynys ida<sup>6</sup> ef<sup>5</sup> i<sup>6</sup> bu var<sup>6</sup> Lyr  
yn y dryded vlŵdyn; ac y bu [var<sup>6</sup>]<sup>7</sup> Aganipus vrenhin  
Freinc. Ac yna y kymerth Cordeilla llyŵodraeth y  
deyrnas<sup>8</sup> yn y llaw ehun. Ac y cladŵyt Lyr y myŵn  
10 dayardy<sup>a</sup> a ŵnaeth ehun y dan auon Sorram. Ar demyl<sup>b</sup>  
honno ry ŵnathoed<sup>9</sup> yn anryded yr du<sup>6</sup> a elŵit yna<sup>10</sup>  
Bifrontisiani. A phan delei wylua y demyl<sup>11</sup> honno, y  
deuei holl grefydŵyr y dinas ar wlat oe anrydedu. Ac y  
dechreuit<sup>c</sup> pob gŵeith or a dechreuit hyt ym pen y  
15 vlŵdyn. A gŵedy gŵledychu pump<sup>12</sup> mlyned o Gordeilla  
yn dagnouedus,<sup>13</sup> y kyuodes y deu nyeint yn y herbyn,  
Morgan<sup>14</sup> vab Maglaŵn tyŵyssa<sup>6</sup>c yr Alban, a Chuned<sup>15</sup>  
vab Henwyn tyŵyssa<sup>6</sup>c Kernyw, a llu arua<sup>6</sup>c gantunt.  
A daly Cordeilla a ŵnaethant ae charcharu.<sup>16</sup> Ac yn y  
20 carchar hŵnn<sup>6</sup><sup>17</sup> o dolur kolli y kyuoeth<sup>18</sup> y gŵnaeth ehun  
y lleith.

Ch. 11.—1 y *add.* 2 ŵrth eu hellŵg y 3 kyfoeth 4 chaffel 5 *om.* 6 y  
7 var<sup>6</sup> 8 teyrnas <sup>a</sup>dayarty <sup>b</sup>temyl 9 a ŵnathoed ehun 10 ena  
11 demhyl <sup>c</sup>dechrewit 12 pvm (*but a stroke has been added below as if  
to change v to y*) 13 dagneuedus 14 Margan 15 Chuned 16 A—  
charcharu : ae daly ae charcharu 17 hvnv 18 chyfoeth



## II. THE STORY OF ARTHUR.

## FROM THE RED BOOK OF HERGEST.

1. A gŵedy marŵ Uthur Pendragon yd ymgynullasant  
 holl wyrda ynys Prydein, jeirll a þarŵneit<sup>1</sup> a marchogyŵn  
 vrdaŵl ac escyb ac abadeu ac athraŵn hyt yg Kaer  
 Vudei. Ac o gytsynyedigaeth paŵb yd archyssant y  
 Dyfric archescob Kaer Lion ar Wysc vrdaŵ Arthur y vab 5  
 ynteu<sup>2</sup> yn vrenhin. Ac eu hagen ae kymhellei y hynny.  
 Kanys pan gogleu y Saeson marŵolyaeth<sup>3</sup> Vthur Pen-  
 dragon,<sup>4</sup> yd ellygyssynt ŷynteu genadeu hyt yn Germania  
 y geissaŵ porth. Ac neur dathoed<sup>5</sup> llyghes vaŵr attunt,  
 a Cholgrim yn tyŵyssaŵc<sup>6</sup> arnadunt. Ac neur daroed 10  
 udunt goreskyn<sup>7</sup> o Humyr hyt y mor a Chatyneis<sup>8</sup> yn y  
 gogled. Sef oed hynny y dryded rann y ynys Prydein.  
 A gŵedy gŵelet o Dyfric archescob drueni y bobyl ae  
 hymdiuedi, ef a gymerth escyb y gyt ac ef, ac a dodes  
 coron y teyrnas am ben Ārthur. A phymthegmlŵyd oed 15  
 Arthur yna, ac ny chlyŵsit ar neb arall eiryoet<sup>9</sup> y deuodeu  
 o deŵred a haelder a oed arnaŵ ef. Idaŵ ef hefyt yd  
 enillyssei y dayoni anyanaŵl a oed arnaŵ y veint rat  
 honno, hyt pan oed garedic ef gan baŵb or a glyŵei<sup>10</sup>  
 dyŵetut amdanaŵ.<sup>11</sup> Ac ŵrth hynny gŵedy y arderchockau 20  
 ef or vrenhinaŵl enryded hŵnnŵ, gan gadŵ ohonaŵ y  
 gnotaedic<sup>12</sup> defaŵt a<sup>13</sup> ymrodes y haelder. Ac ody na  
 kymeint o amylder marchogyŵn a lithrei attaŵ, a megys  
 y dyffygwei idaŵ da y rodi<sup>14</sup> udunt yn vynyach. Aceissoes

## VARIANTS FROM BRITISH MUSEUM, ADDITIONAL 19,707.

(Ch. 1). 1 barvnyeit, 2 arthur ap vthyr, 3 marwolaeth, 4 bendragon,  
 5 dothoed, 6 dywyasave, 7 gverescyn, 8 mŵr kateneis, 9 eiroet, 10 glyŵei,  
 11 ymdanav anwaethach or ae gŵelei, 12 nottaedic, 13 ef a, 14 rodei,

py dió bynhac y bo haelder anyanaól y gyt a phrofedic<sup>15</sup> volyant, kyt bo eisseu arnaó ar dalym,<sup>16</sup> yr hynny ny at Duó wastat aghenocitit y argyóedu idaó.

2. Ac órth hynny Arthur, kanys molyant a getym-  
 5 deithockaei<sup>1</sup> haelder a dayoni, llunyaethu ryfel a oruc ar y  
 Saeson, hyt pan vei oc eu golut hóy<sup>2</sup> y kyfoethogei ynteu  
 y teulu ae varchogyon. Kanys iaónder a dyskei hynny  
 idaó; kanys ef a dyliei o dreftataól dyltet holl lywodraeth  
 ynys Prydein. A chynnullaó a oruc ef yr holl ieuenctit  
 10 a oed darystygedic idaó ef, a chyrchu parth a Chaer  
 Effraó.<sup>3</sup> A góedy góybot o Golgrim hynny, kynullaó a  
 oruc ynteu y Saeson ar Yscotteit ar Ffichteit, ac y gyt  
 ac<sup>4</sup> aneiryf luossogróyd nifer gantaó dyuot yn erbyn  
 Arthur hyt yg glan Dulas. A góedy ymgyfaruot yna  
 15 o hop<sup>5</sup> parth y dygóydassant llaóer or deu lu. Ac or  
 diwed Arthur a gafas y vudugolyaeth. A ffo a oruc  
 Colgrim<sup>6</sup> y dinas Kaer Efraó. Arthur ae lu a gych-  
 wynóys<sup>7</sup> ac a werchetwis<sup>8</sup> arnaó.

3. A góedy clybot o Baldó<sup>1</sup> y vraót ynteu<sup>2</sup> hynny,<sup>3</sup> ef  
 20 a gyrchaó tu ar lle yd oed y vraót yg góarchae,<sup>4</sup> a chóe  
 mil o wyr gantaó y geissaó y rydhau odyo. Kanys yr  
 amser yd ymladyssei<sup>5</sup> Arthur ae vraót ef, yd oed Baldó<sup>6</sup>  
 yna ar lan y mor yn aros<sup>7</sup> dyuot Chledric<sup>8</sup> o Germania, a  
 oed yn dyuot a phorth gantaó udunt. Ac órth hynny  
 25 góedy y dyuot ar<sup>9</sup> dec milltir y órth y gaer, darparu a  
 oruc dóyn kyrch nos am ben Arthur ae lu. Ac eissoes  
 nyt ymgelaó<sup>10</sup> hynny rac Arthur. Yna<sup>11</sup> yd erchis  
 ynteu y Gadór<sup>12</sup> tyóyssaó<sup>13</sup> Kernyó kymryt whe chant  
 marchaó a their mil o bedyt<sup>14</sup> y gyt ac ef a mynet yn

(Ch.) 1. 15 phrouygedic, 16 talym

(Ch. 2). 1 gytymdeithoccae, 2 óy, 3 efraó, 4 om., 5 pop, 6 golgrim,  
 7 gylehynóys y dinas, 8 ae góarchetwis

(Ch. 3). 1 baldvlf, 2 om., 3 y warchae, 4 yg gvarchae om., 5 ymladyssei,  
 6 valdvlf, 7 arhos, 8 cheldric, 9 hyt ar, 10 ymgelvys, 11 om., 12 kadvr,  
 13 iarll, 14 pedyt

eu herbyn, ac eu ragot y nos honno y fford y doynt. A gŵedy kaffel o Gadŵr gŵybot y fford y doynt y gelynyon, eu kyrchu a oruc Kadŵr yn deissyfyt. A gŵedy briŵaŵ eu bydinoed ac eu hyssigaŵ a llad llaŵer onadunt, kymell y Saeson a oruc ar ffo.

5

4. Ac ŵrth hynny diruaŵr dristyt a gofal a gymerth Baldŵf<sup>1</sup> yndaŵ,<sup>2</sup> ŵrth na allŵys ellŵg<sup>3</sup> y vraŵt or gŵarchae yd oed yndaŵ. A medyliaŵ a oruc py wed y gallei gaffel<sup>4</sup> kyffur<sup>5</sup> y<sup>6</sup> ymdidan ae vraŵt; kanys ef a dybygei y kaffei bop<sup>7</sup> un onadunt<sup>8</sup> ell deu rydit a gŵaret yn hollaŵl, pei<sup>9</sup> 10 keffynt ymdidan y gyt. A gŵedy na chaffei fford arall yn y byt, eillaŵ y wallt<sup>10</sup> ae varyf a oruc, a chymryt telyn yn y laŵ, ac yn rith erestyn a gŵaryyd dyuot ym plith y llu ar llasteu. Ar clymeu<sup>11</sup> a ganei ef a dangossynt y vot yn telynyaŵr.<sup>12</sup> Ac or diwed gŵedy na thybygei neb 15 y uot ef yn tywyssaŵc falst mal yd oed, nessau a oruc parth a muroed y gaer dan ganu y telyn. A gŵedy y adnabot or gŵyr o vyŵn, y dynu<sup>13</sup> a orugant ŵrth raffeu y myŵn. A gŵedy gŵelet ohonaŵ y vraŵt, ymgaru a orugant megys na ry ymwelynt<sup>14</sup> drŵy laŵer o yspeit kyn 20 no hynny. Ac val yd oedynt uelly yn medyliaŵ ac yn keissaŵ ystryŵ py wed y gellynt ymrydhau odyo, ac yn annobeithaŵ oe rydit, nachaf eu kenadeu yn dyuot o Germania, a whe chan llog yn llaŵn o varchogyon aruaŵc gantunt, a Cheldric yn dywyssaŵc arnadunt, ac yn 25 disgynu yn yr Alban.

5. A gŵedy clybot hynny o Arthur, ymadaŵ a oruc ynteu ar dinas rac petruster ymlad ar veint nifer honno,<sup>1</sup> a mynet odyo hyt yn Lundein. Ac yno galŵ attaŵ a oruc hoŵl wyrda y deyrnas yscolheigon a lleygyon, ac 30

(Ch. 4). 1 baldŵf, 2 ac ynda, 3 gellŵg, 4 kaffel, 5 kyffur, 6 om., 7 kanys ef a thybygei pop, 8 ohonunt, 9 bei, 10 ben? 11 ar crychyaŵen add., 12 telynaŵr 13 tynnu, 14 nar ymwelynt

(Ch. 5). 1 hvnnv

ymgyghor ac 6ynt beth a wnelynt<sup>2</sup> am hynny. Sef a ga6ssant o gyghor y k6nsli h6nn6; anuon kenadeu a orugant hyt ar Ho6el<sup>3</sup> vab Emyr Lyda6, brenhin Brytaen Vechan, y uenegi ida6 yr ormes a dathoed gan y Paganyeit  
 5 ar<sup>4</sup> ynys Prydein. Kanys nei uab y<sup>5</sup> ch6aer oed Howel<sup>3</sup> y Arthur. A g6edy clybot o Howel<sup>3</sup> y ryfel ar aflonyd6ch a oed ar y ewythyr, erchi parattoi llyges a oruc,<sup>6</sup> a chynulla6 pymtheg mil o uarchogyon arua6c. Ac ar y g6ynt kyntaf a gafas yn y ol, y deuth y borth Ham6nt  
 10 yr tir y<sup>7</sup> ynys Prydein. Ac Arthur ae haruolles ynteu or enryded y g6edei aruoll g6r kyfurd a h6nn6; ac yn vynyeh ymgaru<sup>8</sup> bop eilwers.

6. Ac odyna g6edy l1ithra6 ychydic o dieuoed,<sup>1</sup> 6ynt a gyrchassant parth a Chaer L6ytcoet, yr hon [a elwir]<sup>2</sup>  
 15 Lincol yr a6r honn, ac yssyd ossodedic yn y wlat a elwir Lindyseï ar benn mynyd r6g d6y auon. Ac 6rth y gaer honno yd oed y Paganyeit yn eisted. A g6edy eu dyuot yno y gyt ac eu holl niferoed, ymlad a orugant ar Saeson. Ac aglywedic aerua a 6naethant o honunt.<sup>3</sup>  
 20 Kanys chwe mil onadunt a dyg6ydassant yn yr un dyd h6nn6. Rei oc eu llad, ereill oc eu bodi<sup>4</sup> a gollassant eu heneideu. Ac 6rth hynny rei<sup>5</sup> ereill yn gyfla6n o ofyn ada6 y dinas a orugant, a chymryteu ffo<sup>6</sup> yn lle diogel6ch udunt. Ac ny orffo6ys6ys Arthur oc eu hymlit hyt<sup>7</sup> yn  
 25 ll6yn Kelydon. Ac yno ymgynull o bop lle a orugant oc eu fo,<sup>8</sup> a medylia6<sup>9</sup> g6rth6ynebu y Arthur. Ac odyna g6edy dechreu ymlad, aerua a 6naethant or Brytanyeit gan eu hamdiffyn ehunein yn wra6l; kanys o wasca6t y g6yd yn eu kanhorth6y yd oedynt yn aruer o daflu  
 30 ergytyeu,<sup>10</sup> ac y gochelynt 6ynteu<sup>11</sup> ergytyeu y Brytanyeit.

(Ch. 5). 2 wnelhynt, 3 hvel, 4 y, 5 om., 6 a oruc om., 7 om., 8 yd amblygu y ymgaru

(Ch. 6). 1 dydyeu, 2 a elwir, 3 ohonu, 4 yn yr afonoed *add.*, 5 y rei, 6 fo yn y lle, 7 hyt pan deuthant hyt, 8 oc eu fo a orugant, 9 odyno *add.*, 10 kanys o wasgavt y gvyd yn eu kanhorthvy yd arnerynt, 11 om.

A phan welas Arthur hynny, yd erchis ynteu trychu y coet or parth hōnnō yr llōyn, a chymryt y kyffyon hynny ar traōsprenneu<sup>12</sup> ac eu gossot yn eu kylch, ac eu gŵarchae yno megys na cheffynt vynet odyo, yny ymrodynt idaō, neu yny vydynt veirō o newyn. A 5 gŵedy daruot gŵneuthur y kae, y dodes Arthur y varchogyon yn vydinoed yg kylch y llōyn. Ac yno y buant uelly tri dieu a their nos. A phan welas y Saeson nat oed dim bōyt gantunt, rac eu marō oll o newyn ōynt a odologyssant<sup>13</sup> y Arthur y<sup>14</sup> gellōg yn ryd 10 y eu llogeu y uynet y eu gŵlat; ac adaō idaō ynteu eu heur ac eu haryant ac eu holl sŵllt, a theyrnet idaō bop<sup>15</sup> blōydyn o Germania; a chadarnhau hynny gan rodi gŵystlon. Ac Arthur a gauas yn y gyghor kymryt hynny y gantunt, ac eu gellōg<sup>16</sup> y eu llogeu. 15

7. Ac ual<sup>1</sup> yd oedynt<sup>2</sup> yn rŵygaō moroed yn mynet tu ae gŵlat, y bu ediuar gantunt gŵneuthur<sup>3</sup> yr amot hōnnō ac Arthur; a throssi eu hōyleu drachefyn parth ac ynys Prydein, a dyuot y draeth Totneis<sup>4</sup> yr tir, a dechreu anreithaō y gŵladoed hyt yn Hafren, a llad y tir- 20 diwollodron a orugant. Ac odyo y kymerassant eu hynt hyt yg Kaer Vadon, ac eisted ōrth y gaer, ac ymlad a hi. A gŵedy menegi hynny<sup>5</sup> y Arthur, ryfedu a oruc meint eu tŵyll ac eu hyskymundaōt,<sup>6</sup> ac yn diannot crogi eu gŵystlon. Ac ymadaō a oruc ar Yscoteit ac ar 25 Ffichteit yd oed yn y<sup>7</sup> kywarsagu. A bryssyaō a oruc y distryō y Saeson. Goualus oed am adaō Howel ap<sup>8</sup> Emyr Lydaō yn glaf yg Kaer Alclut o ōrthrōm heint. Ac or diōed gŵedy dyuot hyt y lle y gŵelei y Saeson, y dywaōt ef ual hyn: "Kany<sup>9</sup> bo teilōg gan yr 30 ysgymunedigyon Saeson<sup>10</sup> cadō ffyd ōrthyf i,<sup>11</sup> miui

(Ch. 6). 12 traws, 13 adologyssant, 14 eu, 15 heuýt pop, 16 gollvg

(Ch. 7). 1 mal, 2 oedyn, 3 wneuthur, 4 traeth tutneis, 5 hyn, 6 hyscymundaōt, 7 yny eu, 8 hvel mab, 9 kyny, 10 tvyllwyr anudonavl *add.*, 11 vrthym ni?

a gadwaf ffyd ŵrth Duó; ac y gyt a hynny oe nerth<sup>12</sup>  
 ynteu a dialaf hedió waet vvg kiótaótwyr arnadunt.<sup>13</sup>  
 Góisgóch aóch arueu, wyr, góisgóch, ac yn ŵraól kyrchón  
 y bratwyr hynn. Heb petruster<sup>14</sup> gan ganhorthóy Crist  
 5 ni a orfydón.'

8. A gúedy dywedut o Arthur hynny, Dyfric archescob  
 Kaer Lion ar Wysc a safadó ar ben bryn goruchel, a  
 dywedut ual hynn a oruc: "Ha wyrda," heb ef, "y rei  
 yssyd arderchaó o gristonogaól ffyd ohonaóch,  
 10 kyuodóch; koffeóch waet aóch kiótawtóyr, yr hónn yssyd  
 ellygedic dróy urat y Paganyeit racco; kanys tragyóydaól  
 waratwyd yó yóch, onyt ymrodóch y amdiffyn aóch  
 gólat ach rydit. Ac ŵrth hynny ymledóch dros aóch  
 gólat, ac or byd reit ywch, diodefóch ageu drosti.  
 15 Kanys yr agheu honno a vyd budugolyaeth a buched  
 yr eneit. Póy bynhac hedió a el y agheu, ef ehunan  
 a ymryd yn wiraberth y Duó, y gúr a vu teilóg gantaó  
 rodi y eneit dros y vrodyr. Ac ŵrth hynny póy bynhac  
 ohanaóch a lader yn yr ymlad hónn, bit yr agheu honno  
 20 yn benyt idaó ac yn vadeueint oe bechodeu, y dan amot  
 nas gochelo, or damóeina y dyuot."

9. A gúedy kymryt bendyth y gúr hónnnó, bryssyaó  
 a oruc paób y wisgaó eu harueu ymdanunt, ac ufudhau  
 y gymenediweu yr archescob. Ac yna Arthur a wiscaó  
 25 ymdanaó lluruc a oed teilóg y vrenhin. Penffestin eureit  
 yskythredic ac aróyd dreic a adassóyt oe benn. Taryan a  
 gymerth ar y ysgóyd, yr honn a elóit Góenn, yn yr hon  
 yd oed deló yr arglóydes Veir yn yskythredic; kanys ym  
 pop yg a reit y galóei ef arnei ac y coffei. Ac a róymóyt  
 30 a Chaletuólch y gledyf goreu, yr hónn a wnathoedit yn  
 ynys Avallach. Gleif a deck[a]adó y deheu ef, yr hónn  
 a elóit Ron; vchel oed hónnnó a llydan ac adas y aerua.

(Ch. 7). 12 ae y gyt ac nerth, 13 arnadunt vy, 14 a heb petrus

Ac odynd gŵedy llunyaethu y bydinoed o bop parth, y Saeson yn herŷyd eu deuaŷt kyrchu yn leŷ a ŷnaethant, ac ar hyt y dyd yn ŷraŷl gŵrthŷynebu yr Brytanyeit. Ac or diwed gŵedy troŷŷi yr heul ar y dygŷydedigaeth, achub mynyd maŷr, a oed yn agos udunt, 5 a ŷnaeth y Saeson, a chynal hŷnnŷ yn lle caŷtŷll udunt; a chan ymdiret yn amylder eu nifer tybygu bot yn digaŷn vdunt o gedernit y mynyd. A gŵedy dŷyn or heul y dyd araŷll rac ŷyneb, Arthur ae lu a eŷkynnaŷd pen y mynyd. Ac eiŷŷoes llaŷer o wyr a golles ef; kanyŷ haŷs 10 oed yr Saeson o penn y mynyd argywedŷ yr Brytanyeit [noc yr Brytanyeit] yg gŵrthŷyneb y mynyd argywedŷ yr Saeson. Ac or diwed gan vŷyhau grym a llaŷur, gŵedy caŷŷel or Brytanyeit penn y mynyd, yn y lle ŷynt a dangoŷŷaŷŷant eu deheuoed yr Saeson. Ac yn erbyn 15 hynny y Saeson yn ŷraŷl a oŷŷodaŷŷant eu bronoeŷ yn eu gŵrthŷyneb ŷynteu, ac oc eu hoŷll angerd ymgynhal yn eu herbyn. A gŵedy treulaŷ llaŷer or dyd uelŷly, lliidiaŷ a oruc Arthur rac hŷyret y gŵelei y vudugolyaeth yn dyuot idaŷ. Ac ar hynny noethi Caletŷŷlch a oruc, 20 a galŷ enŷ yr arglŷydes Ueir; ac o vuan ruthur kyrchu y lle teŷaf y gŵelei vydinoed y Saeson. A phŷy bynhac a gyfarŷŷei ac ef, gan alŷ enŷ Duŷa o vn dyrnaŷt y llaŷei. Ac ny orŷŷoŷyŷŷaŷd ar vn ruthur honno, hyt paŷn ladaŷd a Chaletŷŷlch ehun trugein wyr a phetŷar can ŷr. A 25 gŵedy gŵelet or Brytanyeit hynny, teŷhau eu toruoed a wnaethant ŷynteu ae ymlit ynteu, ac o bop parth udunt gŷneuthur aerua. Ac yn y lle y dygŷydaŷŷant Golgrim a Balŷŷŷlf y vraŷt a llaŷer o vilyoed y gyt ac ŷynt. A phan welas Cheldric perigyl y gedymdeithon, yn y lle 30 heb annot ymchoelut a oruc y gyt ar rei ereill ar ffo.

10. A gŵedy caŷŷel o Arthur y uudugolyaeth honno,

<sup>a</sup> enŷ duŷ : MS. duŷ duŷ.

- ef a erchis y Gadŵr iarll Kernyŵ erlit y Saeson, hyt tra  
 vryssyei ynteu yr Alban. Kanys menegi ar daroed  
 idaŵ ry dyuot yr Yscotteit ar Ffichteit y ymlad a Chaer  
 Alclut, y lle yd adaŵssei ef Howel y nei yn glaf. Ac  
 5 ŵrth hynny y bryssyei ynteu yno rac caffel y gaer arnaŵ.  
 Ac odyna Kadŵr tyŵyssaŵc Kernyŵ a deg mil y gyt ac  
 ef a ymlynaŵd y Saeson. Ac nyt yn eu hol yd aeth,  
 namyn achubeit eu llogeu yn gyntaf a oruc, rac caffel  
 onadunt diogelŵch nac amdiffyn or llogeu. A gŵedy  
 10 caffel eu llogeu ohonaŵ, doddi a oruc y marchogyon  
 aruaŵc goreu a oed ar y helŵ yndunt, rac caffel or Saeson  
 ford udunt, os yno y kyrchynt. A gŵedy daruot  
 cadarnhau y llogeu arnunt uelly, ar vrys ymchoelut a  
 oruc ar y elynyon ac eu llad heb drugared, gan eilenŵi  
 15 gorchymynneu Arthur amdanunt. Rei o deudyblic  
 boen a gyŵarsegit, a rei onadunt o oergrynedic callonneu  
 a ffoynt yr coedyd ac yr llŵyneu, ereill yr mynyded ar  
 gogofeu y geissaŵ yspeit y achŵanegu eu hoedel. Ac  
 ordiwed gŵedy nat oed udunt neb ryŵ diogelŵch, yr hyn  
 20 a dihegis onadunt yn vriŵedic, ŵynt a ymgynullassant<sup>a</sup>  
 hyt yn ynys Danet. A hyt yno tyŵyssaŵc Kernyŵ ae  
 hymlynaŵd gan eu llad. Ac ny orffoŵyssaŵd hyt pan  
 las Cheldric; ac eu kymell ŵynteu oll y laŵ gan rodi  
 gŵystlon.
- 25 11. Ac yna gŵedy kadarnhau tagnefed ar Saeson, yn  
 y lle mynet a oruc yn ol Arthur hyt yg Kaer Alclut, yr  
 hon ry daroed y Arthur y rydhau y gan yr Yscotteit ar  
 Fichteit. Ac odyna y kyrchaŵd Arthur ae lu hyt y Mureif,  
 y wlat a elŵir o enŵ arall Reget. Ac yno y gŵarchaeaŵd  
 30 ef yr Yscotteit ar Fichteit, y rei kyn no hynny a  
 ymladyssynt yn erbyn Arthur. A gŵedy eu dyuot ar  
 ffo hyt y wlat honno, ŵynt a aethant hyt yn Llyn

<sup>a</sup> MS. ymgynullassant.



Lumonŷy, a chymryt yr ynysed a oedynt yn y llyn yn gedernit udunt. Kanys tri ugein ynys a oedynt yn y llyn, a thri ugein karrec, a nyth eryr ym pop karrec. A rei hynny pop Kalan Mei a doynt y gyt. Ac ar y lleis a genynt yna dynyon y wlat honno a adnebydei y damŷeineu 5 a delei yn y vlŷdyn rac ŷyneb. Ac y gyt a hynny tri ugein auon a redei yr llyn. Ac ny redei or llyn namyn vn avon yr mor. Ac yr ynysed hynny y foyssynt y gelynyon y geissaŷ amdifryn o gedernit y llyn. Ac ny dygrynoes udunt namyn ychydic. Kanys kynullaŷ 10 llogeu a wnaeth Arthur, a chylchynu yr avonoed ar llyn, hyt na chaffei neb vynetodyno. A phymtheg ni[w]arnaŷt y bu yn eu gŷarchae uelly, hyt pan vuant veirŷ hyt ar vilyoed.

12. Ac mal yd oed Arthur yn eu gŷarchae uelly, 15 nachaf vrenhin Iŷerdon yn dyuot a llyghes gantaŷ ac amylder o bobloed achyfyethydyon yn borth yr Yscotteit ar Freinc. Ac ŷrth hynny ymadaŷ a oruc Arthur ar llyn, ac ymchoelut y arueu yn y Gŷydyl, ar rei hynny gan eu llad heb drugared a gymhellŷys ar ffo 20 y eu gŷlat. A gŷedy y uudugolyaeth honno ymchoylut draegefyn elchŷyl y vynnu dileu kenedyl yr Yscotteit ar Fichteit hyt ar dim. A gŷedy nat arbedei neb megys y keffit, ymgynnullaŷ y gyt a ŷnaethant escyb y druan wlat honno y gyt ae hyscolheigon or a oed darystygedic 25 udunt, y gyt ac escyrn y saint ac eu creireu. Ac yn troet noethon y deuthant hyt rac bron Arthur, ac erchi y drugared dros atlibin y bobyl honno, ac ar eu glinyeu y wediaŷ hyt pan drugarhaei ŷrthunt. Kanys digaŷn o berigyl a drŷc ry ŷnadoed udunt; kanyt oed reit idaŷ 30 dilit hyt ar dim yr hyn a dihagyssei onadunt. A gŷedy erchi trugared onadunt ar y wed honno, wylaŷ o warder a oruc Arthur, a rodi yr gŷyrda saint hynny eu harch.

13. A gŵedy daruot<sup>a</sup> hynny, syllu a oruc Hoŵel uab Emyr Lydaŵ ac enryfedu ansaŵd y Ilyn, y saŵl avonoed ar saŵl ynyssed ar saŵl gerric ar saŵl nythot eryrot a oed yn y Ilyn. Ac ual yd oed yn ryfedu hynny, Arthur a dyŵaŵt 5 ŵrthaŵ bot Ilyn araŵl yny ŵlat honno oed ryfedach no honno. Ac nyt oed bell odyo, ac ugeint troetued yn y hyt, a vgeint yn y Ilet, a hynny yn bedrogyl; a phedeir kenedyl o byscaŵt amryŵ yndi; ac ny cheffit byth un or rei hynny yn ran y gilyd. “Ac y mae Ilyn 10 araŵl,” heb ef, “yg Kymry ar lan Hafren, a dynyon y wlat honno ae geilŵ Lyn Liaŵn. Ar Ilyn honno, pan vo y mor yn Ilaŵn, y kymer y dŵfŵr yndaŵ ac y Iŵnc megys morgerŵyn, hyt na chudyo y glanneu. Ac y gyt ac yd ymchoelo y mor draegefyn y dreiaŵ, y gŵrthyt y Ilyn y 15 dŵfŵr a gymerei yndi, ac y bŵrŵ ohonei megys mynyd, hyt pan el dros y glanneu. Ac o damweinei yna vot neb yn sefyll ae wyneb att y Ilyn, o chyuarffei dim o asgeŵlwyrych hŵnnŵ ae dillat,<sup>b</sup> anaŵd vydei idaŵ ymdianc, hyt nas sucknei y Ilyn ef yndaŵ. Ac o bydei ynteu ae 20 gefyn attaŵ, yr nesseset vei idi yn sefyll, nyt argyŵedei idaŵ dim.”

14. A gŵedy hedychu ar Yscotteit y brenhin a aeth hyt yg Kaer Efraŵc, y anrydedu gŵylua y Nadolic a oed yn agos. A phan welas ef yr eglŵysseu gŵedy eu distryŵ 25 hyt y Ilaŵr, doluryaŵ yn uaŵr a oruc. Kanys gŵedy dehol Sansŵn<sup>c</sup> archescob ar gŵyrda maŵr enrydedus ereill y gyt ac ef, Ilosci yr eglŵysseu ar temleu a ŵnathoed y Saeson, a distryŵ gŵassanaeth Duŵ ym pop Ile. Kanys pan deuthant yr anreithwyr hynny, y foes Samsŵn archescob a seith escyb y gyt ac ef hyt yn Lydaŵ. Ac 30 yno yn enrydedus yd erbynyŵyt hyt y dyd diŵethaf oe

<sup>a</sup> MS. daruaŵt.<sup>b</sup> MS. dillan.<sup>c</sup> leg. Samsŵn.

vuched. Ac yno gŵedy galŵ paŵb y gyt or yscolheigon ac or bobyl o gyt gyghor paŵb yg kyt ef a ossodes Priaf y gaplan ehunan yn archescob yg Kaer Efraŵc. Ar eglŵysseu diŵreidedic hyt y llaŵr ef ae hatnewydŵys, ac ae hadurnaŵd<sup>a</sup> o grevydusson genveinoed o wyr a 5 gŵraged. Ar gŵyrda bonhedigyon dylyedaŵc a ry deholassei y Saeson ac a ducsynt tref eu tat, ef a rodes y baŵp eu dylyet ac eu hanryded.

15. Ac ym plith y rei hynny yd oedynt tri broder, a hanhoedynt vrenhinaŵl dylyet, nyt amgen, Leu uab 10 Kynuarch ac Vryen uab Kynuarch ac Araŵn uab Kynuarch. A chyn dyuot gormes y Saeson, y rei hynny a dylyynt tyŵyssogaeth y gŵledi hynny. Ac yr gŵyr hynny, megys y baŵp or dylyedogyon ereill, ef a vynnaŵd talu eu dylyet. Ac ŵrth hynny ef a rodes y 15 Araŵn vab Kynuarch Yscotlont. Ac y Vryen y rodes Reget dan y tervyneu. Ac y Leu uab Kynuarch (y gŵr yd oed y chwaer gantaŵ yr yn oes Emrys Wledic, ac yd oed idaŵ deu vab ohonei, Gwalchmei a Medraŵt), y hŵnnŵ y rodes tyw[y]ssogaeth Lodoneis a gŵledi ereill a 20 berthynei attei. Ac or diŵed gŵedy dŵyn yr ynys ar y theruyneu yn hollaŵl ar y<sup>b</sup> hen teilygdaŵt ae hedychu, ef a gymerth gŵreic. Sef oed y henŵ Gŵenhŵyfar, yr hŵnn a oed o uonhedickaf genedyl gŵyr Rufein, ac a uagyssit yn llys Kadŵr iarll Kernyŵ. Pryt honno ae 25 thegŵch a orchyfygei ynys Prydein.

16. A phan deuth y gŵanŵyn araf rac ŵyneb, ef a barattoes llyges ac a [a]eth hyt yn Iŵerdon. Kanys honno a vynei y goreskyn idaŵ ehun. Ac ual y deuth yr tir, nachaf Gillamŵri vrenhin Iŵerdon ac amylder [o] 30 bobyl gantaŵ yn dyuot yn erbyn Arthur wrth ymlad ac ef.

<sup>a</sup> MS. hardurnaŵd.

<sup>b</sup> ar y: ae MS.

A gŵedy dechreu ymlad, yn y lle y bobyl noeth diarueu a ymchoelyssant drachefyn ar ffo yr lle y keffynt wascaŵt ac amdiffyn. Ac ny bu vn gohir yn dala Gillamŵri ae gymell ŵrth ewyllys Arthur. Ac ŵrth hynny holl  
 5 tywyssogyon Iŵrdon rac ofyn a doethant, ac o agreiff a ymrodassant oc eu bod yn wyr y Arthur.

17. A gŵedy daruot idaŵ oresgyn holl Iŵrdon ae hedychu, Arthur a aeth hyt yn Islont yn y lyges. A gŵedy ymlad ar bobyl honno, ef ae goresgynnŵys. Ac odyndros yr  
 10 nnyssed ereill yd aeth y glot ef, ac na allei vn teyrnas gŵrthŵynebu idaŵ. Doldan brenhin Godlont a Gŵinwas vrenhin Orch oc eu bod a deuthant y ŵrhau idaŵ gan dalu teyrnget idaŵ bop blŵydyn. Ac odyndros gŵedy llihraŵ y gayaf hŵnnŵ heibaŵ, Arthur a ymchoelaŵd  
 15 drachefyn hyt yn ynys Prydein, y atneŵydu ansaŵd y deyrnas ac y gadarnhau tagnefed yndi. Ac yno y bu deudeg mlyned ar vntu.

18. Ac yna [y] gŵahaŵd attaŵ marchogyon deŵr clotuaŵr o arall wladoed a phell teyrnassoed ac amylhau  
 20 y deulu, megys yd oed kyghoruynt gan teyrnassoed pell y wrthaŵ meint clot y lys, a ryodres\* y teulu ae molyant. A cheissaŵ a wnaei baŵp kyffelybu a discyblu y wrth lys Arthur, ac y ŵrth y varchogyon ae deulu. Kanyt oed dim gan vn dŵlyedaŵc yn y teyrnassoed pell y ŵrthunt,  
 25 ony ellynt ymgeffelybu a marchogyon Arthur oc eu gŵiscoed ac oc eu harueu ac oc eu marchogaeth. A gŵedy ehedec y glot ae volyant ae haelder dros eithafoed y byt, ofyn a gymerassant brenhined tramor teyrnassoed racdaŵ, rac y dyuot y oresgyn eu kyfoetheu ac eu  
 30 gŵladoed. Ac ŵrth hynny rac gofeilon a phrydereu, sef a ŵnaei paŵb ohonunt atnewydu y keyryd ar dinassoed ar tyreu ar kestyll, ac adeilat ereill o neŵyd yn lleoed cryno.

\* MS. rootdres.

Sef achaws oed hynny, o delei Arthur am eu penn, megys y keffynt y lleoed kadarn hynny yn amdiffyn, or bei reit.

19. A gúedy gúybot o Arthur bot y ofyn velly ar baúp, ymardyrchael a oruc ynteu a medylas goresgyn yr holl Europpa. Sef oed hynny, trayan y byt. Ac odyna 5 parattoi llyges a oruc. Ac yn gyntaf kyrchu Lychlyn a oruc, hyt pan vei Leu uab Kynuarch y das gan y chwaer a ónelei yn vrenhin yno. Kanys nei [v]ab whaer oed Leu uab Kynuarch y vrenhin Lychlyn a uassei uaró yna. Ac ef a gymynassei y urenhinyaeth y Leu y nei; 10 ac ny buassei teilóg gan y Lychlynwyr hynny, namyn góneuthur Ricólf yn vrenhin arnadunt a chadarnhau eu kestyll ac eu dinassoed, gan dybygu gallu górhóynebu y Arthur. Ac yn yr amser hónnó yd oed Walchmei uab Leu yn deudegmlóyd, gúedy y rodi oe ewythyr ef yg 15 gwassanaeth Suplius bab Rufein. Ac y gan Suplius y kymerth ef arueu yn gyntaf. A gúedy dyfot Arthur, megys y dyóespóyt ucho, y traeth Lychlyn, Ricólf a holl uarchogyon y wlat y gyt ac ef a deuth yn erbyn Arthur, a dechreu ymlad ac ef. A gúedy gellóg lláer 20 o greu a gwaet o bop part[h], or diwed y Brytanyeit a oruant gan lad Ricólf a lláer oe wyr y gyt ac ef. A gúedy caffel or Brytanyeit y uudugolyaeth, kyrchu y dinassoed a orugant ac eu llosci, a gúascaru eu pobloed. Ac ny orfoyssasant hyt pan daruu udunt goreskyn holl 25 Lychlyn a Denmarc. A gúedy daruot hynny, ef a urdaód Leu uab Kynuarch yn vrenhin yn Lychlyn.

20. Ac odyna yd hólalód ynteu ae llyges hyt yn Freinc. A gúedy kyweiraó y toruoed, dechreu anreithaó y wlat o bop parth a orugant. Ac yn yr amser hónnó 30 yd oed Frollo yn tywyssaó yn Freinc y dan Les amheraódr Rufein yn [y] llywyaó. A gúedy clybot o Frollo dyuotedigaeth Arthur, ef a gynullaód holl uarchogyon Freinc, ac a deuth y ymlad ac Arthur; ac

- ny allŷys gŵrthŷnebu idaŵ. Kanys gyt ac Arthur yd oed holl ieuencitit yr ynyssed a oresgynassei. Ac ŵrth hynny kymeint o lu a dywedit y uot gantaŵ ac yd oed anaŵd y vn tywyssaŵc neu y neb y erbynyaŵ na
- 5 goruot arnaŵ. Ac y gyt ac ef hefyt yd oed y ran oreu o Freinc, yr honn a ry ŵnathoed y haelder yn rŵymedic oe garyat ynteu. A gŵedy gŵelet o Frollo y dygŵydaŵ ef yn y ran waethaf or ymlad, yn y lle adaŵ y maes a oruc y gyt ac ychydic o nifer, a ffo hyt ym Paris; ac
- 10 yno kynullaŵ y wasgaredic bobyl attaŵ a chadarnhau y gaer, a mynu elchŵyl ymlad yn erbyn Arthur o ganhorthŵ[y] y gymodogyon. Yn dirybud y deuth Arthur ae lu y warchae ynteu yn y dinas. A gŵedy llithraŵ mis heibaŵ, doluryaŵ a oruc Frollo o welet y
- 15 bobyl yn aballu rac newyn. A gofyn a oruc y Arthur a vynnei eu dyuot eŵl teu y ymlad; ar hŵn a orfei onadunt, kymerei gyfoeth y llall heb lad neb or deu lu. Sef achaŵs y kynnigyei ef hynny. Gŵr maŵr hydŵf oed Frollo, ac anueitraŵl y leŵder ae gedernyt. Ac o achaŵs
- 20 ymdiret yn y nerthoed yd archei ef y Arthur dyuot yn neilltuedic y ymlad ac ef, o tybygu kaffel fordŷiechyt o hynny. A llaŵen uu Arthur wrth y genadŵri honno. Ac yn y lle anuon at Frollo y dywedut y vot yn dyuot, ac yn baraŵt y wneuthur yr amot hŵnnŵ ac ef ae gadŵ.
- 25 21. A gŵedy kadarnhau yr amot hŵnnŵ o bop parth, ŵynt a deuthant eŵl teu hyt y myŵn ynys odieithŷr y dinas; ar pobloed o bop parth yn aros y syllu py damwein a darffei y rydunt. Ac yno y deuthant yn hard wedus gyweir ar deu uarch enryfed y meint ae buanet,
- 30 hyt nat oed paraŵt y neb adnabot y bŵy y delei y uudugolyaeth onadunt. A gŵedy sefyll onadunt a drychafel y harŵydon o bop parth, dangos<sup>a</sup> yr

<sup>a</sup> MS. A dangos.

ysparduneu yr meirych a orugant, a gossot o bop vn ar y gilyd y dyrnodedu mŷhaf a ellynt. Ac eissoes kywreinach yd arwedŷys Arthur y leif gan ochel dyrnaŷt Frollo. Arthur ae gŷant ym pen y vron, ac yn herŷyd y nerth ef ae byryaŷd hyt y daear. Ac yn y lle noethi y 5 gledyf a oruc, a mynu llad y ben. A Frollo a gyfodes yn gyflym, ac a gleif gossot ar varch Arthŷr yn y dŷyvron dyrnaŷt agheuaŷl, hyt paŷ dygŷydassant Arthur ae varch yr llaŷr. A phan welsant y brenhin yn syrthaw, abreid vu eu hattal heb torri eu hamot, 10 ac o un vryt kyrchu y Freinc. Ac mal yd oedynt yn torri eu kygreir, nachaf Arthur yn kyuodi yn gyflym wychyr, ac yn drychafel y taryan ac yn kyrchu Frollo. A sefyll yn gyfagos a wnaethant, a neŷidyaŷ dyrnodedu, a llafuryaŷ pob un ageu<sup>a</sup> y gilyd. Ac or diŷed Frollo 15 a gauas kyfle; a tharaŷ Arthur yn y tal a ŷnaeth. A pheĩ na ry bylei y cledyf ar vodrŷyeu y benffestin, ef a vuasseĩ agheuaŷl or dyrnaŷt hŷnnŷ.<sup>b</sup> A gŷedy gŷelet o Arthur y waet yn cochi y taryan ae arueu, ennynu o flamychedic lit ac o ŷychyr irlłoned a oruc. A 20 drycha[fel] Caletfŷlch ac oe hŷll nerthoed gossot a oruc, ar helym ar penffestin a phen Frollo a hŷlłes yn deu hanner hyt y dŷy yscŷyd. Ac or dyrnaŷt hŷnnŷ dygŷydaŷ a wnaeth Frollo, ac ae sodleu maedu y daear,<sup>c</sup> a gellŷg y eneĩt gan yr ŷybyr. A gŷedy honni hynny 25 dros y lluoed, bryssyaŷ a oruc y kiŷtaŷtwyr, ac agori porth y dinas ae rodi y Arthur.

22. A gŷedy caffel y uudugŷlyaeth honno o Arthur, ranu y lu a oruc yn deu hanner. Y neĩll ran oe lu a rodes y Hoŷel uab Emyr Lydaŷ, ŷrth vynet y darestŷg 30 Gŷitart tyŷyssaŷc Peitaŷ. Ac ynteu ehun a[r] ran arall gantaŷ y oresgyn y gŷlatoed ereĩll yn eu kylch. Ac yn y

<sup>a</sup> MS. ogeu<sup>b</sup> MS. honnŷ.<sup>c</sup> MS. daeayar.

Ile y deuth Howel vab Emyr Lydaŵ yr wlat. Ef a gyrchŵys y keyryd ar dinassoed; a Gŵittart gŵedy Ilaŵer o ymladeu yn ofalus a gymhellŵys y ŵrhau y Arthur; ac odynd Gŵasgŵin o flam a hayarn a anreithŵys; ae  
5 tyŵyssogyon a darestygŵys y Arthur.

23. A gŵedy Iithraŵ naŵ mlyned heibaŵ, a daruot y Arthur oresgyn hoŵl wladoed Freinc ŵrth y vedyant ehun, ef a deuth elchŵyl y Baris. Ac yno y dellis lys. Ac yno gŵedy galŵ paŵb or yscolheigon ar Ileygyon,  
10 kadarnhau a ŵnaeth ansaŵd y teyrnas, a gossot kyfreitheu, a chadarnhau hedŵch dros yr hoŵl teyrnas. Ac yna y rodes ef y Vedwyr y bentrullyat Normandi a Fflandrys. Ac y Gei y bensŵydŵr y rodes ef yr Angiŵ a Pheittaŵ, a Ilaŵer o wladoed ereiŵl yr dylyedogyon ereiŵl  
15 a oedynt yn y wassanaethu. Ac odynd gŵedy hedychu a thagnefedu pob Ile or dinassoed ar pobloed uelly, pan yttoed y gŵanŵyn yn dyuot, Arthur a ymhoeles y ynys Prydein.

24. Ac ual yd oed gŵylua y Sulgŵyn yn dyuot, gŵedy  
20 y veint uudugolyaetheu hynny o bop Ile, y gyt a diruaŵr leŵenyd ef a vedylyŵys dala Ilys yn ynys Prydein, a gŵisgaŵ y goron am y ben, a gŵahaŵd attaŵ y brenhined ar tyŵyssogyon a oedynt wyr idaŵ o bop Ile a orescynnyssei, ŵrth enrydedu gŵylua y Sulgŵyn yn vrenhinaŵl  
25 enrydedus, ac y atneŵydu kadarnaf tagnefed y rydunt. A gŵedy menegi ohonaŵ y vedŵl y gyghorwyr ae anŵlylt, ef a gauas yn y gyghor dala y lys yg Kaer Lion ar Wysc. Kanys or dinassoed kyvoethockaf oed ac adassaf yr ueint wylua honno. Sef achaŵs oed. Or neiŵl  
30 parth yr dinas y redei yr auon uonhedic honno Wysc. Ac ar hyt honno y doynt y brenhined, a delhynt dros y moroed, yn y Ilogeu hyt y dinas. Ac or parth arall gŵeirglodyeu a foresti yn y theckau. Ac y gyt a hynny adeiladeu a Ilyssloed brenhinaŵl a oedynt yndi oe myŵn,



a thei eureit, megys nat oed yn y teyrnassoed tref a gynhebyckyt y Rufein o ryodres namyn hi. Ac y gyt a hynny arderchaŵc oed o dŵy eglŵys arbenhic; vn o honunt yn ardyrchafedic yn enryded y Vyl verthyr, a chŵfeint o werydon yn talu molyant y Duŵ yndi yn 5 wastat dyd a nos yn enrydedus urdasseid; arall a oed yn enryded y Aaron kedymdeith y merthyr hŵnnŵ, a chŵfent yn honno a ganonwyr reolaŵdyr. Ac y gyt a hynny y dryded archescobaŵt a phenaf yn ynys Prydein oed. Ac y gyt a hynny arderchaŵc oed o deu cant yscol 10 o athraŵon a doethon, a ed[ne]bydynt kerdetyat y syr ac amryfaelon gelfydodeu ereill. Kanys yn yr amser hŵnnŵ y keffit yndi y seith gelfydyt; a[r] rei hynny drŵy gerdetyat y syr a venegynt y Arthur llaŵer or damweineu a delhynt rac llaŵ. Or achŵysson [hynny] oll y mynnŵys 15 Arthur yno dala llys. Ac odyndy gellŵg kenadeu drŵy amryfaelon teyrnassoed a gŵahaŵd paŵb a orucpŵyt o deyrnassoed Ffreinc ac o amryfaelon ynyssed yr eigaŵn, o[r] a dylyynt dyuot yr llys.

25. Ac ŵrth y wys honno y deuthant yno : Araŵn uab 20 Kynuarch brenhin Yscotlont, Vryen y vraŵt brenhin Reget, Katŵallaŵn llaŵ[h]ir brenhin Gŵyned, Kadŵr llemenic tywyssaŵc Kernyŵ. Tri archescob ynys Prydein : archescob Lundein, ac archescob Kaer Efraŵc, a Dyfric archescop Kaer Lion ar Wysc; a phenaf 25 onadunt oed dan bab Rufein, ac y gyt a hynny eglur oed oe wassanaeth ae uuched; kanys pob kyfryŵ glefyt or a uei ar dyn, ef ae gŵaretei drŵy y wedi. Ac y gyt a hynny ŵynt a deuthant y tyŵyssogyon or dinassoed bonhedic, nyt amgen, Morud iarll Kaer Loyŵ, Meuruc 30 o Gaer Wyragon, Anaraŵt o Amŵythic, Kynuarch iarll Kaer Geint, Arthal o Warwic, Owein o Gaer Leon, Ionathal o Gaer Idor, Cursalem o Gaer Lyr, Gŵallaŵc ap Leenaŵc o Salsbri, Boso o Ryt Ychen. Ac odieithyr

hynny Ilaŕer o wyrda, nyt oed lei eu boned nac eu teilygdaŕt nor rei hynny, nyt amgen, Dunaŕt Vŕr uab Pabo post Prydein, Keneu uab Coel, Peredur uab Elidyr, Grufud uab Vogoet, Rein uab Elaŕt, Edelin  
 5 vab Keledaŕc, Kyngar uab Bangaŕ, Kynnar Gorbanyon, Miscoet Cloffaŕc, Run uab Nŕython, Kynuelyn [uab] Trunyaŕ, Kadell uab Vryen, Kyndelic uab Nŕython. Ac y gyt a hynny Ilaŕer o wyrda a oed ryhir eu henŕi. Ac y gyt a hynny or ynyssed yn eu kylch : Gillamŕri  
 10 brenhin Iwerdon, Melwas brenhin Islont, Doldan brenhin Gotlont Gŕynw brenhin Orc, Leu uab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn, Echel brenhin Denmarc. Ac o Ffreinc y deuthant : Hodlyn tywyssaŕc Ruthyn, Leodgar iarll Bŕlŕyn, Bedŕyr pentruŕlyat duc Normandi,  
 15 Borel o Cenomaŕs, Kei pensŕydŕr duc yr Angiŕ, Gŕittart o Beittaŕ, ar deudec gogyfarch o Freinc, a Gerein Garannŕys oc eu blaen yn dywyssaŕc arnadunt, Howel uab Emyr Lydaŕ brenhin Brytaen Vechan, a Ilaŕer o ŕyrda a oed darestygedic idaŕ y gyt ar ueint darmerth a  
 20 chyniret mulyoed a meiryh, megys yd oed dyrys eu datkanu a ryhir eu hyscriuenu. Ac odieithyr hynny ny thrigywys un tywyssaŕc y tu hŕn yr Yspaen ny delei ŕrth y wys honno. Py ryfed oed hynny? Haelder Arthur ae glot ae volyant yn ehedec dros y byt a  
 25 dynassei baŕp yn rŕ[y]medic oe garyat.

26. Ac or diŕed gŕedy ymgynullaŕ paŕb yr gaer ar ŕylua yn dyuot, yr archescyb a elwit yr Ilys ŕrth wiscaŕ y goron am ben y brenhin. Ac odyndy Dyfric archescob a gant yr offeren. Kanys yn y archescobty yd oedit  
 30 yn dala Ilys. Ac or diwed gŕedy gŕisgaŕ y vrenhinaŕl wisc am y brenhin a theckau y ben o goron y teyrnas ae deheu or deyrnwialen, ef a ducpŕyt yr eglŕys benaf, ac or tu deheu ac or tu asseu idaŕ y deu archescob nyn gynhal. Ac y gyt a hynny petŕar brenhin, nyt amgen,

brenhin yr Alban, a brenhin Dyuet, a brenhin Góyned, a brenhin Kernyó, yn heróyd eu breint ac eu dylyet, yn aróein petóar cledyf eureit noethon yn y vlaen. Ac y gyt a hynny lláer o gófenod amryfaelon vrdassoed yn eu processio o pop parth yn ol ac ym blaen yn kanu 5 amryfaelon gyóydolaetheu ac organ. Ac or parth arall yd oed y vrenhines yn y brenhinwisc, ac escyb o bop parth<sup>1</sup> yn y dóyn hitheu y eglóys y mynachesseu,<sup>2</sup> a phedeir góraged y petwar brenhin, a dywedassam ni uchot, yn aróein pedeir clomen<sup>3</sup> purwen<sup>4</sup> yn y blaen yn 10 heróyd eu breint óynteu, ar góraged yn enrydedus gan diruaór leóenyd yn kerdet yn y hol.<sup>5</sup> Ac or díóed góedy daruot y processio<sup>6</sup> ym pob vn or dóy eglóys, kyndecket a chyndigrifet y kenit y kywydolaetheu<sup>7</sup> ar organ ac na ódynt y marchogyon py le gyntaf y 15 kyrchynt;<sup>8</sup> namyn yn torfoed pob eilwers y kerdynt y honn yr aór hon ac yr llall góedy hynny. A pheí treulit y dyd yn góból yn dóywaól wassanaeth, ny magei dim blinder y neb. Ac or díóed góedy daruot yr offereneu ym pob vn or dóy eglóys, y brenhin ar 20 vrenhines a diodassant eu brenhinwisgoed y amdanunt.<sup>9</sup>

27. Ac odynd y brenhin a aeth yr neuad ar góyr oll y gyt ac ef. Ar vrenhines ar góraged oll y gyt a hi<sup>1</sup> y neuad y vrenhines, gan gadó hen gynefaót Tro, pan enrydedynt y góyluaeau maór, y góyr y gyt ar góyr yn 25 bóyta, ar góraged y gyt ar góraged yn wahanedic. A góedy kyflehau<sup>2</sup> paób y<sup>3</sup> eisted yn heróyd y deissyfei y deilygtaót, Kei bennsóydór yn wiskedic o ermynwisc, a mil<sup>4</sup> y gyt ac ef o vn ryó adurn a hynny<sup>5</sup> o veibon dylyedogyon, a gychwynassant y wassanaethu or gegin 30 anregyon. Ac or parth arall Bedwyr a mil o veibon

(Ch. 26). 1 idi *add.*, 2 machesseu, 3 colomen, 4 gvynyon, 5 yn ol, 6 prosessivn, 7 kywydolyaetheu, 8 a gedynt, 9 y amdanadunt

<sup>7</sup>Ch. 27). 1 hitheu, 2 kyfavnheu (?) 3 yn, 4 mil o wyr, 5 ac ynteu

gŷyrda y gyt ac ynteu yn wisgedic o amryuaelon wisgoed yn gŷassanaethu gŷirotu or vedgeŷl. Ac or parth arall yn llys y vrenhines aneirf o amyllder gŷassanaethwyr yn wisgedic o amryfaelon wisgoed yn herŷyd eu defaŷt  
 5 yn talu eu gŷassanaeth yn diwall. Ar petheu hynny ae ryotres pei ascrifenŷn, gormod o hyt a blinder a ŷnaŷn yr ystoria. Kanys ar y veint teilygdaŷt honno yd oed<sup>6</sup> ynys Prydein megys y racvlaenei yr hoŷl ynyssed o amyllder eur ac aryant ac alafoed dayaŷl.<sup>7</sup> A phy  
 10 varchaŷc bynhac a vynnei<sup>8</sup> vot yn glotuaŷr yn llys Arthur, o vn ryŷ wisc yd aruerynt,<sup>9</sup> ac o vn ryŷ arueu, ac o un ryŷ dyŷygyat<sup>10</sup> marchogaeth. Y gorderchwaged o vn lliŷ wisgoed ac o un dyŷygyat<sup>10</sup> yd aruerynt. Ac ny hydei teilŷg gan un wreic garu<sup>11</sup> vn gŷr, ony bei y uot  
 15 yn brofedic teirgŷeith y milŷryaeth. Ac uelly diŷeirach y gŷneynt<sup>12</sup> y gŷraged a gŷeŷl, ar gŷyr yn glotuorussach oc eu karyat.

28. Ac or diŷed gŷedy daruot bŷyta a chy[ch]wynnu y ar y byrdeu, allan odieithyr y dinas yd aethant y  
 20 chŷare<sup>1</sup> amryfaylon chwaryeu.<sup>2</sup> Ac yn y lle marchogyon yn dangos arŷydon, megys kyt bydynt<sup>3</sup> yn ymlad yn iaŷn ar y maes. Ar gŷraged y ar y muroed ar bylcheu yn edrych ar chware.<sup>4</sup> Ereill yn bŷrŷ mein, ereill yn saethu, ereill yn rydec,<sup>5</sup> ereill yn gŷare gŷydbŷ[y]ll, ereill  
 25 yn gŷare taplas. Ac uelly<sup>6</sup> drŷy bop<sup>7</sup> kyfryŷ amryuaelon dychymygeu<sup>8</sup> gŷaryeu<sup>9</sup> treulaŷ yr hyn a oed yn ol or dyd gan diruaŷr leŷenyd, heb lit a heb gyffro<sup>10</sup> a heb gynhen. A phŷy bynhac a vei vudugaŷl yn y gŷare, Arthur drŷy amlaf rodyon ae henrydedei.<sup>11</sup> A gŷedy treulaŷ y tri  
 30 dieu kyntaf uelly,<sup>12</sup> y petwryd dyd galŷ paŷp a wnaeth-

(Ch. 27.) 6 yr dothoed, 7 aualoed daeravl, 8 vynhei, 9 aruerhynt, 10 diwygyat, 11 karu, 12 ymwneynt

(Ch. 28.) 1 wareu, 2 waryen, 3 beynt, 4 ar y gvareu, 5 redece, 6 y velly, 7 pop, 8 dychymygyon, 9 a gvaryeu, 10 a heb gyffro *om.*, 11 henrydedhei, 12 y velly

pŷt or a oedynt yg gŵassanaeth, a thalu<sup>13</sup> y baŵp y wassanaeth ae lafur herŷyd ual<sup>14</sup> y dylyynt. Ac yna y rodent<sup>15</sup> y dinassoed, ar keŷtyll, ar tir, ar dayar, ar escobaethieu,<sup>16</sup> ar archescobaethieu,<sup>17</sup> ar manachlogoed, ar amryuaelon urdasseu, megys y gŵedei y baŵp or ae 5 dylyei.<sup>18</sup>

29. Ac yna y gŵrthodes Dyfric archescob y archescobaŷt ae teilygdaŷt. Kanys gŵeill oed gantaŷ bot yn didrifŵr a buchedu yn y didryf no bot yn archescob. Ac yn y le ynteu y gossodet Dewi<sup>1</sup> eŷythyŷ y[r]<sup>2</sup> brenhin yn 10 archescob yg Kaer Lion ar Wysc.<sup>3</sup> Buched hŵnnŷ oed agreiffi<sup>4</sup> dayoni<sup>5</sup> y baŵp or a gymerassei y dysc ynteu. Ac yn<sup>6</sup> lle Samsŷn<sup>7</sup> archescob Lydaŷ drŷy anoc Howel<sup>8</sup> uab Emyr Lydaŷ y gossodet Teilaŷ escob<sup>9</sup> Lan Daf, yr hŵn a glotuorei y uuched, ae deuodeu da a dangossynt 15 y uot yn ŷrda. Ac odyneu escobaŷt Gaer<sup>10</sup> Vudei y Veugant, ac escobaŷt Gaer<sup>10</sup> Wynt y Dywan,<sup>11</sup> ac escobaŷt Lincol y Aldelmi.

30. Ac val yd oedynt velly yn llunyaethu pob peth, nachaf deudegwyr aeduet eu hoet, enrydedus y gŵed, 20 a cheig [o] olyfwyd<sup>1</sup> yn llaŷ bop vn onadunt yn arŷyd eu bot yn genadeu, ac yn kerdet yn araf, ac yn kyfarch gŵeill y Arthur, ac yn y annerch y gan Les amheraŷdyŷ Rufein, ac yn rodi llythyŷ yn y laŷ, ar ymadraŷd hŵnn<sup>2</sup> yndaŷ.

25

31. "Les amheraŷdyŷ Rufein yn anuon y Arthur yŷ hynn a haedŷys. Gan enryfedu<sup>1</sup> yn uaŷr enryfed yŷ genyf i dy greulonder di athrudannaeth.<sup>2</sup> Enryfedu<sup>3</sup>

(Ch. 28). 13 thallu, 14 om., 15 rodet *recte*, 16 escobyathieu, 17 ar archescobaethieu om., 18 y paŷb ac y dylyei

(Ch. 29). 1 *in marg.*, 2 yr, 3 arvyŷc om., 4 agriff, 5 a dayoni, 6 yny, 7 sampsŷn, 8 hywel, 9 yn escob yn, 10 kaer, 11, dŷywan?

(Ch. 30). 1 o oliwyd, 2 ymadrodyŷon hynny

(Ch. 31). 1 anryfedu, 2 athrudanyaeth, 3 hefyŷ *add.*

ydŷyf gan goffau y sarhaedeu<sup>4</sup> a wnaethost di<sup>5</sup> y Rufein. Ac anheilŷg yŷ genyf nat atwaenost<sup>6</sup> dy vynet oth dieithyr<sup>7</sup> dy hun, ac na wydut ac nat yttŷyt<sup>8</sup> yn medylŷaŷ py veint trymder yŷ gŷneuthur kodyant y sened Rufein, 5 yr honn a ŷdost di<sup>9</sup> bot yr hoŷl vyt yn talu gŷassanaeth idi. Kanys y deyrnget a orchymynŷyt y dalu idi, yr hŷn<sup>10</sup> a gafas Ulkassar a ŷaŷer o amherodron ereiŷl gŷedy ef a chyn no minheu<sup>11</sup> drŷy laŷer o amseroed—a hŷnnŷ gan dremygu<sup>12</sup> gorchymyneu kymeint ac vn 10 sened Rufein—a gamryvygeist di<sup>13</sup> y attal. Ac y gyt a hynny ti a dugost Bŷrgŷyn ac ynyssed yr eigaŷn yn hollaŷl, brenhined y rei hynny, hyt tra yttoed Rufeinaŷl uedyant yn eu medu, a dallasant teyrnget yr amherodron a vuant kyn no minheu. A chanys or veint sarhaedeu<sup>14</sup> 15 hynny y barnŷys sened Rufein y minheu iaŷn y genhyt ti, ŷrth hynny minheu a ossodaf teruyn ytti yr Aŷst kyntaf yssyd yn dyuot, dyuot ohonat titheu hyt yn Rufein y wneuthur iaŷn or saŷl sarhaedeu<sup>14</sup> hynny, ac y diodef y vraŷt a uarnho sened Rufein arnat. Ac ony 20 deuy uelŷy,<sup>15</sup> miui a gyrchaf dy teruynheu.<sup>16</sup> A megys y ranho y clefydeu,<sup>17</sup> mi ae ranaf<sup>18</sup> ac a lafuryaf y dŷyn drachefyn ŷrth sened Rufein.”

32. A gŷedy datkanu y ŷlythyr hŷnnŷ rac bron Arthur ar brenhined ar tywyssogion a oedynt y gyt ac ef, ef 25 ac ŷynt a aethant y gyt hyt yn tŷr y keŷri y gymryt kyghor py beth a ŷnelhynt yn erbyn y kymynediŷeu<sup>1</sup> hynny. Ac ual yd oedynt yn esgynnu<sup>2</sup> gradeu y tŷr, kadŷr iarŷl Kernyŷ megys gŷr ŷaŷen y uedŷl<sup>3</sup> a dywaŷt yr ymadraŷd hŷnn : “ Kyn no hynn ofyn a ry fu ranaf i 30 rac goruot o lesged y Brytanyeit o hir hedŷch, a cholŷi

(Ch. 31). 4 sarahedeu, 5 wnaethosti, 6 atwaenosti, 7 odieithyr, 8 ydŷyt, 9 ŷdosti, 10 hon, 11 thitheu, 12 tremygu, 13 gamryfygeisti, 14 sarahedeu, 15 dohy y velŷy, 16 terfynheu, 17 clefyfeu, 18 kymhellaf

(Ch. 32). 1 kymenediven, 2 yskynnu, 3 y vedŷl om.

clot eu milŕyaeth, or honn y buant hŕy eglurach no neb  
o genedloed y byt yn hollaŕl. Sef achaŕs yŕ. Yn y lle  
y peitter ac<sup>4</sup> arueru o arueu, ac aruer or ŕydbŕyll ar  
daplas a serch gŕraged, nyt oes petrus yna llygru o  
lesged py beth bynhac a ry fei<sup>5</sup> o nerth yno a chedernit 5  
ac enryded a chlot. Kynys<sup>6</sup> pump mlyned hayach ar<sup>7</sup>  
ethynt yr pan yttym ni yn arueru or ryŕ seguryt hŕnnŕ  
ar digrifŕch, a heb arueru o diŕyll ymlad. Ac ŕrth  
hynny Duŕ yr mynu<sup>8</sup> an rydhau ni or llesged honno  
a gyffroes gŕyr Rufein yn an herbyn, hyt pan alwem 10  
ni an clot ac an milŕyaeth ar y hen gynefaŕt."

33. A gŕedy dyŕedut o Gadŕr yr ymadrodyon hynny  
a llaŕer o rei ereill, or diwed ŕynt a deuthant yr  
eisteduau. A gŕedy eisted o baŕp yn y le, Arthur a  
dyŕaŕt ual hynn ŕrthunt: "Vyg kedymdeithon ar rŕyd 15  
ac ar dyrys, molyant yr rei hyt hynny<sup>1</sup> ac yn rodi eu<sup>2</sup>  
kyghoreu ac eu<sup>3</sup> milŕyaeth, ac yr<sup>4</sup> aŕr honn o vn vryt  
rodŕch aŕch kyghor, ac yn doeth racvedylyŕch py beth  
a uo iaŕn y ateb yn erbyn yr attebyon hynn Kanys  
py beth bynhac<sup>5</sup> a racvedylyer<sup>6</sup> yn da yn y blaen y gan 20  
doethon, pan del ar ŕeithret, haŕs vyd y diodef. Ac  
ŕrth hynny haŕs y gallŕn ninheu diodef ryfel gŕyr  
Rufein, os o gyffredin gyfundeb a chytgyghor yn  
doeth y racuedylyŕn py wed y gallom ni gŕahanu ac eu  
ryfel ŕynt. Ar ryfel hŕnnŕ, herŕyd y tebygaf i, nyt 25  
maŕr reit yn y ofynhau. Kanys andylyedus y maent  
hŕy<sup>7</sup> yn erchi teyrnget o ynys Prydein. Kanys ef a  
dyŕeit dyllyu y taluŕdaŕ ef ŕrth y talu<sup>8</sup> y Ulkassar<sup>9</sup>  
ac y ereill gŕedy hŕnnŕ, a hynny o achaŕs teruysc ac  
anuundeb<sup>10</sup> y rŕg an hendateu<sup>11</sup> ninheu, a dugassant<sup>12</sup> 30

(Ch. 32). 4 o, 5 ryffei, 6 kanys, 7 a, 8 mynnu

(Ch. 33). 1 yr rei a profais hyt hyn, 2 om., 3 y, 4 ar, 5 bynac,  
6 racweler, 7 ŕy, 8 dalu, 9 ulkassar, 10 annundab, 11 hendadeu,  
12 ducant

wyr Rufein yr ynys honn, ac o dreis<sup>12</sup> y gŵnaethant yn trethaŵl.<sup>13</sup> Ac ŵrth hynny py beth bynhac a gaffer drŵy na thŵyll na chedernit,<sup>14</sup> nyt o dyllet y kynhellir hŵnnŵ. Pŵy bynhac a dycko treis, peth andylyedus a geis y 5 gynhal. A chanys andylyedus y maent ŵy yn keissaŵ teyrnget y genhym ni, yn gynhebic y hynny ninheu a deissyfŵn teyrnget y gantunt hŵy<sup>15</sup> o Rufein, ar kadarnaf ohonom ni kymeret y gan y llall.<sup>16</sup> Kanys or goresgynŵys<sup>17</sup> Ulkassar<sup>18</sup> ac amherodron ereill gŵedy 10 ef ynys Prydein, ac o achaŵs hynny yr aŵr honn holi teyrnget ohanei,<sup>19</sup> yn gynhebic y hynny minheu a varnaf dylu o<sup>20</sup> Rufein talu teyrnget y minheu. Kanys vy rieni ynheu gynt a oresgynnassant<sup>21</sup> Rufein ac ae kynhalassant, nyt amgen, Beli uab Dyfynwal gan 15 ganhorthŵy Bran y vraŵt duc Bŵrgŵyn, gŵedy crogi petwar gŵystyl ar hugeint<sup>22</sup> o dylwedogyon<sup>23</sup> Ruuein rac bron y gaer, ac ae dalyassant drŵy laŵer o amseroed. A gŵedy hynny Custenin mab Elen a Maxen mab Llywelyn—pob vn or rei hynny yn gar agos y mi o 20 gerenhyd,<sup>24</sup> ac yn vrenhined arderchaŵc o goron ynys Prydein—yr vn gŵedy y gilyd a gaŵssant amherodraeth Rufein. Ac ŵrth hynny pony bernŵch chŵi bot yn iaŵn y minheu deissyfeit teyrnget o Rufein? O Ffreinc ac or ynyssed ereill ny ŵrthebŵn ni udunt ŵy, kany doethant 25 y hamdiffyn, pan y goresgynassam,<sup>25</sup> nac oe gŵarafun. Ac ŵrth hynny ny ŵrthebŵn ni udunt hŵy<sup>26</sup> or rei hynny.”

34. A gŵedy teruynu o Arthur yr ymadraŵd, Howel<sup>1</sup> uab Emyr Llydaŵ a ŵrthebaŵd ym blaen<sup>2</sup> paŵb y ymadraŵd Arthur ual hyn: “Pei<sup>3</sup> traethei bop un<sup>4</sup> ohonom ni<sup>5</sup> a 30 medyliaŵ pob peth yn y uedŵl, ny thebygaf i<sup>6</sup> gallu

(Ch. 33). 12 treis, 13 treulaŵ, 14 gaffer a thvyll a chedernit, 15 vy, 16 teyrnget *add.*, 17 o gverysgynnvyys, 18 vlkassar, 19 oheni, 20 wyr *add.*, 21 weryskynassant, 22 hugein, 23 dylwedogyon, 24 gerenyd, 25 gveryscynassam 26 *om.*

(Ch. 34). 1 hywel, 2 ymlaen, 3 bei, 4 bavh, 5 oll *add.*, 6 thybygaf



o neb ohonam ni rodi kyghor gŵerthuaŵrogach<sup>7</sup> nac atdeb  
 grynoch na doethach nor hŵn a rodes doethineb<sup>8</sup> yr  
 arglŷyd Arthur ehun. Ac ŵrth hynny yr hyn a  
 racuedylŷaŵd<sup>9</sup> medŵl doeth anyanaŵl gŵastat,<sup>10</sup> ninheu  
 yn hollaŵl moli hŵnnŵ a dylyŵn ae ganmaŵl yn wastat. 5  
 Kanys yn herŵyd y dylyet a dyŵedy di, or<sup>11</sup> mynny di  
 kyrchu Rufein, ny phetrussaf<sup>12</sup> i yd aruerŵn ni or  
 uudugolyaeth, hyt tra vom ni yn amdiffyn an rydit,  
 hyt tra geissom ni an ŷaŵn y gan an gelynyon, y peth  
 y maent hŵy<sup>13</sup> yn gam yn y geissaŵ y gennym ninheu. 10  
 Kanys pŵy bynhac a geisso dŵyn y ureint ae dylyet gan  
 gam y gan arall, teilŵg yŵ idaŵ ynteu kolli y vreint ae  
 dylyet. Ac ŵrth hynny kanys gŵyr Rufein yssyd yn  
 keissaŵ dŵyn yr einym ni, heb amheu ninheu a dygŵn  
 y racdunt<sup>14</sup> yr eidunt, o ryd Duŵ gyfle y ymgyuaruot ac 15  
 ŵynt. A llyna ymgyfaruot damunedic yr holl vrytanyeit.  
 Lyma daroganneu<sup>15</sup> Sibli yn wir,<sup>16</sup> a<sup>17</sup> dyŵaŵt dyuot o  
 genedyl y Brytanyeit tri brenhin a oresgynynt<sup>18</sup>  
 Rufeinaŵl amherodraeth. Ar deu a ryfu, ac yr<sup>19</sup> aŵr  
 hon yd ym yth gaffael titheu yn drydyd,<sup>20</sup> yr hŵn y 20  
 tyfŵys<sup>21</sup> blaenŵed Rufeinaŵl enryded.<sup>22</sup> Or deu neur  
 deryŵ eilenŵi yn amlŵc, megys y dyŵedeist ti,<sup>23</sup> yr eglur  
 tyŵyssogyon<sup>24</sup> Beli a Chustenin;<sup>25</sup> pob un onadunt a  
 uuant amherodron yn Rufein. Ac ŵrth hynny bryssya  
 titheu<sup>26</sup> y gymryt y pe[t]h<sup>27</sup> y mae Duŵ yn y rodi itt. 25  
 Bryssya y oreskyn<sup>28</sup> y peth oe uod yssyd<sup>29</sup> yn mynu<sup>30</sup>  
 y oresgyn.<sup>28</sup> Bryssya y an hardrychafel<sup>31</sup> ni oll, hyt  
 pan yth ardrychauer titheu. Ac<sup>32</sup> ny ochelŵn ninheu  
 kymryt gŵelieu ac agheu, or byd reit.<sup>33</sup> A hyt pan

(Ch. 34). 7 gverthuorogach, 8 nor hŵn a racuedylŷaŵd racweledic  
 doethineb, 9 racvelas, 10 gvastadavr, 11 o, 12 phedrussaf, 13 vy,  
 14 dygyn racdunt vy, 15 darogan, 16 yn dyfot yn wir, 17 hi a, 18 weres-  
 cynynt, 19 ar, 20 ydym yn kafel y trydyd, 21 yr hŵn yd yttys yn adav,  
 22 anryded, 23 dywedeisti, 24 yn eglur y tywyssogyon, 25 chustenhin,  
 26 ditheu, 27 peth, 28 werescyn, 29 om., 30 oe vod add., 31 ardrychafel,  
 32 om., 33 in add.

geffych ti hynny, minheu ath gedymdeithockaf ti<sup>34</sup> a deg mil o varchogyon aruaŵc y gyt a mi y achŵanegu dy lu."

35. A gŵedy teruynu o Howel<sup>1</sup> y barabyl, Araŵn uab  
 5 Kynuarch brenhin Prydein a dywaŵt ual hynn: "Yr pan dechreuawd vy arglŵyd i dywedut y ymadraŵd, ny allaf i<sup>2</sup> traethu am tauawt y veint lewenyd yssyd ym medŵli. Kanys nyt dim gennyfi a rywnaetham<sup>3</sup> o ymladeu ar yr holl urenhined a oresgynnassam<sup>4</sup> ni hyt hynn, os  
 10 gŵyr Rufein a gŵyr Germania dihgant<sup>5</sup> yn diaruau<sup>6</sup> y genhym ni, a heb dial arnadunt yr aeruau a ŵnaethant ŵynteu oc an rieni ni gynt. A chanys<sup>7</sup> yr aŵr honn y mae darpar ymgyfaruot ac ŵynt, llawen yŵ genyf; a damunaŵ yd ŵyf y dyd yd ymgyfarffom ni ac ŵynt.  
 15 Kanys sychet eu gŵaet ŵynt yssyd arnaf i yn gymeint a phef gŵelŵn fynhaŵn oer<sup>8</sup> ger vy mron y yfet diaŵt ohonaei, pan vei arnaf diruawr sychet.<sup>9</sup> Oia Duŵ! gŵyn y uyt a arhoei y dyd hŵnnŵ! Melys a welieu genyf i<sup>10</sup> y rei a gymerŵn i neu y rei a rodŵn inheu, tra  
 20 neŵtyŵn an deheuoed y gyt an gelynyon. Ar agheu honno yssyd uelys, yr honn a diodefŵn yn dial<sup>11</sup> uy rieni am kenedyl, ac yn amdiffyn vy rydit, ac yn ardrychauel<sup>12</sup> an brenhin. Ac ŵrth hynny kyrchŵn yr hanher gŵyr<sup>13</sup> hynny; na safŵn yn eu kyrchu, hyt pan  
 25 orfom ni arnadunt ŵy gan dŵyn eu henryded,<sup>14</sup> yd aruerom<sup>15</sup> ni<sup>16</sup> o lawen uudugolyaeth. Ac y achŵaneckau dy lu ditheu minheu a rodaf dŵy vil o varchogyon aruaŵc heb eu pedyt."<sup>17</sup>

36. A gŵedy daruot y baŵp dywedut y peth a vynynt  
 30 yg kylch hynny, adaŵ a oruc paŵb nerth, megys y bei y

(Ch. 34). 34 gytymdeithockavn ditheu

(Ch. 35). 1 hvel, 2 allaffi, 3 genhym ar wnaetham, 4 werysgynassam, 5 diaghant, 6 diaerna, 7 achavs, 8 loyv eglur, 9 ohonaei—sychet om., 10 genhyfi, 11 gvaet add., 12 ardrychafel, 13 yr avr hon yr haner gvyr, 14 hanryded, 15 aruerhom, 16 ni oll, 17 pedyd

allu ae defnyd yn y wassanaeth. Ac yna y kahat o ynys Prydein ehun<sup>1</sup> trugein mil o varchogyon aruaŵc, heb deg<sup>2</sup> mil a adaŵssei urenhin Lydaŵ. Ac odyna brenhined yr ynyssed ereill (kany buassei aruer o varchogyon<sup>3</sup>) paŵb onadunt a edeŵis pedydgant y saŵl 5 a ellynt eu kaffel. Sef a gahat or chwech ynys, nyt amgen, Iwerdon ac Islont a Gotlont ac o<sup>4</sup> Orc a Lychlyn a Denmarc, chŵe<sup>5</sup> ugein mil o pedyt;<sup>6</sup> ac y gan tyŵyssogyon Freinc, nyt amgen, Ruthyn a Phortu a Normandi a Cenoman ar Angiŵ a Pheitaŵ, petwar ugein 10 mil o uarchogyon. Ac y gan y deudec gogyfarch<sup>7</sup> y deuthant<sup>8</sup> y gyt a Gereint deucant<sup>9</sup> marchaŵc a mil o varchogyon aruaŵc. A sef oed eiryf hynny oll y gyt, deu cant marchaŵc a their mil a phetŵar vgein mil a chanmil, heb eu pedyt,<sup>6</sup> yr hyn nyt oed haŵd eu gossot 15 yn rif.

37. A gŵedy gŵelet o Arthur paŵb yn baraŵt yn y reit ae wassanaeth, erchi a oruc y baŵp bryssyaŵ y wlat ac ymbaratoi, ac yn erbyn Kalan Aŵst bot eu kynadyl oll y gyt ym porth Barberfloi ar tir Lydaŵ, ŵrth gyrchu 20 Bŵrgŵyn odyo yn erbyn gŵyr Freinc. Ac y gyt a hynny menegi a oruc Arthur ŵrth genadeu gŵyr Rufein na thalei ef tyrnget udunt hŵy<sup>1</sup> o ynys Prydein. Ac nyt yr gŵneuthur iaŵn vdunt or a holynt yd oed ef yn kyrchu Rufein, namyn yr kymell teyrnget idaŵ ef o 25 Rufein, megys y barnassei ehun y dylyu. Ac ar hynny yd aethant y brenhined ar gŵyrda paŵb y ymbaratoi heb vn annot, erbyn yr amser teruynedic a ossodyssit udunt.

38. A gŵedy adnabot o Les amheraŵdyr yr atdeb a gŵassei y gan Arthur, drŵy gyghor sened Rufein ef a 30

(Ch. 36). 1 *om.*, 2 y deg, 3 varchogaeth, 4 *om. recte*, 5 whe, 6 pedyd  
7 gogyfurd, 8 doethant, 9 deudecant

(Ch. 37). 1 vy

ellygŷs kenadeu y wyssyaŷ brenhined y dŷfrein,<sup>1</sup> ac  
 erchi<sup>2</sup> dyuot ac eu lluoed gantunt y gyt ac ef ŵrth  
 oresgyn<sup>3</sup> ynys Prydein. Ac yn gyflym yd ymgynull-  
 assant yno Epistrophus<sup>4</sup> vrenhin Groec,<sup>5</sup> Mustensar  
 5 brenhin<sup>6</sup> yr Affric, Aliphantina urenhin yr Yspæn,  
 Hirtacus vrenhin Parth, Boctus brenhin Iudiff, Sertor<sup>7</sup>  
 brenhin<sup>6</sup> Libia, Serx vrenhin Nuri, Pandrasius brenhin<sup>6</sup>  
 yr Eifft, Missipia<sup>8</sup> brenhin<sup>6</sup> Babilon, Teucer duc Frigia,  
 Euander duc<sup>6</sup> Siria, Echion o Boeti, Ypolit o Creta,<sup>9</sup> y  
 10 gyt ar tywyssogyon a oedynt darestygedigyon udunt ar  
 gŷyrda. Ac y gyt a hynny o vrdas y senedwyr Les,  
 Kadell, Meuruc, Lepidus, Gaius, Metellus,<sup>10</sup> Octa,  
 Quintus, Miluius, Taculus, Metellus, Quintinus,  
 Gerucius.<sup>11</sup> A sef<sup>12</sup> oed eiryf hynny oll y gyt,  
 15 canŵr a thruein mil a phetŵar can mil.

39. A gŷedy ymgwyweiraŷ onadunt o bop peth or a vei  
 reit udunt, Kalan Aŷst hŷynt<sup>1</sup> a gymerassant eu hynt  
 parth ac ynys Prydein. A phan ŷybu Arthur hynny,  
 ynteu a orchymynŷs llywodraeth ynys Prydein y  
 20 Vedraŷt y nei uab y chŷaer, ac y Wenhŷvar vrenhines.  
 Ac ynteu ae lu a gychŷynŷs parth a phorthua<sup>2</sup> Hamtŷn.  
 A phan gafas y gŷynt gyntaf<sup>3</sup> yn y ol, ef a aeth yn y  
 logeu ar y mor.<sup>4</sup> Ac val yd oed uelly o aneiryf amylder  
 lløgeu yn y gylch, ar gŷynt yn rŷyd yn y ol, gan  
 25 leŷenyd yn rŷygaŷ y<sup>5</sup> mor, mal am aŷr haner nos,  
 gŷrthrŷm hun a disgynŷs<sup>6</sup> ar Arthur. Sef y gŷelei  
 drŷy y hun, arth yn ehedec yn yr aŷyr; murmur hŷnnŷ  
 ae odŷrd a lanwei y traetheu o ofyn ac aruthred. Ac y  
 ŵrth y gorlleŷin y gŷelei aruthyr<sup>7</sup> dreic yn ehedec, ac o

(Ch. 38). 1 dvyrein *recte*, 2 ac y erchi vdunt, 3 wereskyn, 4 epitrophus  
 5 goroece, 6 vrenhin, 7 settor, 8 mesipia, 9 greta, 10 metelus, 11 *For*  
*Quintus Jerucius A has Quintus milnius katulus metelus Quintus*  
*cerutius (?)*, 12 Ac ysef

(Ch. 39). 1 vynt, 2 phorth, 3 kyntaf, 4 ar y mor *om.*, 5 *om.*,  
 6 dygvydvys, 7 arthur

egglurder y llygeit yn goleuhau yr holl wlat. A phob vn or rei hynny a welei yn ymgyrchu, ac yn ymlad yn irat ac yn greulaón. Ac or diwed y gŵelei y raddyŵededic dreic yn kyrchu yr arth, ac ae thanaól anadyl yn y losgi, ac yn y vŵrŵ yn llosgedic yn y dayar. A 5 gŵedy duhunaó o Arthur, ef a datkanaó y weledigaeth<sup>8</sup> yr gŵyrda a o[e]dynt<sup>9</sup> yn y gylch. Ac ŷynt gan y dehogyl a dyŵedassant mae<sup>10</sup> Arthur a arŷydockaei y dreic, ar arth a arŷydockaei y kaŵr a ymladei ac ef, ar ymlad a welei y rydunt a arŷydockaei yr ymlad a vydei<sup>11</sup> 10 y rydaó ef ar kaŵr, ar uudugolyaeth a damweinhei<sup>12</sup> y Arthur or kaŵr. Ac amgen no hynny y tebygei<sup>13</sup> Arthur ehun uot y dehogyl. Kanys ef a dybygei y mae oe achaós ef ar amheraŷtyr<sup>14</sup> y gŵelei ef y vreidŷyt. A gŵedy rydec y nos, or diŵed pan yttoed gŵaŵr dyd yn 15 cochi tranoeth,<sup>15</sup> ŷynt a disgynnassant ym porthua<sup>16</sup> Barberflŷy yn Lydaó. Ac yn y lle tynu<sup>17</sup> pebylleu a wnaethant, ac yno aros brenhined yr ynyssed<sup>18</sup> ar gŵladoed ac eu llŷu atunt.

40. A gŵedy ymgynullaó paŵb y gyt or yd oedynt yn 20 aros, Arthur a gychŷynŷys odyño hyt yn Aŷgustudŵm, y lle y tybygei bot yr amheraŷdyr ae lu yn dyuot. A gŵedy y dyuot hyt ar lann yr Avon Wenn ym Bŵrgŷyn, ef a venegit idaó bot yr amheraŷdyr gŵedy pebyllaó nyt oed bell odyño, a chymeint o luoed gantaó ac y dywedit 25 nat oed neb a allei gŵrthŷynebu idaó. Ac yr hynny eissoes ny chynhyruaó d Arthur dim, namyn gossot y bebylleu ae luesteu ar lann yr auon, megys y gallei yn rŷyd ac yn ehang llunyaethu y lu, or bei reit idaó, yn y lle hŷnnŷ. Ac odynd yd anuones Arthur Boso o Ryt 30 Ychen a Gŵal[ch]mei uab Gŷyar a Gereint Garanŷys hyt

(Ch. 39). 8 vreidvyt, 9 oed, 10 y mae, 11 vei, 12 damweinei, 13 tybygei, 14 amheravdyr, 15 dranoeth, 16 ymhorthua, 17 tannu 18 ynyssod

ar amheraúdyr Rufein, y erchi idaó mynet o teruynau Freinc, neu tranoeth rodi kat ar uaes y Arthur, y wybot púy oreu onadunt a dylyei Ffreinc. Ac annoc a únaeth jeuencitit llys Arthur y Walchmei góneuthur górtgassed 5 yn llys yr amheraúdyr, megys y gellynt gaffel gosgymonn y ymgyuaruot a góyr Rufein.

41. Ac odyne y trywyr hynny a gerdassant at yr amheraúdyr, ac a archassant idaó mynet ymeith o Ffreinc, neu ynteu trannoeth rodi kat ar uaes y Arthur. Ac ual 10 yd oed yr amheraúdyr yn dyóedut nat mynet ohonei a dylyei, namyn dyuot oe hamdiffyn ac y llyóyaó, nachaf Quintinus nei yr amheraúdyr yn dywedut bot yn húy gorhoffed a bocsach y Brytanyeit noc eu gallu ac eu gleóder, a bot yn húy eu tauodeu noc eu clefydeu.
- 15 Ac órth hynny llityaó a oruc Góalchmei, a thynnu cledyf a llad y benn ger bronn y ewythyr. Ac yn y lle ar hynt kaffel eu meirych ac ymtynnu or llys ef ae gedym[d]eithon, ar Rufeinwyr ar veirych ac ar traet yn eu hymlit y geissaó dial y góyr arnadunt oc eu holl ynni.
- 20 Ac ual yd oed vn or Rufeinwyr yn ymordiwes a Gereint Garanóys, ef a troes arnaó, ac a gleif ae góant tróy y holl arueu a thróydaó ehun, yny vyd yr llaóy y ar y varch yn varó. Ac yna blyghau a oruc Boso o Ryt Ychen, a throi y varch a oruc, ar kyntaf a gyvaruu ac ef, ef a ossodes 25 arnaó yn y vogel, ac a rodes dyrnaót agheuaól idaó, a chymell arnaó ymadaó ae varch ac ymadassu ar dayar. Ac ar hynny nachaf Marell Mut senedór oe holl ynni yn keissaó dial Qóintilian ac yn ymordiwes a Góalchmei yn y ol ac yn mynnu y dala, pan ymchoelaó Góalchmei 30 arnaó yn gyflym, ac a chledyf llad y benn yn gyfuch ae dóy yscóyd; ac y gyt a hynny gorchymun idaó, pan elhei y uffern, menegi y Góintinal, yr húnn a ladassei ef yn y pebyll, bot yn amyl gan y Brytanyeit y ryó or hoffter húnnó. Ac odyne ymóascu ae gedymdeithon

a oruc Góalchmei ac eu hannoc, a llad o bop un ór; ar Rufeinwyr ar gúeyr ac ar clefydeu yn eu fustaó, ac ny ellynt nac eu dala nac eu búró. Ac ual yd oedynt geir llaó coet a oed yn agos udunt, ar Rufeinwyr yn eu herlit yn lut, nachaf chwe mil or Brytanyeit yn dyuot or coet 5 yn borth yr tywyssogyon a oedynt ar ffo, ac ar hynt yn dangos yr ysparduneu yr meirych, ac yn llanó yr aóyr o lefein a doddi eu taryaneu ar eu bronnoed ac yn deissyfyt kyrchu y Rufeinwyr ac yn y lle eu kymell ar ffo, ac o vn vryt eu herlit, a búró rei onadunt yr llaó, a dala ereill, 10 a llad ereill.

42. A gúedy menegi hynny y Petrius senedór, ef a gymerth degmil y gyt ac ef, a bryssyaó yn ganhorthóy y gedymdeithon,<sup>1</sup> ac yn y lle kymell y Brytanyeit ar fo yr coet y dathoedynt ohonaó. Ac eissoes nyt heb 15 wneuthur diruaó gollet yr Rufeinwyr. Kanys y Brytanyeit, kyt foynt, pan geffynt adóyeu kyfig a lleoed dyrys, aerua uaó a óneynt or Rufeinwyr. Ac ual yd yttoedynt húy yn ymladar y wed honno, nachaf Hydeir uab Mut a phump mil y gyt ac ef yn dyuot yn ganhorthóy 20 yr Brytanyeit. Ac yn y lle ymchoelut a wnaethant; ar rei a oedynt yn dangos eu kefnau ar ffo yr aó honno, yn y lle yd oedynt yn dangos eu bronnoed ac yn rodi gúrolyon dyrnodeu bop eilwers yr Rufeinwyr, ar Brytanyeit oc eu holl dihewyt yn damunaó milóryaeth. 25 Ac ny didorynt py damóein y dygúdynt yndaó, hyt tra gynhelynt eu clot ym milóryaeth, megys y dechreuysynt. Ar Rufeinóyr kymhennach y góneynt óy; kanys Petrius megys tyóyssaó da ae dysgei óynt yn doeth góers y gyrchu góers arall y ffo, megys y góelei yn dygrynoi 30 udunt. Ac uelly y góneynt golledeu maó yr Brytanyeit.

43. A phan welas Boso o Ryt Ychen hynny, galó a oruc attaó laóer or Brytanyeit gleóaf a óydat ar neilltu,

1. MS. gedyndeithon

- a dyôedut ôrthunt ual hyn : “ Dioer,” heb ef, “ kany  
heb wybot y an brenhin y dechreuassam ni yr ymlad  
hôn, reit oed yn ninheu ymoglyt rac an dygôydaû yn  
y<sup>1</sup> ran waethaf or ymlad. Ac os uelly y dygôydaû,  
5 kollet maûr oc an marchogyon a gollôn, ac y gyt a hynny  
an brenhin a dygôn ar gyffro ac irlloned ôrthym. Ac  
ôrth hynny gelûch aûch gleûder attaûch, a chanlynûch  
vinheu drôy vydinoed y Rufeinwyr. Ac o kanhorthûya  
an tyghetuennu ni, ae llad Petrius ae dala ni a orvydôn.”
- 10 44. Ac ar hynny dangos yr ysparduneu yr meiry ch a  
orugant, a thrôy vydinoed y marchogyon o ebrôyd  
ruthur mynet drostunt hyt y lle yd oed Petrius yn dysgu  
y gedymdeithon. Ac yn gyflym Boso a gyrchaûd  
Petrius a meglyt yndaû herôyd y vynûgyl a, megys y  
15 racdyôedassei, dygôydaû y gyt ac ef yr llad. Ac ôrth  
hynny ymgynullaû a ûneynt y Rufeinwyr y geissaû y  
ellûg y gan y elynyon. Ac or parth arall yd ympentyrrynt  
y Brytanyeit yn borth y Voso o Ryt Ychen. Ac yna y  
clyûit y lleuein ar gorderi; yna yd oed yr aerua diruaûr  
20 o bop parth, hyt tra ytoedynt y Rufeinwyr yn keissaû  
rydhau eu tyûyssaûc, ar Brytanyeit yn y attal. Ac yna  
y gellit gûybot pûy oreu a digonei a gûayû, pûy oreu a  
saetheu, pûy oreu a chledyf. Ac or diwed y Brytanyeit  
gan teûhau eu bydinoed a dugant eu ruthur ar  
25 karcharoryon gantunt drôy vydinoed y Rufeinûyr, hyt  
pan vydynt ym perued kedernit eu hymlad ehunein a  
Phetriusgantunt. Ac yn y lle ymchoelut ar yr Rufeinwyr  
ymdiueit oc eu tywyssaûc ac or ran vûyaf yn ûanach ac  
yn ûasgaredigach dangos eu kefneu a orugant ôrth ffo.  
30 Ac ôrth hynny estûg gantunt a ûnaeth y Brytanyeit, ac  
eu llad ac eu hyspeilaû, ac erlit y rei a floynt, a dala  
llaûer or rei a damunynt y eu dangos yr brenhin. Ac or



diwed gŵedy gŵneuthur llawer o berigleu a drŵc onadunt, y Brytanyeit ŷynt[eu] a ymchoelassant y eu pebylleu ar karcharoryon ac ar yspeileu gantunt. A chan leŷenyd ŷynt a dangossant Petrius ar karcharoryon ereill y gyt ac ef y Arthur. Ac ynteu a diolches udunt gan diruaŵr 5 leŷenyd eu llafur ac eu gŵassanaeth yn y aŵssen ef, gan adaŵ achŵaneckau eu henryded ac eu kyuoeth am eu milŵryaeth ac eu molyant. Ac yna yd erchis Arthur mynet ar carcharoryon hyt ym Paris y eu kadŵ, tra gymerit kyghor amdanunt. Ac yd erchis Arthur y 10 Gadŵr iarll Kernyŵ a Bedwyr a Rickart a Bosel ac eu teuluoed y gyt ac ŷynteu eu hebrŵg, hyt pan elhynt yn diogel, rac ofyn tŵyll y Rufeinwyr.

45. Ar Rufeinwyr y nos hono, gŵedy caffel onadunt gŵybot y darpar hŵnnŵ, a etholassant pymtheg mil o wyr 15 aruaŵc ac ae gellygassant hyt nos y ragot y fford y tebygynt eu mynet trannoeth, y geissaŵ rydhau eu karcharoryon. Ac yn tyŵyssogyon ar yr rei hynny y gossodet Ultei a Chadell a Chwintus senedŵr ac Evander vrenhin Siria a Sertor vrenhin Libia. Ar rei hynny 20 oll a gymerasant eu hynt, hyt pan gaŵssant y lle a vei adas gantunt y lechu, ac yno aros y dyd arnadunt.

46. Ar bore drannoeth kymryt eu fford a wnaeth y Brytanyeit ac eu karcharoryon parth a Pharis. Ac val yd oedynt yn dyuot yn agos yr lle yd oed y pyt y gan 25 eu gelynyon arnadunt, ac ŷynteu heb wybot dim or vrat nae thybyaŵ, yn dirybud eu kyrchu a oruc y Rufeinwyr, a dechreu eu gŵaskaru a mynet drostunt. Ac eissoes, kyt kyrchit y Brytanyeit yn dirybud, ny chahat yn diaruot, namyn yn ŵraŵl gŵrthŵynebu y eu gelynyon. 30 A rei a dodassant y gadŵ y karcharoryon, ac ereill yn vydinoed y ymlad. Ar vydin a ossodassant y gadŵ y carcharoryon a orchmynnassant y Rickert a Bedwyr. A thywyssogaeth y rei ereill a orchmynnŵyt y Gadŵr

iarll Kernyó, a Borel yn gyttwyssaó idaó. Ar Rufeinwyr kyrchu a wneynt heb geissaó na llunyeithaó eu góyr nae bydinaó, namyn oc eu ho llafur keissaó góneuthur aerua or Brytanyeit, hyt tra yttoedynt óynteu  
 5 yn bydinaó eu góyr ac yn eu hamdiffyn ehunein. Ac órth hynny gan eu góanhau yn ormod óynt yn dybryt a gollassynt eu karcharoryon, pei na danuonei eu tyghetuen vdunt damunedic ganhorthóy ar vrys. Kanys Góittart iarll Peittaó, góedy góybot y tóyll hónnó, a deuth a their  
 10 mil gantaó. Ac or diwed gan nerth Duó ar kanhorthóy hónnó y Brytanyeit a oruant, ac a talyssant eu haerua yr tóyllwyr. Ac eissoes yn y gyfranc kyntaf y collasant lawer. Kanys yna y collasant yr arderchaó tywyssaó Borel o Cenoman; yn kyuaruot ac Euander vrenhin Siria  
 15 yn vrathedic gan y waeó y dygýdóys. Yna y kollasant hefyt petóar góyr bonhedigyon, nyt amgen, Hirlas o Pirón a Meuruc o Gaer Geint ac Alidó o Dindagól a Hir uab Hydeir. Nyt oed haó kaffel góyr leóach nor rei hynny. Ac yr hynny ny chollasant y Brytanyeit  
 20 eu glewder,<sup>1</sup> namyn oc eu llaur kadó eu karcharoryon. Ac or diwed ny allyssant y Rufeinwyr diodef eu ruthur, namyn yn gyflym adaó y maes a ffo parth ac eu pebylleu, ar Brytanyeit yn eu herlit ac yn góneuthur aerua onadunt. Ac ny pheidassant yn eu dala ac yn eu llad,  
 25 hyt pan ladassant Vltei a Chade ll senedór ac Evander vrenhin Siria. A góedy caffel or Brytanyeit y vudugolyaeth honno, óynt a anuonassant y karcharoryon hyt ym Paris. Ar rei a dalyassant o newyd, óynt ae hym[ch]oelassant ar Arthur eu brenhin oe dangos, gan  
 30 adaó gobeith ho ll uudugolyaeth idaó; kanys nifer mor vychan a hónnó a geóssynt uudugolyaeth ar y saó llynyon hynny.

1. MS. gleuder

47. A gŵedy gŵelet o Les amheraŵtyr Rufein meint y gollet ar dechreu y ryfel, trŵm a thrist uu gantaŵ. A medylŵaŵ a oruc peidaŵ ae darpar am ymlad ac Arthur a mynet y dinas Aŵuarn y aros porth o newyd attaŵ y gan Leo amheraŵdyr. A gwedy caffel o honaŵ hynny 5 yn y gyghor, y nos honno ef a aeth hyt yn Legris. A gŵedy menegi hynny y Arthur, ynteu a raculaenŵys y fford ef. Ar nos honno, gan adaŵ y dinas ar y llaŵ asseu idaŵ, ef a aeth hyt y myŵn dyffryn y fford y kerdei Les amheraŵdyr ae lu. Ac yno y mynŵys ef bydinaŵ y 10 wyr. Ac ef a erchis y Vorud iarll Kaer Loyŵ kymryt attaŵ lleg o wyr a mynet ar neilltu yg gŵersyll, a phan welei uot yn reit ŵrthunt, dyfot yn ganhorthŵy. Ac odynd y nifer oll y am hynny a ranŵys yn naŵ bydin, ac ym pob bydin or naŵ chwe gŵyr a chwe ugeint a chwe 15 chant a chwe mil, ar rei hynny yn gyweir o bop arueu, ar rann o bop bydin yn uarchogyon ar rann araŵ yn bedyt, a thywyssogyon y dyscu pob bydin yn y blaen. Ac yr vydingyntaf y rodet Araŵn uab Kynuarch a Chadŵr iarll Kernyŵ, vn yn yr anher deheu ar llaŵ yn yr anher 20 asseu. Ac yr vydin araŵ y rodet Gereint Garanŵys a Boso o Ryt Ychen. Ac yr dryded y rodet Echel vrenhin Denmarc a Leu uab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn. Ac yr bedwared y rodet Howel uab Emyr Lydaŵ a Gŵalchmei uab Gŵyar, deu nei y Arthur. Ac yn ol y pedeir hynny 25 y gossodet pedeir bydin ereill drae kefyn ŵynteu. Ac yr gyntaf or rei hynny y rodet Kei bensŵydwr a Bedwyr bentrullyat. Ac yr nessaf idi y rodet Hodlyn iarll Ruthyn a Gŵittart iarll Peittaŵ; ac yr tryded Owein o Gaer Leon a Ionathal o Gaer Weir; ac yr petwared 30 Vryen Vadon a Chursalem o Gaer Geint. Ac Arthur ehun a etholes<sup>1</sup> lleg idaŵ o varchogyon aruaŵc o

1. MS. ae otholes

chwe gŵyr a chwe ugeint a chwe chant a chŵe mil. A rac bron Arthur sefyll y dreic eureit, yr honn a oed yn lle arŷyd idaŵ, megys y gellynt y gŵyr blin ar rei brathedic, pan gymhellei eu hagen<sup>1</sup> udunt, ffo dan yr arŷyd honno 5 megys y gastell diogel.

48. A gŵedy llunyaethu paŵb yn y ansaŵd, Arthur a dywaŵt val hynn ŵrth y varchogyon: " Vyg kytuar- chogyon kytdiodeuedic ymi,<sup>2</sup> chŵi a ŵnaethaŵch ynys Prydein yn arglŷdes ar dec teyrnas ar hugeint; y aŵch 10 deŵred chŵi ac y aŵch molyant y kytdiolchaf ynheu hynny, y molyant nyt yttyŵ yn paŵu nac yn dyffygyaŵ, namyn yn kynydu. Kyt ry foch chŵi ys pump mlyned yn arueru o seguryt heb arueru o arueu a milŵryaeth, yr hynny eissoes ny chollyssaŵch aŵch anyanaŵl dayoni, 15 namyn yn wastat parhau yn ach bonhedic dayoni. Kanys y Rufeinwyr a gymellassaŵch ar ffo, y rei a oed oc eu syberŷyt yn keissaŵ dŵyn aŵch rydit y gennŵch, ac yn vŵy eu nifer nor einym ni. Ac ny allasant sefyll yn aŵch erbyn, namyn yn dybryt ffo gan achub y dinas 20 hŵnn. Ac yr aŵr honn y doant o hŵnnŵ drŵy y dyffryn hŵnn y gyrchu Aŵuarn. Ac y am hynn yma y gellŵch chŵitheu eu kaffel ŵynt yn dirybud ac eu llad megys deueit. Kanys gŵyr y dŵyrein a debygant<sup>3</sup> bot llesked ynaŵch chŵi, pan geissynt gŵneuthur aŵch gŵlat yn 25 trethaŵl udunt a chwitheu yn geith udunt. Pony wybuant ŵy py ryŵ ymladeu a dyborthassaŵch chŵi y wyr Lychlyn a Denmarc ac y tywyssogyon Freinc, y rei a oreskynassaŵch chŵi, ac a rydhayssaŵch y ŵrth eu harglŷdiaeth waratŵydus ŵy? Ac ŵrth hynny, kan 30 gorfuam ni yn yr ymladeu kadarnaf hynny, heb amheu ni a orfydŵn yn yr ymladeu ysaŵn hynn, os o vn dihawyt ac o vn vryt y llafuryŵn y gyŵarsagu yr hanner

1. MS. hageu      2 MS. yni      3 *leg.* debygnt

gŷyr hynn. Py veint o enryded a medyant a chyfoeth a geiff paŷb ohonaŷch chŷi, os megys kytvarchogyon ffydlaŷn yd ufudheŷch chŷi ym gorchymynn ynheu? Kanys gŷedy gorffom ni arnadunt, ni a gyrchŷn Rufein, a ni a gaffŷn y medu hi. Ac velly keffŷch yr eur ar aryant 5 ar llysoed ar tired ar kestyll ar dinassoed; ac eu holl gyuoeth a geffŷch.” Ac val yd oed yn dyŷedut hynny ŷrthunt, paŷb o vn eir a gadarnassant bot yn gynt y diodefynt ageu noc yd ymedeŷynt ac ef, tra vei ef vyŷ or blaen. 10

49. A gŷedy gŷybot or amheraŷdyr y vrat yd oedit yn y darparu idaŷ, nyt ffo a oruc ef megys y darparyssei, namyn galŷ y leŷder attaŷ a chyrchu y dyffryn hŷnnŷ ar eu tor. A galŷ y tyŷyssogyon attaŷ a dywedut ŷrthunt val hyn: “Tadeu enrydedus o arglŷydiaeth, or rei y 15 dylyir kynal teyrnassoed y dŷyrein<sup>1</sup> ar gorlleŷin yn darestygedic vdunt, koffeŷch ych hendadeu, y rei yr gorescyn eu gelynyon ny ochelynt ellŷg eu priaŷt waet ehunein, namyn adaŷ agreiff molyant yr rei a delei gŷedy ŷynt. Ac velly yn vynyh y goruydynt. A chan 20 oruot y gochelynt agheu, kanys ny daŷ y neb namyn yr neb y gŷelho Duŷ, ar ansaŷd y mynho Duŷ, ar amser y mynho. Ac ŷrth hynny yd achŷaneckeynt hŷy gyfoeth Rufein ac eu molyant hŷy ac eu clot ac eu hadfŷynder ac eu haelder. Ac o hynny y dyrchelynt ŷynt ac eu 25 harglŷydiaeth ac eu hetiuedyon ar yr holl vyt. Ac ŷrth hynny gan damunaŷ kyffroi ynaŷch chwithheu y kyfryŷ hŷnnŷ yd anogaf i hyt pan alŷoch chŷi attaŷch aŷch anyanaŷl dayoni, a hyt pan safoch yndi gan gyrchu aŷch gelynyon yssyd yn aŷch aros yn y dyffryn hŷnn 30 gan deissyfyt y gennŷch aŷch dylyet. Ac na thebygŷch y mae rac eu hofyn ŷy y kyrcheis i y dinas hŷnn, namyn

1. MS. dŷyfrein

o tebygu an herlit ni ohonunt hŷy, ac yn deissyfyt kaffel ohonam aerua diruaŵr eu meint ohonunt. A chanys yn amgen y gŵnaethant hŷy noc y tebygassŵn i, gŵnaŵn ninheu yn amgen noc y tebygant ŷynteu. Deisyfŵn  
 5 ŷynt, ac yn leŵ kyrchŵn ŷynt. A chyt gorffont, diodefŵn ni yn da y rythur gyntaf y gantunt; a velly heb amheu ni a oruydŵn. Kanys y neb a safo yn da yn y rythur gyntaf, mynych yŵ y vynet gan uudugolyaeth yn llawer o ymladeu."

- 10 50. A gŵedy daruot idaŵ teruynu yr ymadraŵd hŵnnŵ a llawer o rei ereill, paŵb o vn dihewyt a rodassant eu dŵylaŵ gan tygu nat ymedewynt ac ef; ac ar vrys gwisgaŵ amdanunt eu harueu ac adaŵ Legrys a chyrchu y dyffryn, y lle yd oed Arthur gŵedy llunyaethu y  
 15 vydinoed. Ac yna gossot a ŵnaethant hŷynteu drŷy deudec bydin o varchogyon a phedyt yn herŷyd Rufeinaŵl deuaŵt o chwe gŷyr a thrugeint a chwe chant a chŵe mil ym pop bydin; ac ym pop vn ohonunt llyŵodyr, hyt pan vei o dysc hŵnnŵ y kyrchynt ac y  
 20 kilynt, pan vei dylyedus udunt, ac y gŵrthŷynebynt y eu gelynyon. Ac y vn or bydinoed y rodes<sup>1</sup> Les. Kade'll senedŵr o Rufein ac Aliphantina brenhin yr Yspaen, ac yr eil Hirtacus brenhin Parth a Meuruc senedŵr, ac yr tryded Bocus brenhin Nidif a Ganis  
 25 senedŵr, yr bedwared Qŵintus a Myrr senedŵr. Ar pedeir hynny a rodet yn y blaen. Ac yn ol y pedeir hynny y dodet pedeir ereill. Ac y vn or rei hynny y rodet Serx brenhin Ituri, ac yr eil Polites duc Ffrigia, yr tryded Pandrasius brenhin yr Eift, yr pedŵared duc  
 30 Bitinia. Ac yn ol y rei hynny pedeir bydin ereill. Ac y vn ohonunt y rodet Qŵintus Carucius, ac yr eil iarll Lelli Hosti, yr tryded Sulpius, yr pedŵared Marius

1. MS. yr adodes

senedŵr. Ac ynteu yr amheraŵtyr hŏnt ac yma, yn annoc y wyr ac yn eu dysgu py wed yd ymledynt. Ac ym perued y llu yd erchis ef sefyll yn gadarn eryr eureit, yr hŏnn a oed yn lle arŵyd idaŵ, ac erchi y baŵp or a ōehenit y ŵrth y vydin, gyrchu yno. 5

51. Ac or diŵed gŵedy sefyll paŵb yn erbyn y gilyd onadunt y Brytanyeit or ne[i]ll parth ar Rufeinwyr or parth arall, pan glyŵssant sein yr arŵydon, y vydin, yd oed brenhin yr Yspaen ae gedymdeith yny llywyaŵ, ymgyuarfot a orugant a bydin Araŵn uab Kynuarch a Chadŵr io iarll Kernyŵ, a hynny yn wychyr ac yn leŵ. Ac eissoes ny allyssant nae thorri nae gŵasgaru. Ac ual yd oedynt uelly yn ymlad yn dywal ac yn wychyr, nachaf Gereint Garanŵys a Boso o Ryt Ychen ac eu bydin yn eu kyrchu yn deissyfyt o rydec eu meiryh, ac yn tyllu eu gelynyon 15 ac yn mynet drostunt, hyt pan gyfarfuant a bydin brenhin Parth, yr honn a yttoed yn kyrchu yn erbyn bydin Echel brenhin Denmarc a Leu vab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn. Ac yna heb vn gohir o bop parth ymgymysgu a ōnaethant y bydinoed, a mynet paŵb dros 20 y gilyd onadunt; ac aerua diruaŵr y meint o bop parth, ar lleuein ar gorderi yn llanŵ yr aŵyr o son; ar rei brathedic yn maedu y dayar ac ae penneu ac eu sodleu, a thrŵy eu gŵaet yn terfynu eu buched. Ac eissoes y kollet kyntaf a deuth yr Brytanyeit. Kanys Bedwyr a 25 las, a Chei a vrathŵyt yn agheuaŵl. Kanys pan ymgyfarvu Vedwyr a brenhin Nidif, y brathŵyt a gleif yny dygŵydŵys. A hyt tra yttoed Gei yn keissaŵ dial Bedwyr, ym perued kat brenhin Nidif y brathŵyt ynteu. Ac eissoes o defawt <sup>1</sup> marchaŵc da, ar ystondard a oed 30 yn y laŵ gan lad a gŵasgaru y elynyon, agori fford idaŵ a oruc; ac ae vydin gantaŵ yn gyfan ef a doeth hyt ym

1. MS. dyfot

plith y wyr ehunan, pei nar gyfarffei ac ef vydin brenhin Libia. Honno a ŵasgarŵys y vydin ef yn hollaŵl, ac ynteu a ffoes a chorff Bedŵyr gantaŵ hyt y dan y dragon eureit.

Ac yna py veint o gŵynuan a oed gan wyr Normandi,  
 5 pan welsant gorff eu tyŵyssaŵc yn vriŵedic or saŵl welioed hynny? Py veint gŵynuan a ŵneynt wyr yr Angiŵ ŵrth welet gŵeliŵ Kei eu tyŵyssaŵc, pei kaffei neb enkyt y gŵynaŵ y gilyd gan y amdiffyn ehunan yg kyfrŵg y bydinoed gŵaetlyt?

10 52. Ac ŵrth hynny Hirlas nei Bedwyr yn gyffroedic o agheu Bedwyr a gymerth a gyt ac ef trychant marchaŵc, a megys baed koet trŵy blith llaŵer o gŵn kyrchu drŵy blith y elynaŵl vydinoed yr lle y gŵelei arŵyd brenhin Nidif, heb didarbot py beth a damŵeinei idaŵ gan gaffel  
 15 dial y eŵythyŵ ohonaŵ. Ac or diŵed ef a gafas dyuot hyt y lle yd oed vrenhin Nidif, ac ae kymmerth o blith y vydin, ac ae duc gantaŵ hyt y lle yd oed gorff Bedwyr, ac yno y dryllyaŵ yn drylleu man. Ac odyŵa goraŵ ar y gedymdeithon, a chan eu hannoc kyrchu eu  
 20 ge ynyon yn vynyŵh, megys gan atnewydu eu nerth, hyt pan yttoedynt eu gelynyon yn ofnaŵc ac eu callonoed yn crynu. Ac y gyt a hynny kyŵreinach y kyrchynt y Brytanyeit oe dysc ynteu, a chreulonach y gŵneynt aerua. Ac ŵrth hynny grym ac angerd oe annoc ef a  
 25 gymerassant y Brytanyeit, a dŵyn ruthur y eu gelynyon; ac o bop parth udunt diruaŵr aerua a orucpŵyt. Y Rufeinwyr yna y gyt ac aneiryf o vilyoed y syrthassant. Yna y llas Aliphant vrenhi[n] yr Yspaen, a Misipia vrenhin Babilon, a Chŵintus Miluius, a Marius Lepidus  
 30 senedŵr. Ac o parth y Brytanyeit y syrthŵys Hodlyn iarll Ruthun, a Leodogar iarll Bolŵyn, a thri thyŵyssaŵc ereill o ynys Prydein, nyt amgen, Cursalem o Gaer Geint, a Gŵallaŵc vab Lywynaŵc o Salsbri, a Vryen o Gaer Vadon. Ac ŵrth hynny gŵahanu a ŵnaethant y bydinoed



yd oedynt yn y llywyaŵ, ac enkil drachefyn hyt ar y vydin yd oed Howel uab Emyr Lydaŵ a Gŵalchmei uab Gŵyar yn y llywyaŵ. A phan welas y gŵyr hynny eu kedymdeithon yn ffo, enynu o lit megys fflam yn enynu godeith, gan alŵ y rei a oedynt ar ffo a chyrchu eu 5 gelynyon. A chymell ar ffo y rei a oedynt yn eu herlit ŵynteu kyn no hynny gan eu bŵrŵ ac eu llad, a gŵneuthur aerua heb orfoŵys onadunt, hyt pan deuthant hyt ar vydin yr amheraŵdyr.

53. A phan welas yr amheraŵdyr yr aerua oe wyr, 10 bryssyaŵ a oruc yn borth udunt. Ac yna y gŵnaethpŵyt y Brytanyeit yn veirŵ; kanys Kynuarch tyŵysaŵc Trigeri a dŵy vil y gyt ac ef a las yna. Ac yna y llas or parth arall trywyr, nyt amgen, Rigyfarch a Bolconi a Laŵin o Votlan. A phei bydynt tywyssogyon teyrnassoed, 15 yr oessoed a delhynt gof hyt vraŵt ac a enrydedynt eu molyant ac eu clot. Ac eissoes pŵy bynhac a gyfarffei a Hoŵel neu a Gŵalchmei oc eu gelynyon, ny diagei ae eneit gantaŵ. A gŵedy eu dyuot, megys y dywespŵyt uchoŵ, hyt ym plith bydin yr amheraŵdyr, 20 yn damgylchedic oc eu gelynyon y syrthassant y tryŵyr hynny. Ac ŵrth hynny Howel a Gŵalchmei, y rei ny magyssit yn yr oessoed kyn noc ŵynt neb well noc ŵynt, pan welsant yr aerua oc eu kedymdeithon, yn ŵychyr y kyrchassant hŵnt ac yman, vn o bop parth yn gyffredin 25 yn dyŵalhau ac yn blinaŵ bydin yr amheraŵdyr, ac megys llucheit yn llad a gyfarffei ac ŵynt, ac yn annoc eu kedymdeithon; a Gŵal[ch]mei yn damunaŵ oe holl dihwyt ymgaffel a Les amheraŵdyr y gymell arnaŵ peth a digonei ym milŵryaeth. Ac nyt oed haŵd barnu 30 pŵy oreu, ae Hoŵel ae Gŵalchmei.

54. Ac odynd y Gŵalchmei a gafas y damunedic hynt. Ac yn ŵychyr kyrchu yr amheraŵdyr a oruc, a gossot arnaŵ. Ac eissoes Les, megys yd oed yn dechreu

blodeuaŵ dewred y ieuencitit ac yn vaŵr y ynni, nyt oed well dim gantaŵ ynteu noc ymgaffel ar ryŵ uarchaŵc clotuaŵr hŵnnŵ, yr hŵnn a gymellei y wybot beth vei y angerd ae deŵred. Ac ŵrth hynny diruaŵr leŵenyd a  
 5 gymerth yndaŵ ŵrth ymgaffel ohonaŵ a gŵr kynglotuor-  
 russet a Gŵalchmei. Ac ymerbynyeit yn galet a ŵnaeth pob vn ae gilid, megys na ŵelat rŵg deu vilŵr ymlad a gyffelypit y hŵnnŵ. A phan yttoedynt ŵy yn neŵidyaŵ kaledyon dyrnodeu, a phob vn yn llafuryaŵ agheu y  
 10 gilyd, nachaf y Rufeinwyr ynn ympentyryaŵ yn eukylch, hyt pan vu reit y Walchmei a Howel ac eu bydinoed enkilyaŵ hyt ar vydin Arthur, gan eu llad or Rufeinwyr yn drut.

55. A phan welas Arthur yr aerua yd oedit yn y  
 15 wneuthur oe wyr ef, tynu Caletŵlch y gledyf goreu a ŵnaeth, ac yn vchel dyŵedut val hynn: "Py achaŵs y gedŵch chŵi y gŵreicolyon wyr hynn y genŵch? Nac aet vn yn vyŵ onadunt, nac aet. Koffeŵch aŵch deheuoed, y rei yn gyfrŵys yn y saŵl ymladeu kyn no  
 20 hynn a darestygassant dec teyrnas ar hugeint ŵrth vym medyant. Koffeŵch aŵch hendadeu, y rei, pan oedynt gadarnach gŵyr Rufein no hediŵ, ae gŵnaethant yn drethaŵl udunt. Koffeŵch aŵch rydit, yr honn y mae yr hanher gŵyr hynn yn keissaŵ y dŵyn y genŵch. Ac ŵrth  
 25 hynny nac aet vn yn vyŵ onadunt, nac aet." A chan dywedut yr ymadrodyon hynny, kyrchu y elynyon ac eu bŵrŵ dan y draet ac eu llad. A phŵy bynnac a gyfarffei ac ef, o vn dyrnaŵt y lladei ac ef ae varch. Ac ŵrth hynny paŵb a foynt racdaŵ, megys y foynt aniuieileit rac  
 30 lleŵ creulaŵn, pan vei neŵyn maŵr arnaŵ ac ynteu yn keissaŵ bŵyt. A phŵy bynhac o damŵein a gyfarffei ac ef, nys differei y arueu ef rac Caletŵlch, hyt pan vei reit idaŵ talu y eneit y gyt ae ŵaet. Deu urenhin oc eu drycdamŵein a gyfaruuant ac ef, Sertor brenhin Liŵia

a Pholites brenhin Bitinia. Ar deu hynny gŵedy llad eu penneu a anuones Arthur y Rufein.

56. A gŵedy gŵelet or Brytanyeit eu brenhin yn ymlad uelly,<sup>1</sup> gleðder ac ehofynder a gymerassant, a chan teðhau eu bydinoed o vn vryt kyrchu y Rufeinwyr gan darparu 5 mynet drostunt. Ac eissoes gŵrthŷnebu yn wychyr a oruc y Rufeinwyr udunt, ac o dysc Les amheraðdyr llafuryaŷ y talu aerua yr Brytanyeit. A chymeint uu yr ymlad yna o bop parth a chyt pei<sup>2</sup> yr aŵr honno y dechreuynnt yr ymlad. Or neill parth yd oed yr arderchaŵc vrenhin 10 Arthur yn llad y elynyon, ac yn annoc y wyr y sefyll yn ŵraŵl. Ac or parth arall yd oed Les amheraðdyr yn annoc y Rufeinwyr ac yn eu dysgu ac yn eu moli. Ac ny orfoŷyssei ynteu yn llad ac yn bŵrŵ y elynyon ac yn kylchynu y vydinoed ehun. A phy elyn bynac a 15 gyfarffei ac ef, a gŵayŵ neu a chledyf y lladei. Ac uelly o bop parth y bydei Arthur yn gŵneuthur aerua. Kanys gŵeithieu y bydynt trechaf<sup>3</sup> y Brytanyeit, gŵeithieu ereill y bydynt<sup>4</sup> trechaf<sup>3</sup> y Rufeinwyr. A phan yttoedynt hŵy<sup>5</sup> yn yr ymfust hŵnnŵ, heb wybot py diŵ y damŵeinei 20 y vudugolyaeth, nachaf Morud iarll Caer Loyŵ yn dyuot ar lleg a dyŵedassam ni y hadaŵ uchot yg gŵersyll, ac yn deissyfyt<sup>6</sup> yn kyrchu eu gelynyon yn dirybud or tu yn eu<sup>7</sup> hol ac yn mynet drostunt, gan eu gŵasgaru a gŵneuthur aerua diruaŵr y meint. Ac yna y syrthassant<sup>8</sup> 25 llaŵer o vilyoed or Rufeinwyr. Ac yna y dygŵydŵys Les amheraðdyr yn vrathedic gan leif neb vn, ac y bu varŵ. Ac yna, kyt bei drŵy diruaŵr lafur, y Brytanyeit a gaŵssant y maes.<sup>9</sup>

57. Ac yna y gŵasgarassant<sup>1</sup> y Rufeinwyr<sup>2</sup> yr diffeithŵch 30 ac yr coedyd, ac ofyn yn eu kymell. Ereill yr dinassoed

(Ch. 56). 1 y velly? *the initial letters are illegible*, 2 chyn bei, 3 drechaf, 4 bydei, 5 ŵy, 6 deissyfedic, 7 y, 8 syrthysant, 9 ar goruot *add*.  
(Ch. 57). 1 gvasgaryssant, 2 rei *add*.

ar kestyl ac yr lleod kadarn y ffoynt; ar Brytanyeit oc eu hol yn<sup>3</sup> eu hymlit, ac o druanaf aerua<sup>4</sup> yn eu llad ac yn eu dala ac yn eu hyspeila<sup>6</sup>. Ac uelly megys y rodynt y ran vŷaf<sup>5</sup> onadunt eu dŷla<sup>6</sup> yn wreiga<sup>7</sup>l y eu 5 rŷma<sup>6</sup> ac y eu karcharu, y geissa<sup>6</sup> ystynu ychydic y<sup>6</sup> eu hoedel. A hynny<sup>7</sup> o ja<sup>6</sup>n vra<sup>6</sup>t<sup>8</sup> Du<sup>6</sup>. Kanys eu hendadeu ŷynteu kyn no hynny yn andlydedus a ŷnathoedynt<sup>9</sup> y Brytanyeit yn dretha<sup>6</sup>l udunt; ar Brytanyeit yna yn nackau udunt y dreth yd oedynt yn 10 andlydedus yn y cheissa<sup>6</sup> gantunt.<sup>10</sup>

58. A gŷedy caffel o Arthur y vudugolyaeth, ef a erchis gŷahanu ar neilltu<sup>1</sup> kalaned y wyrda ef y ŷrth y elyna<sup>6</sup>l galaned ac eu kyŷeiry<sup>6</sup>a<sup>6</sup> o vrenhina<sup>6</sup>l defa<sup>6</sup>t, ac eu dŷn yr<sup>2</sup> manachlogoed a vei yn eu gŷlat yn ansodedic, 15 ac yno eu cladu yn enrydedus. Ac yna y ducpŷyt corff Bedwyr hyt y dinas ehun yn Normandi gan dirua<sup>6</sup>r gŷynuan y<sup>3</sup> gan y Normanyeit. Ac yno y my<sup>6</sup>n mynŷent ar deheu y dinas y cladŷyt yn enrydedus gyr<sup>4</sup> lla<sup>6</sup> y mur. Kei a ducpŷyt yn urathedic hyt yg Kam, y kastell<sup>5</sup> a 20 ŷnathoed<sup>6</sup> ehun. Ac yno ny bu bell gŷedy hynny yny vu<sup>7</sup> uar<sup>6</sup> Kei<sup>8</sup> or brath hŷnn<sup>6</sup>. Ac yn y fforest a oed yn agos yno y my<sup>6</sup>n manachla<sup>6</sup>c ermitwyr or enryded a dylyei iarll yr Angi<sup>6</sup> y cladŷyt. Hodlyn tyŷyssa<sup>6</sup>c a ducpŷyt hyt y<sup>9</sup> dinas ehun, yr hŷn a elŷir y Tyruan, ac 25 yno y cladŷyt. Y gŷyrda ereill a erchis Arthur eu dŷn yr manachlogoed nessaf udunt ar hyt y gŷlatoed.<sup>10</sup> Ac yna<sup>11</sup> yd erchis ef y ŷyr y wlat honno cladu y elynyon,<sup>12</sup> ac anuon corff Les amhera<sup>6</sup>dyr hyt yn sened Rufein. Ac erchi menegi udunt na dylyynt hŷy<sup>13 14</sup> teyrnget o ynys 30 Prydein amgen no hŷnn<sup>6</sup>. Ac yno y bu Arthur y gayaf

(Ch. 57). 3 oc eu holll ynni yn, 4 agheu, 5 vvyaff, 6 om., 7 ac uelly, 8 varn, 9 wnaethoedynt, 10 yn y cheissav yn andlydedus y ganthunt

(Ch. 58). 1 gvahanu a neilltua, 2 yr, 3 om., 4 ger, 5 lyt—kastell: hyt y castell, 6 wnaethoed, 7 yny vu: y bu, 8 om., 9 yn y, 10 gvladoed, 11 odyna, 12 gelynyon, 13 vy, 14 tremygu y brytanyeit nac erchi add.

hónnó yn goresgyn y dinassoed y Môrgóin.<sup>15</sup> A phan  
yttoed yr haf yn dechreu dyuot, ac Arthur yn ysgynu  
mynyd Mynheeu<sup>16</sup> órth vynet parth a Rufein, nachaf  
genadeu o ynys Prydein yn menegi y Arthur ry daruot<sup>17</sup>  
y Vedraót y nei, uab y chóaer, goresgyn<sup>18</sup> ynys Prydein a 5  
góisgaó<sup>19</sup> coron y teyrnas am y pen<sup>20</sup> ehun<sup>21</sup> dróy  
greulonder a brat, a thynu<sup>22</sup> Góenhóyfar vrenhines oe  
rieingadeir a ry gysgu<sup>23</sup> genti, gan lygru kyfreith  
dóywaól y neithoreu.<sup>24</sup>

59. A góedy menegi hynny y Arthur, yn y lle peidyaó<sup>1</sup> 10  
a oruc ae darpar am vynet y Rufein, ac ymchoelut parth  
ac ynys Prydein, a brenhined yr ynyssed y gyt ac ef.  
A gellóg Howel uab<sup>2</sup> Emyr Lydaó a llu gantaó y  
tagnefedu ac y hedychu y góladoed.<sup>3</sup> Kanys yr  
yscymunedickaf<sup>4</sup> vradór gan Vedraót a anuonassei 15  
Cheldric<sup>5</sup> tyóyssaóc y Saeson hyt yn Germania y gynullaó  
y llu móyaf a gallei yn borth idaó. A rodi udunt a oruc o  
Humyr hyt yn Yscotlont, ac yn achóanec kymeint ac a  
uuassei y<sup>6</sup> Hors a Heingyst<sup>7</sup> kyn no hynny yg Kent.<sup>8</sup> Ac  
órth hynny y deuth Cheldric ac óyth cant<sup>9</sup> llóg yn llaón 20  
o wyr aruaóc gantaó<sup>10</sup> o baganyeit,<sup>11</sup> a górhau y Vedraót  
ac ufudhau megys y vrenhin. Ac neur daroed idaó  
gedymdeithockau ataó yr Yscottyait ar Ffichteit, a phaób  
or a óypei ef idaó gassau y ewythy<sup>12</sup>, hyt pan yttoedynt  
oíl petwar<sup>13</sup> ugein mil róg Cristonogyon a phaganyeit. 25

60. Ac a hynny o nifer gantaó y deuth Medraót<sup>1</sup> hyt yn  
aber Temys, y lle yd oedynt llógeu Arthur yn disgynnu.  
A góedy dechreu ymlad, ef a<sup>2</sup> wnaeth aerua diruaór

(Ch 58). 15 gvrescyn dinassoed bôrgóyn, 16 mynheu, 17 darvot?  
18 gverescyn, 19 arwisgaó? 20 ben, 21 om., 22 thynhu, 23 chysgu, ry om.  
24 neithoryeu

(Ch. 59). 1 peidaó, 2 ac ellvg hvel m., 3 gvledi, 4 yscymunediccaf.  
5 chledric, 6 om., 7 hengist, 8 ygkeint, 9 can, 10 om., 11 paganyeit,  
12 The word before hyt is (a)rthur; between pav(b) and this there is a  
hole in the MS., 13 The initial letters seem to be deu, what follows is  
illegible

(Ch. 60). 1 om.

onadunt yn dyuot yr tir. Kanys yna y dygŷydassant  
 Araŷn uab Kynuarch, brenhin Yscotlont, a Gŷalchme[i]ŷ<sup>3</sup>  
 uab<sup>4</sup> Gŷyar. Ac yn ol Araŷn y deuth Owein vab<sup>4</sup> Vryen  
 yn vrenhin yn Reget, y gŷr gŷedy hynny a vu clotuaŷr  
 5 yn llaŷer o gynhenneu. Ac or diwed, kyt<sup>5</sup> bei drŷy  
 diruaŷr lafur a thrŷy eu llaŷ,<sup>6</sup> Arthur ae lu a gafas y tir.  
 A chan talu yr aerua ŷynt a gymellaŷsant Vedraŷt<sup>7</sup> ae lu  
 ar ffo. A chyn bei mwy eiryf llu Medraŷt no llu Arthur,  
 eissoes kywreinach a doethach yd ymledynt o beunydyal  
 10 ymladeu.<sup>8</sup> Ac ŷrth hynny y bu dir yr anudonaŷl<sup>9</sup> gan  
 Vedraŷt gymryt y ffo. Ar nos honno, gŷedy ymgynullaŷ  
 y wascaredic<sup>10</sup> lu y gyt, yd aeth hyt yg Kaer Wynt. A  
 gŷedy clybot o Wenhŷyuar<sup>11</sup> hynny, diobeithaŷ a oruc,  
 a mynet o Gaer Efraŷc hyt yg Kaer<sup>12</sup> Lion ar Wysc.  
 15 Ac<sup>13</sup> y myŷn manachlaŷc gŷraged a<sup>14</sup> oed yno gŷisgaŷ yr  
 abit ymdanei ac adaŷ cadŷ y diŷeirdeb yn eu plith o  
 hynny allan. Ar abit honno a vu ymdanei hyt agheu.

61. Ac odyna Arthur a gymerth lliŷt maŷr yndaŷ am  
 goŷli<sup>1</sup> ohonaŷ y saŷl vilioed hynny, a pheri cladu y wyr.  
 20 Ar trydyd dyd kyrchu Caer Wynt a oruc ac yn diannot y  
 chylchynu. Ac yr hynny ny pheidŷys Medraŷt ar hynn  
 a dechreuassei, namyn, gan annoc y wyr, eu gossot yn  
 vydinoed a mynet allan or dinas y ymlad ac Arthur y  
 ewythyŷr. A gŷedy dechreu ymlad, aerua vaŷr o pob  
 25 parth a wnaethant. Ac eissoes mŷyaf vu yr aerua o wyr  
 Medraŷt; ac yn dybryt kymell arnaŷ adaŷ y maes. Ac  
 ny hanbŷyllŷys<sup>2</sup> Medraŷt yna gohir ŷrth gladu y  
 ladedigyon, namyn ffo a oruc parth a Chernyŷ.

62. Ac ŷrth hynny Arthur, yn bryderus ac yn lliŷdiaŷc

(Ch. 60). 2 aeth ac a *add.*, 3 gŷalchmei, 4 mab, 5 *only ky is legible*, 6 a thrŷy eu llaŷ *om.*, 7 medraŷt, 8 o beunydyal ymladeu: wyr arthur, kanys kyfrŷys oedynt o peunydyal ymlad, 9 kelwydaŷc *add.*, 10 gŷasgaredigyon, 11 vrenhines *add.*, 12 ygkaer, 13 yno *add.*, 14 *om.*

(Ch. 61). 1 rygoŷli, 2 handenŷys

a achaws dianc y túyllór<sup>1</sup> y gantaó, yn y lle<sup>2</sup> ae hymlynóys  
 hyt y wlat honno hyt ar lan Kamlan, y lle yd oed  
 Vedraót yn y aros.<sup>3</sup> Ac órth hynny megys yd oed  
 Vedraót gleóaf a góychraf yn cyrchu, yn y lle gossot y  
 varchogyon yn vydinoed a oruc. Kanys gúell oed 5  
 gantaó y lad neu ynteu a orffei, no ffo yn húy no hynny.  
 Kanys yd oed ettwa gantaó o eiryf trugein mil. Ac o  
 hynny y gúnaeth ef whech<sup>4</sup> bydin, a whech<sup>5</sup> góyr a  
 thrugeint a chwe<sup>6</sup> chant a chwe<sup>6</sup> mil ym pob bydin o wyr  
 aruaóc. Ac or rei nyt aed<sup>7</sup> yn y chwech<sup>4</sup> bydin ef a 10  
 wnaeth bydin idaó ehun, a rodi llywodron y bop vn or  
 rei ereill oll.<sup>8</sup> A dyscu paób onadunt ac eu hannoc y  
 ymlad a oruc, gan adaó udunt enryded a chyfoeth, os ef  
 a orffei. Ac or parth arall Arthur a ossodes y wyr<sup>9</sup>  
 ynteu dróy naó bydin; a gorchymyn y baóp onadunt<sup>10</sup> 15  
 ac annoc llad y lladron túyllwyr yskymyn,<sup>11</sup> a dathoedynt  
 o wladoed ereill o dysc y bratór<sup>12</sup> y geissaó y digyfoethi  
 ynteu. “Ar bobyl a óelóch<sup>13</sup> racko,” heb Arthur, “a<sup>14</sup>  
 gynuillóyt o wlatoed<sup>15</sup> amryfaelon, ac aghyfyeth ynt a  
 llesc ag aghyfróys ar ymlad. Ac ny allant gúrhóynebu 20  
 yóch, kanys kyfróys yóch chói.”<sup>16</sup> Ac velly paób onadunt  
 yn annoc y wyr or parth arall.<sup>17</sup> Ac yn deissyfyt ym-  
 gyfaruot a ónaeth y bydinoed yghyt,<sup>18</sup> a dechreu ymlad a  
 newidyaó dyrnodeu yn vynyach. A chymeint vu yr  
 aerua yna o bop parth ac megys yd oed gúynfan<sup>19</sup> y rei 25  
 meiró yn kyffroi y rei byó ar lit ac ymlad, ac megys yd  
 oed blin a llafuryus<sup>20</sup> y yscriuenu nae datkanu. Kanys  
 o bop parth y brethynt ac y brethit óynteu; óynt a ledynt  
 ac óynteu a ledit.

63. Ac or diwed gúedy treulaó llaóer or dyd yn y mod

(Ch. 62). 1 y mynychet hónnó *add.*, 2 ef *add.*, 3 arhos, 4 whech, 5 óhe,  
 6 whe, 7 aeth, 8 rodi llywodraeth y pop bydin oll, 9 lu, 10 ohonunt,  
 11 ysgymun, 12 bratór, 13 welhóchi, 14 ar, 15 wladoed, 16 yóchi, 17 or  
 parth arall: o pop parth, 18 ygyt, 19 kóynuan, 20 llafurus

hónnó, Arthur ae vydin a gyrchóys y vydin y góydat<sup>1</sup>  
 bot y túyllór gan Vedraót yndi,<sup>2</sup> ac agori ffyrd udunt ar  
 clefydeu,<sup>3</sup> ac yn diannot mynet drostunt, a góneuthur<sup>4</sup>  
 aerua diruaór<sup>5</sup> onadunt. Kanys yn y lle y dygóyds  
 5 yr yscymunedickaf<sup>6</sup> vradór hónnó gan Vedraót, a llaer o  
 vilioed y gyt ac ef. Ac eissoes yr hynny ny ffoyssant<sup>7</sup>  
 y rei ereill, namyn ymgynullaó y gyt<sup>8</sup> or maes oll, ac  
 yn heróyd eu gleóder keissaó ymgynhal a góρθýnebu  
 y Arthur. Ac órth hynny góychraf a girattaf<sup>9</sup> a  
 10 chreulonaf aerua a vu y rydunt yna o bop parth, ac eu  
 bydinoed yn syrthaó. Ac yna o bop<sup>10</sup> parth y<sup>10</sup> Vedraót y  
 syrthassant<sup>11</sup> Cheldric<sup>12</sup> ac Elafyós,<sup>13</sup> Egberinc<sup>10</sup> brenhin  
 or Saeson; or Góydyl Gilapadric,<sup>14</sup> Gillamóri, Gillasel,  
 Gillamor.<sup>15</sup> Yr Yscottyeit ar Ffichteit ac óynt ac eu  
 15 harglóydi oll hayach a las. Ac o bleit<sup>16</sup> Arthur y llas  
 Osbrinc brenhin Lychlyn, Echel brenhin Denmarc,<sup>17</sup>  
 Kadór Lemenic<sup>18</sup> iarll Kernyó, Kasóallaón, a llaer o  
 vililioed<sup>19</sup> y gyt ac óynteu,<sup>20</sup> róg y Brytanyeit a chenedloed  
 ereill a ducsynt y gyt ac óynt. Ac ynteu yr arderchaóc  
 20 vrenhin Arthur a vrathóyt yn agheuaól, ac a ducpóyt  
 odynd ynt yn ynys Avallach y iachau y welieu. Coron  
 y<sup>21</sup> teyrnas o ynys Prydein a gymynnóys ynteu y  
 Gustenin<sup>22</sup> vab Kadór iarll Kernyó y gar. Dóy vlyned a  
 deugeint<sup>23</sup> a phump kant góedy dyfot Crist yg knaót  
 25 dyn oed hynny yna.

(Ch. 63). 1 góydyat, 2 yndianc, 3 cledyfen, 4 tristaf, 5 om.,  
 6 ysgymunediccaf, 7 foassant, 8 yghyt, 9 girattaf, 10 om., 11 syrthyssant,  
 12 chledric, 13 elefyós, 14 gillapadric, 15 gillamor gillasel gillamóri,  
 16 pleit, 17 denmarch, 18 hymenic, 19 vilyoed, 20 óynt, 21 om.,  
 22 gustenhin, 23 deu vgeint



## III. THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH.

1. Kerdet a orugant 6y y dŷd hŷnn6 educher. Hŷnŷ<sup>1</sup> vŷd kaer uae<sup>2</sup> gŷmrŷt a welasit,<sup>3</sup> uŷyha<sup>4</sup> ar keŷrŷd y bŷt<sup>4</sup>. Nachaf gŷr<sup>5</sup> du mŷy<sup>6</sup> no thrŷŷŷr<sup>7</sup> y bŷt hŷnn a welant<sup>8</sup> ŷn dŷuot or gaer. Amkeudant<sup>9</sup> 6rtha6 : "Pan doŷ ti,<sup>10</sup> 6r?" "Or gaer a wel6ch ch6i ŷna."<sup>11</sup> "Pieu y gaer?"<sup>12</sup> "Meredic a wŷr 5 y6chi.<sup>13</sup> Nŷt oes ŷn y bŷt nŷ 6ŷppo pieu y gaer honn. Wrnach Ga6r pieu."<sup>14</sup> "Pŷ uoes ŷssŷd y osp a phellenhic y diskŷnnu ŷn y gaer honn?" "Ha vnben, Du6 ach notho!<sup>15</sup> Nŷ dody6<sup>16</sup> neb guestei eirot oheni<sup>17</sup> ae uŷ6<sup>18</sup> gantha6.<sup>19</sup> Nŷ edir neb idi namyn a dŷcc6y<sup>20</sup> y gerd."<sup>21</sup> 10

2. Kŷrchu y porth a orugant. Amka6d<sup>1</sup> G6rhŷr Gualsta6t Ieithoet: "A oes portha6r?"<sup>2</sup> "Oes. A titheu<sup>3</sup> nŷ bo teu dŷ penn,<sup>4</sup> pŷr<sup>5</sup> y kŷuerchŷ dŷ?" "Agor y porth!" "Nac agoraf." "P6ŷstŷr<sup>6</sup> nas agorŷ ti?" "Kŷllell a edŷ6 ŷm m6yt<sup>7</sup> a llŷnn y mual,<sup>8</sup> ac amsathŷr ŷn neuad Vrnach.<sup>9</sup> 15 Namŷn y gerda6r a dŷcc6y<sup>10</sup> y gerd nŷt agorir."<sup>11</sup> Amka6d Kei:<sup>12</sup> "ŷ portha6r, y mae kerd genhŷf i." "Pa gerd ŷssŷd genhŷt ti?" "ŷslipan6r cledŷueu goreu ŷn y bŷt 6ŷf ui." "Mi a af y dŷwedut hŷnnŷ y Vrnach<sup>13</sup> Ga6r, ac a dŷgaf atteb ŷt." 20

VARIANTS H=RED BOOK OF HERGEST, P=PENIARTH MS. IV.

(Ch. 1). 1 yny H, 2 na6r H, 3 welynt H, 4 v6yha<sup>4</sup> or byt H, 5 6r H, 6 oed *add.* H, 7 ŷn *add.* H, 8 a welant *om.* H, 9 ac y dŷwedassant 6ynteu H, 10 deuy di H. 11 racco H, 12 heb 6ynt *add.* H, 13 y6ch ch6i H, 14 bieu H, 15 nodho H, 16 deuth H, 17 eiroyet ohonei H, 18 vywyt H, 19 ganta6 H, 20 dycko H, 21 ganta6 *add.* H.

(Ch. 2). 1 heb y H, 2 bortha6r H, 3 thitheu H, 4 dy daua6t yth benn H, 5 pŷ rac H, 6 Pŷ ystŷr H, 7 b6yt H, 8 ŷm bual H, 9 6rnach ga6r H, 10 dycko H, 11 yma heno bellach *add.* H, 12 Heb y kei ŷna H, 13 6rnach H

3. Dýuot a oruc y porthaŵr y myŵn. Dýwaŵt<sup>1</sup> Wrnach Gaŵr:<sup>2</sup> "Whedleu<sup>3</sup> porth genhýt?"<sup>4</sup> "Yssýdýnt genhýf. Kýweithýd ýssýd yn drŵs y porth, ac<sup>5</sup> a uýnnýnt dýuot y myŵn." "A ouýnneist ti<sup>6</sup> a oed gerd ganthunt?"<sup>7</sup> "Gouýnneis.<sup>8</sup>  
5 Ac vn onadunt a dýwaŵt gallel<sup>9</sup> ýslipanu cledýueu."<sup>10</sup> "Oed<sup>11</sup> reit y mi<sup>12</sup> ŵrth hŵnnŵ. Ys guers ýd ŵýf yn keissaŵ a olchei výt cledýf; nýs rýgeueis.<sup>13</sup> Gat hŵnnŵ y myŵn, cans oed<sup>14</sup> gerd ganthaŵ."

4. Dýuot<sup>1</sup> y porthaŵr ac agori y porth. A dýuot Kei y  
10 myŵn ehun. A chýuarch guell a oruc ef y Wrnach Gaŵr. Kadeir a dodet y danaŵ.<sup>2</sup> Dýwaŵt<sup>3</sup> Wrnach<sup>4</sup>: "Ha ŵr, ae gŵir a dýwedir arnat gallel<sup>5</sup> ýslipanu cledýueu?" "Mi ae digonaf."<sup>6</sup> Dýdŵyn<sup>7</sup> y cledýf attaŵ<sup>8</sup> a orucpŵýt.<sup>9</sup> Kýmrýt agalen gleis a oruc Kei y dan y geffeil. "Pŵy well genhýt  
15 arnaŵ,<sup>10</sup> ae guýnseit ae grŵmseit?" "Yr hŵnn a uo da genhýt ti, malpei teu uei, gŵna arnaŵ." Glanhau a oruc hanher y lleill gýllell idaŵ, ae rodi yn y laŵ a oruc. "A reinc dý uod di hýnný?" "Oed well genhýf noc ýssýd ým gŵlat, bei oll ýt uei<sup>11</sup> val hýnn. Dýhed a beth bot gŵr kýstal  
20 a thi heb gedýmdeith." "Oia ŵrda, mae<sup>12</sup> imi gedýmdeith kýny dýgo[n]ho<sup>13</sup> y gerd honn." "Pwý yŵ hŵnnŵ?" "Aet y porthaŵr allan, a mi a dýwedaf ar arŵydon idaŵ.<sup>14</sup> Penn y wayŵ a daŵ y ar y baladýr. Ac ýssef a dýgýrch y guaet y ar y guýnt ac a diskýn ar y baladýr."<sup>15</sup> Agori y porth a  
25 wnaethpŵýt, a dýuot Bedwýr y myŵn. Dýwaŵt<sup>16</sup> Kei: "Budugaŵl yŵ Bedwýr, kýn ný digonho<sup>17</sup> y gerd hon."

(Ch. 3). 1 ac y dywaŵt H, 2 ŵrthaŵ H, 3 chwedlen H, 4 y gennynt H, in P, y has been added over the line, 5 om. H, 6 ouynneist di H, 7 gantunt hŵy H, 8 heb ef add. H, 9 gŵybot H, 10 ohonaŵ yn da add. H, 11 as oed H, 12 ynny H, 13 ac nys keneis H, 14 kan oes H

(Ch. 4). 1 a oruc H, 2 geyr bron gŵrnach add. H, 3 ac y dywaŵt H, 4 ŵrthaŵ add. H, 5 arnat ti y gŵdost H, 6 Mi a ŵnn hynn yn da heb y kei H, 7 Dŵyn H, 8 ŵrnach H, 9 wnaethpŵýt attaŵ H, 10 a gouyn or deu pŵy oed oreu gantaŵ H, 11 pei bei oll nal H, 12 y mae ymi H, 13 dycko H, 14 idaŵ y arwydon H, 15 eilweith add. H, 16 ac y dywaŵt H, 17 wypo H

5. A<sup>1</sup> dadleu maŵr a uu ar y gŵyr hýnný allan. Dýuot<sup>2</sup> Kei a Bedwýr y mýŵn. A guas ieuanc a doeth gýt<sup>3</sup> ac ỳnt y mýŵn, vn mab Custennhin heussaŵr. Sef a ỳnaeth ef ae gedýmdeithon a glýn<sup>4</sup> ỳrthaŵ mal nat oed vŵy no dim ganthunt<sup>5</sup> mýnet<sup>6</sup> dros y teir catlys a wnaethant<sup>7</sup> hýt pan 5 dýuuant<sup>8</sup> y mýŵn y gaer. Amkeudant<sup>9</sup> y gedýmdeithon ỳrth vab Custenhin: "Goreu dýn yŵ."<sup>10</sup> O<sup>11</sup> hýnný allan y gelwit Goreu mab Custenhin. Guascaru a orugant ỳy y eu llettyeu, mal y keffýnt llad eu llettywýr heb ỳybot yr caŵr.

6. Ỳ cledýf a daruu y ỳrteith. Ae rodi a oruc Kei yn llaŵ 10 Wrnach Kaŵr,<sup>1</sup> y malphei y edrých a ranghei y uod idaŵ y weith.<sup>2</sup> Dýwaŵt<sup>3</sup> y kaŵr: "Da yŵ y gueith, a ranc bod yŵ genhyf." Amkaŵd<sup>4</sup> Kei: "Dý wein<sup>5</sup> a lýgrŵys dý gledýf. Dýro di imi y diot y kellellprenneu<sup>6</sup> oheni,<sup>7</sup> a chaffŵyf inheu gŵneuthur rei newýd<sup>8</sup> idaŵ." A chýmryt y wein ohonaŵ, ar 15 cledýf<sup>9</sup> yn y llaŵ arall. Dýuot<sup>10</sup> ohonaŵ vch pen y kaŵr, malphei<sup>11</sup> y cledýf a dottei yn y wein. Ỳ ossot a oruc ým phen<sup>12</sup> y kaŵr, a llad y penn y ergýt y arnaŵ. Diffeithaŵ y gaer, a dŵyn a výnnassant o tlysseu.<sup>13</sup> Ýg kýuenŵ yr vn dýd ým phen<sup>14</sup> y vlŵydýn y deuthant<sup>15</sup> y lys Arthur, a 20 chledýf Wrnach Gaŵr gantunt.

7. Dywedut a ỳnaethant y Arthur y ual y daruu udunt. Arthur a dywaŵt: "Pa beth yssyd iaŵnaf y geissaŵ gyntaf or annoetheu hynny?" "Iaŵnaf yŵ," heb ỳnteu, "keissaŵ Mabon uab Modron. Ac nyt kaffel arnaŵ nes kaffel Eidoel 25 uab Aer y gar yn gyntaf." Kyuodi a oruc Arthur a milwyr ynys Prydein gantaŵ y geissaŵ Eidoel. A dyuot a orugant hyt yn rac Kaer Glini, yn y lle yd oed Eidoel yg

(Ch. 5). 1 *om.* H, 2 *gan y gŵyr a oed allan am dyuot Bedwýr a Chei* H, 3 *A dyuot gŵas ieuanc oed* H, 4 *yg glyn* H, 5 *mal—ganthunt* *om.* H, 6 *dyuot* H, 7 *a wnaethant* *om.* H, 8 *yttoed* H, 9 *Y dywedassant* H, 10 *ti a orugost hynn goreu dyn ỳt* H, 11 *Ac o* H

(Ch. 6). 1 *gaŵr* H, 2 *gŵeith* H, 3 *ac y dywaŵt* H, 4 *Y dywaŵt* H, 5 *wein di* H, 6 *kyllellbrenneu* H, 7 *ohonei* H, 8 *ac y wneuthur ereill o newýd* H, 9 *chedýf* P, 10 *a dyuot* H, 11 *mal pei* H, 12 *ynteu ým penn* H, 13 *or da ar tlysseu* H, 14 *penn* H, 15 *P ends*

karchar. Seuyll a oruc Glini ar vann y gaer; ac y dywaôt: "Arthur, py holy di y mi, pryt nam gedy yn y tarren honn, nyt da im yndi, ac nyt digrif, nyt gŵenith, nyt keirch im, kyn ny cheissych ditheu wneuthur cam im?"

- 5 Arthur a dywaôt: "Nyt yr drôc itti y deuthum i yma, namyn y geissaô y karcharaôr yssyd gennyt." "Mi a rodaf y carcharaôr itti, ac ny darparyswn y rodi y neb. Ac y gyt a hynny vy nerth am porth a geffy di." Y gŵyr a dywaôt ôrth Arthur: "Arglŷyd, dos di adref. Ny elly  
10 di uynet ath lu y geissaô peth mor uan ar rei hynn." Arthur a dywaôt: "Gôrhyr Gŵalstaôt Ieithoed, itti y mae iaôn mynet yr neges honn. Yr holl ieithoed yssyd gennyt, a chyfyieith ôyt ar rei or adar ar anniueileit. Eidoel, itti y mae iaôn mynet y geissaô dy geuynderô yô gyt am gŵyr i. Kei  
15 a Bedwyr, gobeith yô gennyf y neges yd eloch ymdanei y chaffel. Eôch im yr neges honn."

8. Kerdet a orugant racdunt hyt att vŵyalch Gilgŵri. Gouyn a oruc Gôrhyr idi: "Yr Duô, a ôdost ti dim y ôrth Uabon uab Modron, a ducpŵyt yn teirnossic ody rông y vam  
20 ar paret?" Y uŵyalch a dywaôt: "Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, eington gof a oed yma, a minneu ederyn ieuanc oedôn. Ny wnaethpŵyt gŵeith arnei, namyn tra uu vyg geluin arnei bob ucher. Hediô nyt oes kymmeint kneuen ohonei heb dreulaô. Dial Duô arnaf, o chigleu i dim y ôrth  
25 y gŵr a ovynnôch chô. Peth yssyd iaôn hagen a dylyet y mi y wneuthur y gennadeu Arthur, mi ae gŵnaf. Kenedlaeth vileit yssyd gynt rithôys Duô no mi; mi a af yn gyuarwyd ragoch yno."

9. Dyuot a orugant hyt yn lle yd oed karô Redynure.  
30 "Karô Redynure, yma y doetham ni attat kennadeu Arthur, kany ôdam aniueil hyn no thi. Dywet, a wdost di dim y ôrth Uabon uab Modron, a ducpŵyt yn deirnossic y ôrth y uam?" Y karô a dywaôt: "Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, nyt

oed namyn vn reit o bop tu ym penn. Ac nyt oed yma goet namyn un o gollen derwen. Ac y tyfwys honno yn dar can keing. Ac y dygŷydŷys y dar gŷedy hynny. A hediŷ nyt oes namyn ŷystyn coch ohonei. Yr hynny hyt hediŷ yd ŷyf i yma; ny chigleu i dim or neb a ouynnŷch chŷi. 5 Miui hagen a uydaf gyfarŷyd yŷch, kanys kennadeu Arthur yŷch, hyt lle y mae aniueil gynt a rithŷys Duŷ no mi."

10. Dyuoŷ a orugant hyt lle yd oed cuan Cum Kaŷŷyt. "Cuan Cŷm Caŷŷyt, yma y mae kennadeu Arthur. A ŷdost di dim y ŷrth Vabon vab Modron a ducŷyt?" *et cetera.* 10 "Pei as gŷypŷn, mi ae dywedŷn. Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, y cŷm maŷr a welŷch glynn coet oed. Ac y deuth kenedlaeth o dynyon idaŷ, ac y diuaŷyt. Ac y tyuŷys yr eil coet yndaŷ. Ar trydyd coet yŷ hŷnn. A minneu neut ydynt yn gynyon boneu vy esgyll. Yr hynny hyt hediŷ ny chiglef i dim or 15 gŷr a ouynnŷch chŷi. Mi hagen a uydaf gyuarwyd y genadeu Arthur, yny deloch hyt lle y mae yr anniueil hynaf yssyd yn y byt hŷnn, a mŷyaf a dreigyl, eryr Gŷern Abŷy.

11. Gŷrhŷr a dywaŷt: "Eryr Gwern Abŷy, ni a doetham gennadeu Arthur attaf y ouyn itt a ŷdost dim y ŷrth Vabon 20 uab Modron a duc" *et cetera.* Yr eryr a dywaŷt: "Mi a deuthum yma yr ys pell o amser. A phann deuthum yma gyntaf, maen a oed ym, ac y ar y benn ef y pigŷn y syr bob ucher; weithon nyt oes dyrnued yn y uchet. Yr hynny hyt hediŷ yd ŷyf i yma. Ac ny chiglef i dim y ŷrth y gŷr a 25 ouynnŷch chŷi, onyt un treigyl yd euthum y geissaŷ uym bŷyt hyt yn Lynn Lyŷ. A phann deuthum i yno, y lledeis uyg cryuangheu y myŷn ehaŷc o debygu bot vym bŷyt yndaŷ wers vaŷr. Ac y tynnŷys ynteu ui hyt yr affŷys, hyt pann uu abreid im ymdianc y gantaŷ. Sef a ŷneuthum inheu, mi 30 am holl garant, mynet yg gŷrys ŷrthaŷ y geissaŷ y diuetha. Kennadeu a yrrŷys ynteu y gymot a mi. A dyuoŷ a oruc ynteu attaf i y diot dec tryuer a deugeint oe geuyn. Onyt

ef a wyr peth or hynn a geissóch chúi, ny ónn i neb ae gýpo. Mi hagen a uydaf gyuaróyd yóch hyt lle y mae."

12. Dyuot a orugant hyt lle yr oed. Dywedut a oruc yr eryr: "Ehaóc Lyn Lyó, mi a deuthum attat gan gennadeu
- 5 Arthur y ouyn a ódost dim y órth Vabon uab Modron, a ducpóyt yn teirnoissic y órth y uam." "Y gymeint a wypóyf i, mi ae dywedaf. Gan bob llanó yd af i ar hyt yr auon uchot, hyt pan delóyf hyt y mach mur Kaer Loyó. Ac yno y keueis i ny cheueis eirmoet o dróc y gymeint. Ac mal y
- 10 crettoch, doet un ar uyn dóy ysgóyd i yma ohonaóch." Ac ysef yd aeth ar dóy ysgóyd yr ehaóc. Kei a Górhur Góalstaót leithoed. Ac y kerdassant hyt pann deuthant am y uagóyr ar karcharaór. Yny uyd kóynuan a griduan a glywynt am y uagóyr ac óy. Górhur a dywaót: "Pa dyn a góyn yn y
- 15 maendy hónn?" "Oia ór, yssit le idaó y góynaó y neb yssyd yma. Mabon uab Modron yssyd yma yg carchar; ac ny charcharóyt neb kyndostet yn llóró carchar a mi, na charchar Lud Laó Ereint neu garchar Greit mab Eri." "Oes obeith gennyt ti ar gaffel dy eilóng ae yr eur ae yr aryant ae
- 20 yr golut pressennaól, ae yr catwent ac ymlad?" "Y gymeint ohonof i a gaffer a geffir dróy ymlad." Ymchoelut ohonunt óy odyo, a dyuot hyt lle yd oed Arthur. Dywedut ohonunt y lle yd oed Mabon uab Modron yg karchar. Góyssyaó a oruc Arthur milwyr yr ynys honn, a mynet hyt
- 25 yg Kaer Loyó, y lle yd oed Mabon yg karchar. Mynet a oruc Kei a Bedwyr ar dóy yscóyd y ppsc. Tra yttoed vilwyr Arthur yn ymlad ar gaer, róygaó o Gei y uagóyr a chymryt y carcharaór ar y geuyn. Ac ymlad ar góyr ual kynt ar góyr. Atref y doeth Arthur a Mabon gantaó yn ryd.
- 30 13. Dywedut a oruc Arthur: "Beth iaónhaf weithon y geissaó yn gyntaf or annoetheu?" "Iaónhaf yó keissaó deu geneu gast Rymhi." "A wys," heb yr Arthur, "pa du y mae hi?" "Y mae," heb yr un, "yn Aber Deugledyf."

Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt yn ty Tringat yn Aber Cledyf. A gouyn a oruc  rtha  : "A glyweist ti y  rthi hi yma? Py rith y mae hi?" "Yn rith bleidast," heb ynteu, "ae deu geneu genthi yd ymda. Hi a lada d vy ysgrybul yn vynyf. Ac y mae hi issot yn Aber Cledyf y my n gogof." Sef a 5  
 oruc Arthur gyrru ym Prytwenn y long ar uor ac ereill ar y tir y hela yr ast; ae chylchynu uelly hi ae deu geneu. Ac eu datritha  o Du  y Arthur yn eu rith ehunein. G ascaru a oruc  lu Arthur bob un bob deu.

14. Ac ual yd oed G ythyr mab Greida l dydg eith yn 10  
 kerdet dros vynyf, y clywei leuein a gridua[n] girat; a garcon oed eu clybot. Achub a oruc ynteu parth ac yno. Ac mal y deuth yno, dispeila  cledyf a wnaeth, a  lad y t ynpath  rth y dayar, ac ev diffryt uelly rac y tan. Ac y dywedassant  ynteu  rtha  : "D c uendyth Du  ar einym 15  
 gennyt. Ar hynn ny allo dyn vyth y waret, ni a do n y waret itt." H ynt y wedy hynny a doethant ar na  hesta r  linat, a nodes Yspadaden Pennka r ar Culh ch, yn uessuredic oll heb dim yn eisseu ohonunt eithyr un  linhedyn; ar morgrugyn cloff a doeth a h nn  kynn y nos. 20

15. Pan yttoed Gei a Bedwyr yn eisted ar benn Pumlumon ar Garn G ylathyr ar wynt m yaf yn y byt, edrych a  naethant yn eu kylch. Ac  ynt a  elynt v c ma r parth ar deheu ym pell y  rthunt heb drossi dim gan y g ynt. Ac yna y dywa t Kei : "Myn  la  vyng kyueillt, 25  
 sy l dy racco tan ryss r." Bryssya  a orugant parth ar m c, a dynessau parth ac yno dan ymardisg yl o bell. Yny uyd Dillus Uarua c yn deiu  baed coet. Llyna hagen y ryss r m yaf a ochela d Arthur eiryoet. Heb y Bedwyr yna  rth Gei : "Ae hatwaenost di ef?" "Atwen," heb y 30  
 Kei; " lyna Dillus Uarrua c. Nyt oes yn y byt kyn lyuan a dalyo Drutwyn keneu Greit uab Eri, namyn kyn lyuan o uaryf y g r a wely di racko; ac ny m ynhaa heuyt, onyt yn

vyó y tynnir a chyllellprenneu oe uaraf, kanys breu uyd yn uaró." "Mae an kynghor ninneu órth hynny?" heb y Bedwyr. "Gadón ef," heb y Kei, "y yssu y wala or kic; a góedy hynny kyscu a óna." Tra yttoed ef yn hynny, 5 y buant óynteu yn góneuthur kylllellbrenneu. Pan óybu Gei yn diheu y uot ef yn kyscu, góneuthur póll a oruc dan y draet móyhaf yn y byt. A tharaó dyrnaót arnaó anueitraól y ueint a oruc, ae wascu yn y póll, hyt pan daroed udunt y gnithiaó yn llóyr ar kylllellbrenneu y uaryf; a góedy 10 hynny y lad yn góbyl. Ac odynd yd aethant eil deu hyt yg Kelli Wic yg Kernyó, a chynllyuann o uaryf Dillus Uaruabc gantunt. Ae rodi a oruc Kei yn llaó Arthur. Ac yna y kanei Arthur yr egllyn hónn:

15 "Kynnllyuan a oruc Kei  
o uaryf Dillus uab Eurei;  
pei iach, dy angheu uydei."

Ac am hynny y sorres Kei, hyt pan uu abreid y uilwyr yr ynys honn tangneuedu y róng Kei ac Arthur. Ac eissoes nac yr anghyfnert ar Arthur nac yr llad y wyr nyt 20 ymyrróys Kei yn reit gyt ac ef o hynny allan.

16. Ac yna y dywaót Arthur: "Beth iaónaf weithon y geissaó or annoethu?" "Iaónaf yó keissaó Drutwyn keneu Greit uab Eri." Kyn no hynny ychydic yd aeth Creidylat uerch Lud Laó Ereint gan Wythyr mab Greidaól. A chynn 25 kyscu genthi dyuot Góynn uab Nud ae dóyn y treis. Kynnullaó llu o Wythyr uab Greidaól a dyuot y ymlad a Góynn mab Nud. A goruot o Wyn, a dala Greit mab Eri a Glinneu eil Taran a Górgóst Letlóm a Dyfnarth y uab; a dala o Penn uab Nethaóc a Nóython a Chyledyr Wylt y 30 uab. A llad Nóython a oruc, a diot y gallon, a chymhell ar Kyledyr yssu callon y dat; ac am hynny yd aeth Kyledyr yg góyllt. Clybot o Arthur hynny, a dyuot hyt y Gogled.



A dyuynnv a oruc ef Góynn uab Nud attaó, a gellöng y wyrda y gantaó oe garchar, a góneuthur tangneued y róng Góynn mab Nud a Góythyr mab Greidaól. Sef tangneued a wnaethpóyt, gadu y uoróyn yn ty y that yn diuóyn or dóy barth; ac ymlad bob duó kalan Mei uyth hyt dyd braót or dyd hónnó allan y róng Góynn a Góythyr; ar un a orffo onadunt dyd braót, kymeret y uoróyn. A góedy kymot y góyrda hynny uelly, y kauas Arthur Mygdón march Góedó a chynnlllyuan Córš Cant Ewin.

17. Góedy hynny yd aeth Arthur hyt yn Lydaó, a Mabon uab Mellt gantaó a Góare Góallt Euryn, y geissaó deu gi Glythmyr L[ed]jewic. A góedy eu kaffel yd aeth Arthur hyt yg gorllewin Iwerdon y geissaó Górgi Seueri, ac Odgar uab Aed brenhin Iwerdon gyt ac ef. Ac odynd yd aeth Arthur yr Gogled, ac y delis Kyledyr Wyllt. Ac yd aeth Yskithyrwynn Pennbeid; ac yd aeth Mabon mab Mellt, a deu gi Glythuyr Ledewic yn y laó a Drutwyn geneu Greit mab Eri. Ac yd aeth Arthur ehun yr erhyl, a Chauall ki Arthur yn y laó. Ac yd esgynnóys Kaó o Brydein ar Lamrei kassec Arthur, ac achub yr kyfuarch. Ac yna y kymerth Kaó o Brydein nerth bóyelllic, ac yn wychyr trebelit y doeth ef yr baed, ac y hólides y benn yn deu hanner. A chymryt a oruc Kaó yr ysgithyr. Nyt y kón a nottayssei Yspaden ar Gólhóch a ladaód y baed, namyn Kauall ki Arthur ehun.

18. A góedy llad Ysgithyrwyn Bennbeid, yd aeth Arthurae niuer hyt yng Kelli Wic yng Kernyó. Ac odynd y gyrróys Menó mab Teirgóaed y edrych a uei y tlysseu y róng deu glust Tórch Tróyth, rac salwen oed uynet y ymdaraó ac ef, ony<sup>1</sup> bei y tlysseu gantaó. Diheu hagen oed y uot ef yno; neur daroed idaó diffeithaó traean Iwerdon. Mynet a oruc Menó y ymgeis ac óynt. Sef y góelas óynt yn Esgeir Oeruel yn Iwerdon. Ac ymrithaó a oruc Menó yn rith

1. MS. ac ony, *corr. Loth.*

ederyn ; a disgynnu a ōnaeth uch penn y gŵal, a cheissaŵ ysglyffyaŵ un or tlysseu y gantaŵ ; ac yn chauas dim hagen namyn un oe wrych. Kyuodi a oruc ynteu yn wychyr da ac ymysgytyaŵ, hyt pan ymordiweđaŵd peth or gŵenŵyn ac 5 ef ; odyňa ny bu dianaf Menŵ uyth.

19. Gyrru o Arthur gennat gŵedy hynny ar Odgar uab Aed, brenhin Iwerdon, y erchi peir Diŵrnach Wydel, maer idaŵ. Erchi o Otgar idaŵ y rodi. Y dywaŵt Diŵrnach :  
 “ Duŵ a wyr, pei hanffeŵ well o welet un olŵc arnaŵ, nas 10 kaffeŵ.” A dyuot o gennat Arthur a nac genthi o Iwerdon. Kychŵynnu a oruc Arthur ac ysgaŵn niuer ganthaŵ, a mynet ym Prytwen y long, a dyuot y Ywerdon ; a dygyrchu ty Diŵrnach Wydel a orugant. Gŵelsant niuer Otgar eu meint. A gŵedy bŵyta onadunt ac yuet eu dogyn, erchi y peir a 15 oruc Arthur. Y dywaŵt ynteu, pei as rodei y neb, y rodei ōrth eir Odgar brenhin Iwerdon. Gŵedy lleueryd nac udunt, kyuodi a oruc Bedwyr ac ymauael yn y peir, ae dodŵ ar geuyn Hygŵyd gŵas Arthur ; braŵt oed hŵnnŵ unuam y Gachamŵri gŵas Arthur. Sef oed y sŵyd ef yn wastat 20 ymdŵyn peir Arthur a dodŵ tan y danaŵ. Meglyt o Lenlleaŵc Wydel yg Kaletvŵlch, ae ellŵng ar y rot, a llad Diŵrnach Wydel ae niuer ach[1]an. Dyuot lluoed Iwerdon ac ymlad ac ŵy. A gŵedy ffo y lluoed achlan, mynet Arthur ae wyr yn eu gŵyd yn y llong, ar peir yn llaŵn o sŵllt 25 lŵrdon gantunt ; a diskynnu yn ty llŵydeu mab Kelcoet ym Porth Kerdin yn Dyuet. Ac yno y mae messur y peir.

20. Ac yna y kynnullŵys Arthur a oed o gynifyŵr yn teir ynys Prydein ae their racynys, ac a oed yn Freinc a Llydaŵ a Normandi a Gŵlat yr Haf, ac a oed o gicŵr dethol 30 a march clotuaŵr. Ac yd aeth ar niuerod hynny olŵ hyt yn lŵrdon. Ac y bu ouyn maŵr ac ergryn racdaŵ yn Iwerdon. A gŵedy disgynnu Arthur yr tir, dyuot seint Iwerdon attaŵ y erchi naŵd idaŵ. Ac y rodes ynteu naŵd udunt hŵy, ac y

rodassant bynteu eu bendyth idaó ef. Dyuot a oruc góyr Iwerdon hyt att Arthur a rodi bóyttal idaó. Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt yn Esgeir Oeruel yn Iwerdon, yn y lle yd oed Tórch Tróyth ae seithlydyn moch gantaó. Gellóng kón arnaó o bop parth. Y dyd hónnó educher yd ymladaó y 5 Góydyl ac ef; yr hynny pymhet ran Iwerdon<sup>1</sup> a ónaeth yn diffieith. A thrannoeth yd ymladaó teulu Arthur ac ef; namyn a gaóssant o dróc y gantaó, ny chaóssant dim o da. Y trydyd dyd yd ymladaó Arthur ehun ac ef naó nos a naó nieu; ny ladaó namyn un parchell oe uoch. Gouynnóys 10 y góyr y Arthur peth oed ystyr yr hóch hónnó. Y dywaót ynteu: "Brenhin uu, ac am y bechaót y rithóys Duó ef yn hóch."

21. Gyrru a ónaeth Arthur Górhryr Góalstaót Ieithoed y geissaó ymadraó ac ef. Mynet a oruc Górhryr yn rith ederyn, a disgynnv a ónaeth vch benn y wal ef ae seithlydyn 15 moch. A gouyn a oruc Górhryr Góalstaót Ieithoed idaó: "Yr y gúr ath wnaeth ar y deló honn, or gellóch dywedut, y harchaf dyuot un ohonaóch y ymdidan ac Arthur." Górtheb a ónaeth Grugyn Górych Ereint (mal adaned aryant oed y wrych oll; y fford y kerdei ar goet ac ar uaes y góelit, ual y llithrei y 20 wrych). Sef atdeb a rodes Grugyn: "Myn y gúr an gónaeth ni ar y deló honn, ny wnaón, ac ny dywedón dim yr Arthur. Oed digaón o dróc a ónathoed Duó ynni, an góneuthur ar y deló hon, kynny deleóch chóitheu y ymlad a ni." "Mi a dywedaf yóch yd ymlad Arthur am y grib ar ellyn ar 25 góelleu yssyd róng deu glust Tórch Tróyth." Heb y Grugyn: "Hyt pann gaffer y eneit ef yn gyntaf, ny cheffir y tlysseu hynny. Ar bore auory y kychóynnón ni odyma; ac yd aón y wlat Arthur, ar meint móyhaf a allom ni o dróc a ónaón yno." Kychóyn a orugant hóy ar y mor parth a 30 Chymry. Ac yd aeth Arthur ae luoed ae ueirch ae gón ym Prytwen, a tharaó lygat ymwelet ac bynt. Disgynnu a ónaeth

1. MS. y iwerdon.

Tŵrch Trŵyth ym Porth Cleis yn Dyuet. Dyuet a oruc Arthur hyt ym Mynyŵ y nos honno. Trannoeth dywedut y Arthur eu mynet heibaŵ. Ac ymordiwes a oruc ac ef yn llad gŵarthech Kynnwas Kŵrr y Uagyl. A gŵedy llad a oed yn  
 5 Deugledyf o dyn a mil kynn dyuet Arthur, or pan deuth Arthur, y kychŵynnŵys Tŵrch Trŵyth odynd hyt ym Presseleu. Dyuet Arthur a lluoed y byt hyt yno. Gyrru a oruc Arthur y wyr yr erhyl, Ely a Thrachmyr, a Drutwyn keneu Greit mab Eri yn y laŵ ehun; a Gŵarhegyt uab Kaŵ yghongyl  
 10 arall, a deu gi Glythmyr Letewic yn y laŵ ynteu; a Bedwyr a Chauall ki Arthur yn y laŵ ynteu. A restru a oruc y milwyr oll o deu tu Nyuer. Dyuet tri meib Cledyf Divŵlch, gŵyr a gauas clot maŵr yn llad Ysgithyrwyn Pennbeid. Ac yna y kychŵynnŵys ynteu o Lynn Nyuer, ac y doeth y  
 15 Gŵm Kerŵyn, ac y rodes kyuarth yno. Ac yna y lladaŵd ef bedwar ryssŵr y Arthur, Gŵarhegyd mab Kaŵ, a Tharaŵc Allt Clŵyt, a Reidŵn uab Eli Atuer, ac Iscouan Hael. A gŵedy llad y gŵyr hynny, y rodes yr eil kyuarth udunt yn y lle, ac y lladaŵd Gŵydr e uab Arthur, a Garselit Wydel,  
 20 a Gleŵ uab Yscaŵt, ac Iscaŵyn uab Panon; ae doluryaŵ ynteu yna a ŵnaethpŵyt.

22. Ar bore ym bronn y dyd drannoeth yd ymordiweđaŵd rei or gŵyr ac ef. Ac yna y lladaŵd Huandaŵ a Gogigŵr a Phenn Pingon, tri gŵeis Gleŵlŵyt Gauaeluaŵr, hyt nas gŵydyat  
 25 Duŵ was yn y byt ar y helŵ ynteu, eithyr Laesgenym ehunan, gŵr ny hanoed well neb ohonaŵ. Ac y gyt a hynny y lladaŵd llawer o wyr y ŵlat, a Gŵlydyn saer, penŵaer y Arthur. Ac yna yd ymordiweđaŵd Arthur ym Pelumyaŵc ac ef. Ac yna y lladaŵd ynteu Madaŵc mab Teithyon, a Gŵyn  
 30 mab Tringat mab Neuŵt, ac Eiryaŵn Pennlloran. Ac odynd yd aeth ef hyt yn Aber Tyŵi. Ac yno y rodes kyuarth udunt. Ac yna y lladaŵd ef Kynlas mab Kynan, a Gŵilenhin bre[nh]jin Freinc. Odynd yd aeth hyt yg

Glynn Ystu. Ac yna yd ymgollasant y gŷyr ar cŷn ac ef. Dywynnu a oruc Arthur Gŷyn uab Nud attab, a gouyn idab a bydyatef dim yŷrth Tŷrch Trŷyth. Y dywaŷt ynteunasgŷydyat.

23. Y hela y moch yd aeth y kynnydyon yna oŷl hyt yn Dyffryn Lychŷr. Ac y digribyŷys Grugyn Gŷallt Ereint 5 udunt a Lŷydaŷc Gouynnyat; ac y lladass[ant] y kynnydyon, hyt na diengis dyn yn vyŷ onadunt namyn un gŷr. Sef a oruc Arthur dyuot ae luoed hyt lle yd oed Grugyn a Lŷydaŷc, a gellŷng yna arnadunt a oed o gi rynodydoed yn llŷyr. Ac ŷrth yr aŷr a dodet yna ar kyuarth, 10 y doeth Tŷrch Trŷyth ac y diffyrth ŷynt. Ac yr pan dathoedynt dros uor Iwerdon, nyt ymwelsei ac ŷynt hyt yna. Dygŷydaŷ a ŷnaethpŷyt yna a gŷyr a chŷn arnaŷ. Ymrodi y gerdet ohonaŷ ynteu hyt ym Mynydd Amanŷ. Ac yna y llas banŷ oe uoch ef. Ac yna yd aethpŷyt eneit 15 dros eneit ac ef. Ac y lladŷyt yna Tŷrch Llaŷin. Ac yna y llas arall oe voch; Gŷys oed y enŷ. Ac ody na yd aeth hyt yn Dyffrynn Amanŷ. Ac yno y llas banŷ a bennwic. Nyt aeth ody no gantaŷ oe uoch yn vyŷ namyn Grugyn Gŷallt Ereint a Lŷydaŷc Gouynnyat. 20 Or lle hŷnnŷ yd aethant hyt yn Llŷch Eŷin. Ac yd ymordiwedaŷd Arthur ac ef yno. Rodi kyuarth a ŷnaeth ynteu yna. Ac yna y lladaŷd ef Echel Uordŷyt Tŷll, ac Arŷyli eil Gŷydaŷc Gŷyr, a llaber o wyr a chŷn heuyt. Ac yd aethant ody na hyt yn Llŷch Taŷy. Yscar a ŷnaeth 25 Grugyn Gŷrych Ereint ac ŷynt yna. Ac yd aeth Grugyn ody na hyt yn Dintywi. Ac ody na yd aeth hyt yg Keredigyaŷn, ac Eil a Thrachmyr gantaŷ, a lliaŷs gyt ac ŷynt heuyt. Ac y doeth hyt yg Garth Gregyn. Ac yno y<sup>1</sup> llas Llŷydaŷc Gouynnyat yn y mysc. Ac y lladaŷd 30 Ruduyŷ Rys, a llaber gyt ac ef. Ac yna yd aeth Llŷytaŷc hyt yn Ystrat Yŷ. Ac yno y kyuaruu gŷyr Lydaŷ ac ef.

Ac yna y lladaŵd ef Hir Peissaŵc brenhin Lydaŵ, a Lygatrud Emys a Gôrbothu, eŵythred Arthur, vrodryr y uam. Ac yna y llas ynteu.

24. Tŵrch Trŵyth a aeth yna y rŵng Taŵy ac Euyas.  
 5 Gŵyssyaŵ Kernyŵ a Dyfneint o Arthur yn y erbyn hyt yn aber Hafren. A dywedut a oruc Arthur ŵrth vilŵyr yr ynys honn: "Tŵrch Trŵyth a ladaŵd llaŵer om gŵyr. Myn gŵrhyt gŵyr, nyt a mi yn uyŵ yd aho ef y Gernyŵ. Nys ymlityaf i ef bellach, namyn mynet eneit dros eneit ac ef a  
 10 wnaŵ. Gŵneŵch chŵi a ŵnelhoch." Sef a daruu o gyghor gantaŵ ellŵng kat o uarchogyon, a chŵn yr ynys gantunt, hyt yn Euyas, ac ymchoelut odyndy hyt yn Hafren, ae ragot yno ac a oed o vilwyr prouedic yn yr ynys honn, ae yrru anghen yn anghen yn Hafren. A mynet a ŵnaeth Mabon  
 15 uab Modron gantaŵ ar Wynn mygdŵn march Gŵedŵ yn Hafren, a Goreu mab Custennin, a Menŵ mab Teirgŵaed y rŵng Lynn Liŵan ac aber Gŵy. A dygŵydaŵ o Arthur arnaŵ, a ryssŵyr Prydein gyt ac ef. Dynessau a oruc Osla Gyllelluaŵr a Manaŵydan uab Llyr a  
 20 Chacmŵri gŵas Arthur a Gŵyn Gelli, a dygrynnyaŵ yndaŵ, ac ymauael yn gyntaf yn y traet, ae gleicaŵ ohonunt yn Hafren, yny yttoed yn llenŵi odyuchtaŵ. Brathu amŵs o Uabon uab Modron or neil[1] parth, a chael yr ellyn y gantaŵ. Ac or parth arall y dygyrchŵys Kyledyr Wyllt y  
 25 ar amŵs arall gantaŵ yn Hafren, ac y duc y gŵelleu y gantaŵ. Kynn kaffel diot y grib, kaffel dayar ohonaŵ ynteu ae draet. Ac or pan gauas y tir, ny allŵys na chi na dyn na march y ganhymdeith, hyt pan aeth y Gernyŵ. Noc a gaffat o drŵc yn keissaŵ y tlysseu hynny y gantaŵ, gŵaeth a gaffat  
 30 yn keissaŵ diffryt y deu ŵr rac eu bodi. Kacmŵri ual y tynnit ef y uynynd, y tynnei deu uaen ureuan ynteu yr affŵys. Osla Gyllelluaŵr yn redec yn ol y tŵrch, y dygŵydyŵs y gyllell oe wein ac y kolles; ae wein ynteu

gŵedy hynny yn llawn or dŵfyr, ual y tynnit ef y uynyd, y  
tynnei hitheu ef yr affŵys. Odyna yd aeth Arthur a lluoed,  
hyt pan ymordiweadaŵd ac ef yg Kernyb. Gŵare oed a gafat  
o drŵc gantaŵ kyn no hynny y ōrth a gaffat yna gantaŵ yn  
keissaŵ y grib. O drŵc y gilyd y kaffat y grib y gantaŵ. 5  
Ac odyna y holet ynteu o Gernyb, ac y gyrrŵyt yr mor yn y  
gyueir. Ny wybuŵyt vyth o hynny allan pa le yd aeth, ac  
Anet ac Aethlem gantaŵ. Ac odyno yd aeth Arthur y  
ymeneinaŵ ac y uŵrŵ y ludet y arnaŵ hyt yg Kelli Wic yg Kernyb.

25. Dywedut o Arthur: "A oes dim weithon or anoethau 10  
heb gaffel?" Y dywaŵt vn or gŵyr: "Oes. Gŵaet y widon  
Ordu merch y widon Orwen o penn Nant Gouut yg gŵrthtir  
Uffern." Kychŵyn a oruc Arthur parth ar Gogled,  
a dyuot hyt lle yd oed gogof y wrach. A chynghori o  
Wynn uab Nud a Gŵythyŵ uab Greidaŵl gellŵng Kacmŵri a 15  
Hygŵyd y uraŵt y ymlad ar wrach. Ac ual yd euthant y  
myŵn yr ogof, y hachub a oruc y wrach; ac ymauael yn  
Hygŵyd herŵyd gŵallt y benn, ae daraŵ yr llawr deni.  
Ac ymauel o Kacmŵri yndi hitheu herŵyd gŵallt y  
phenn, ae thynnu y ar Hygŵyd yr llawr. Ac ymchoelut a 20  
oruc hitheu ar Kacmŵri, ac eu dygaboli yll deu, ac eu diaruu, ae  
gyrru allan dan eu hub ac eu hob. A lliŵyaŵ a oruc Arthur  
o welet y deu was hayachen wedy eu llad, a cheissaŵ achub  
yr ogof. Ac yna y dywedassant Gŵynn a Gŵythyŵ ōrthaŵ:  
"Nyt dec ac nyt digrif genhym dy welet yn ymgribyaŵ a 25  
gŵrach. Gellŵng Hir Amren a Hir Eidyl yr ogof." A mynet  
a orugant. Ac or bu drŵc traŵferth y deu gynt, gŵaeth uu  
draŵferth y deu hynny, hyt nas gŵypei Duŵ y vn ohonunt,  
ell pedwar allu mynet or lle, namyn mal y dodet ell pedwar  
ar Lamrei kassec Arthur. Ac yna achub a oruc Arthur 30  
drŵs yr ogof, ac y ar y drŵs a uyrŵei y wrach a Charnwennan  
y gyllell, ae tharaŵ am y hanner, yny uu yn deu gelŵrn hi. A  
chymryt a oruc Kaŵ o Brydein gŵaet y widon ae gadŵ ganthaŵ.

#### IV. THE PROCEDURE IN A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY.

Puipenac aue~~nn~~o kefro~~y~~  
 haul am tir a dayar.<sup>1</sup> Kefroet  
 panue~~nn~~o o nauuethid ka-  
 langayaf allan. Neu onauu-  
 5 ethid me~~y~~. Kanis<sup>2</sup> eram-  
 seroyd hen~~ny~~ ybit agoredic  
 keureith am tir ay dayar.

Oderuit yr haulur me~~nn~~u  
 10 holi tir en eramseroyt hi~~nn~~i  
 deuhet<sup>1</sup> ar er argluit yerchi  
 did y guarandau y haul  
 a hi~~nn~~i aretir. In edid  
 hu~~nn~~u datkanet y haul. Ni  
 15 dele y dithun<sup>2</sup> kaifail ateb  
 edithun. Kanis haul dissiuit  
 yu ar<sup>3</sup> guercheidveith ac  
 wrth hi~~nn~~i yguercheidveith  
 a deleant oyt urth porth.  
 20 Yaun yu irhalur y ludyas  
 udunt onit ekeureyth ay  
 deweyt ydeleu. Ac ena  
 emay<sup>4</sup> ereneyt ev guarandau.  
 A gouin pale emay eu porth.  
 25 Odeweduuant pot eu porth  
 eneu kemmut euhun. Roy  
 oyt trideu udunt. Obi en

1. Pwy bynnac a uynno  
 kyffroi hawl am dir a dayar,  
 kyffroet pan uynno o nawvet  
 dyd kalan gayaf allan, neu  
 o nawvet dyd Mei. Kanys  
 yn yr amseroed hynny y  
 byd agoredic kyvreith am  
 dir a dayar.

2. O deruyd yr hawlwr  
 mynnu holi tir yn yr  
 amseroed hynny deuet ar yr  
 arglwyd y erchi dyd y  
 warandaw y hawl, a hynny  
 ar y tir. Yn y dyd hwnnw  
 dadganet y hawl. Ny dyly  
 kaffael ateb y dyd hwnn.  
 Kanys hawl dysseivyt yw ar  
 y gwercheidweit. Ac wrth  
 hynny y gwercheidweit a  
 dylyant oet wrth borth. Iawn  
 yw yr hawlwr y ludyas udunt,  
 onyt y gyvreith a dyweit y  
 dylyu. Ac yna y mae iawn  
 yr yneit eu gwarandaw, a  
 govyn pa le y mae eu porth.  
 O dywedant bot eu porth yn  
 eu kymmwt eu hun, roi oet

(Ch. 1). 1 the second *a* is added over the line, 2 *add yn with several MSS.*

(Ch. 2). 1 *h* over the line, 2 omit, 3 *add y with many MSS.*, 4 *add iaun with many MSS.*



eli<sup>5</sup> kemut naunieu. Obit  
 en etredit neu uot llanu a trey  
 eregthun ac eu porth. Os  
 kin hanner did ebernir eroyt ·  
 petheunos or did hunnu ebit  
 eroyt. Os guedi hanner did  
 petheunos otrannoeth. Ac  
 essev achaus yu henne.  
 Kanydoys did kubil · ac nat  
 yaun talu drill did en lle did.  
 Ac en eroyt barnedic hunnu ·  
 emay yaun deuod ar etir<sup>6</sup> ac  
 vynt ac eu porth.

Ac ena ymay yaun  
 guneythur<sup>1</sup> du<sup>2</sup> pleit ac  
 eiste en<sup>3</sup> keureithiaul. Esseu  
 ual etestedyr en keureythiaul.  
 Eiste orbrenhin neu or neb  
 a uo enile. ay keuen ar er  
 eul<sup>4</sup> neu ar er<sup>5</sup> hin. Rac  
 aulonidu er hin oyuyneb ef.  
 Ar enat llis neu egnat  
 ekemut erhun henau auo  
 en eiste rac euron ef. Ac  
 ar<sup>6</sup> llau assu y hunnu er  
 egnat arall auo enemays neu  
 er eneid.<sup>7</sup> Ac ar ellau

tridieu udunt. O byd yn yr  
 eil gymmw, naw nieu. O  
 byd yn y trydyd neu vot  
 llanw a threi yryngthunt ac  
 eu porth, os kyn hanner dyd 5  
 y bernir yr oet, pythewnos  
 or dyd hwnnw y byd yr  
 oet; os gwedy hanner dyd,  
 pythewnos o drannoeth. Ac  
 yssef achaws yw hynny; 10  
 kanyt oes dyd kwbyl, ac nat  
 iawn talu dryll dyd yn lle  
 dyd. Ac yn yr oet barnedic  
 hwnnw y mae iawn dyvot ar  
 y tir ac wynt ac eu porth. 15

3. Ac yna y mae iawn  
 gwneuthur dwy bleit aceisted  
 yn gyfreithiawl. Sef ual yd  
 eistedir yn gyfreithyawl.  
 Eisted or brenhin neu or neb 20  
 a uo yn y le ae gevyn ar yr  
 heul neu ar yr hin, rac  
 avlonydu yr hin oe wyneb  
 ef. Ar ynat llys neu ynat y  
 kymmwt, yr hwn hynaf a uo, 25  
 yn eisted rac y uron ef. Ac  
 ar y llaw assw y hwnnw yr  
 ynat arall a vo yn y maes.  
 Ac ar y llaw deheu idaw yr

(Ch. 2). 5 leg. ereil, 6 e over the line

(Ch. 3). 1 n and y over the line, 2 leg. dui, 3 MS. eneu, 4 the e  
 over the line, 5 added over the line, 6 add y with many MSS., 7 after neu  
 some letters cancelled; er eneid added over the line

deheu ydau ereferiat neu er eferieit.<sup>8</sup> Ac egkell<sup>9</sup> er argluid edeu heneuid. Ay gairda o hinny allan o pop-  
 5 thu ydau. Odena ford yr eneyt keuarvyneb· ac eu<sup>10</sup> darimret yeubraudle. Keghaus er haulur ar ellau assu ydau ar eford· ar haulur  
 10 enessav· ydau· en eperued<sup>11</sup> ar kanllau ar ellau arall ydau. Ar<sup>12</sup> rigyll en seuill trakeuen ekeghaus<sup>13</sup>· er amdiffinur ar ellau deheu ar  
 15 eforth· ar amdiffinhur enessau· ydau· eneperued· ay kanllau or tu arall ydau· arigill traigeuen entheu. Gwedi darvo eiste euelly·  
 20 Kemerer<sup>14</sup> mach ar keureith. Esseu meychyeu auid ar<sup>15</sup> tir ay dayar. Guystlon<sup>16</sup> o dynyon· deu<sup>17</sup> dyn neu auo muy· o popleit· arey<sup>18</sup> hinni  
 25 emedyant er argluid edant.

effeiryat neu yr effeiryait. Ac yg kylch yr arglwyd y deu hyneuid; ae wyrda o hynny allan o bob tu idau. Odyna fford yr yneit gyvarwyneb ac wynt y darymret y eu brawdle. Kynghaws yr hawlwr ar y llaw assw idaw ar y fford, ar hawlwr yn nessaf idaw yn y perved, ar kanllaw ar y llaw arall idaw; ar ringyll yn sevyll tracheuyn y kynghaws. Ar bleit arall y tu arall yr fford; yn nessaf yr fford kynghaws yr amdiffynnwr ar y llaw deheu ar y fford, ar amdiffynnwr yn nessaf idaw yn y perued, ae ganllaw or tu arall idaw; ar rhingyll traegevyn ynteu. Gwedy darvo eisted yvelly, kymerer mach ar gyvreith. Sef meichyeu a vyd ar dir a dayar, gwystlon o dynyon, deu dyn neu a vo mwy o bob pleit. Ar rei hynny yn medyant yr arglwyd yd ant.

(Ch. 3). 8 in marg., where it has been written twice, the first entry having been mutilated by the cutting of the margin, 9 on p. 103 the phrase is *yný gylch*, 10 *leg. ny y or the like*, 11 after this ydau with a stroke beneath it, 12 after this some letters cancelled, 13 some words omitted which in the text of the Laws are: ar bleit arall y tu arall yr ford yn nessat yr fford kyglaos, 14 MS. Kemere<sup>t</sup>, 15 MS. a<sup>t</sup>, 16 some letters cancelled, 17 *e* over the line, 18 *h* after *a* cancelled and *r* written above it.

Odena guedi henne e dodir tellued.<sup>1</sup> essev yu hene.<sup>2</sup> Gostec ar emays. Puipenac a thorro etelleued honno teyr biu<sup>3</sup> camluru a tal ne nau ugeint. Ar geyr adeweter guedi er ostec bot hunnu<sup>4</sup> en diuunyant er neb ay deweto ac yr keghaus edevether irporth ydau.

Guedi daruo eyste<sup>1</sup> en keureithaul mal y redewes-sam ny vchot ena e may yaun yr egnat deueduit wrth e dupleit ymdeveduch o keureith weithion. Ac ena may yaun iregnat gouin yr<sup>2</sup> haulur puy de keghaus<sup>3</sup> di a puy de kanllau ac ena e may yaun<sup>4</sup> yr haulur ev henwi. Ac ena may yaun eregnat gouin ir haulur a dodycolli a kaffayl eneu pen vinteu. Ac ena ema yaun yr haulur<sup>5</sup> dodav heb eff. Ac ena may yaun eregnat<sup>6</sup> ac yr kanllau a sauant huy ydau ef en erenmay ef enidody arnadunthuy.<sup>7</sup> Ac

4. Odyna gwedy hynny y dodir tyllwed. Sefyw hynny, gostec ar y maes. Pwy bynnac a dorro y dyllwed honno, teir buw camlwrw a 5 dal neu naw ugeint. Ar geir a dywetter gwedy yr ostec, bot hwnnw yn diuwyn-yant yr neb ae dywetto, ac yr kynghaws y dywetter yr 10 porth idaw.

5. Gwedy darvo eisted yn gyvreithiawl, val y rydywed-assam ni uchot, yna y mae iawn yr ynat dyvedut wrth y 15 dwy bleit: "ymdywedwch o gyvreith weithyon." Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "pwy dy gynghaws di a phwy dy 20 ganllaw?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr eu henwi. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "a dody colli a chaffael yn eu pen 25 wynteu?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr dywedut, "dodaf," heb ef. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr kynghaws ac yr kanllaw, a 30

(Ch. 4). 1 *u* over the line, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *i* over the line, 4 *after this* did *cancelled*

(Ch. 5). 1 *y* over the line, 2 MS. *h*yr, 3 *ke* over the line, 4 *after this* eregnat *cancelled*, 5 *leg.* haulur deuednyt, 6 *add* gouin yr kyghaus, 7 *h* over the line

ena emay yaun<sup>8</sup> udunt huin-  
theu dewedvyt sauun.

5

Ac guedi hinny emay yaun  
eregnat gouin eramdiffenvr<sup>1</sup>  
puy dekeghaus ditheu apuy  
de kanllau. Ac ena emay  
10 yaun ydau entehu eu henwi.  
Ac ena emay yaun<sup>2</sup> yr egn-  
at gouin ydau entehu · a did  
ev kolli a kaffayl en<sup>3</sup> eu pen  
Ac ena may yaun ydau  
15 entheu dewetuyt dodau heb  
ef. Ac ena emay iaun<sup>3</sup>  
eregnat devetvit wrth er-  
haulur · haul di weython de  
haul. Ac ena emay<sup>4</sup> yaun  
20 yhaulur<sup>5</sup> decreu.

Llema essit yaun yr haulur  
edewetuyd<sup>1</sup> menegi · yuot  
ef en briodaur ar etir hun-  
25 ema ardayar. Ac obit  
aameuho ydau ef yuot en  
briodaur · bot kanthau entheu  
a kathuo ybriodolder · o · ach  
ac edriu · hit emay digaun  
30 en ekeureyth. Ay reerru en

savant hwy idaw ef yn yr  
hyn y mae ef yn y dodi  
arnadunt hwy. Ac yna y  
mae iawn udunt hwynteu  
dywedut : “savun.”

6. A gwedy hynny y mae  
iawn yr ynat ouyn yr  
amdiffynnwr : “pwy dy  
gynghaws ditheu, a phwy dy  
ganllaw?” Ac yna y mae  
iawn ydau ynteu eu henwi.  
Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat  
ovyn idaw ynteu, a dyd ef  
golli a chaffael en eu pen.  
Ac yna y mae iawn idaw  
ynteu dywedut : “dodaf,” heb  
ef. Ac yna y mae iawn  
yr ynat dywedut wrth yr  
hawlwr : “hawl di weithon  
dy hawl.” Ac yna y mae  
iawn yr hawlwr dechreu.

7. Llyma yssyd iawn yr  
hawlwr y dywedut, menegi y  
vot ef yn briodawr ar y tir  
hwnn yma ar dayar. Ac o  
byt a amheuo idaw ef y vot  
yn briodawr, bot ganthaw  
ynteu a gatwo y briodolder  
o ach ac edrif, hyt y mae  
digawn yn y gyvreith, ae

(Ch. 5). 8 *after this* yregnat cancelled

(Ch. 6). 1 *e* over a cancelled *i*, 2 over the line, 3 over the line; *after this*  
irhaulur cancelled, 4 *e* over the line, 5 *leg.* yrhaulur

(Ch. 7). 1 MS. edewetduyd

agkeureithiaul yar ybriodol-  
der · ac osid ay hammehuh<sup>2</sup>  
emay ydau ef<sup>3</sup> ay guyr·  
yreherru enagkeureithiaul.  
Ac essev emayentehu<sup>4</sup>endodi  
ar ekeureith deleu deuot en  
keureythaul traykeuen er lle  
ereherruyd en agkeureith-  
yaul<sup>6</sup> ohonau.

Oderuit bot reŷ adewetho  
dodi keythveid ac guybed-  
yeid or un pleyt Ninni  
adewedun egellir ene war-  
handawer atdeb er amdiffen-  
hur.

Heb amdiffenhur<sup>1</sup> myuy  
essit briodaur o acch<sup>2</sup> ac  
edriu· ac esseu eduyf en  
guarchadu empriodolder<sup>3</sup> val  
emay goreu edeleauvy y-  
guarchadu· ac osid ay  
hamehuo y· am<sup>4</sup> henni  
emay ymy ageidu digaun<sup>5</sup>  
bot en guir adewedau. A  
thitheu obuosty ema ty hay-  
thost en keureythaul odema.  
Ac osid a hamehuo hinni·  
emay ymy digaun aygyr.

ryyrru yn anghyvreithyawl  
y ar y briodolder. Ac osit  
ae hamheuo, y mae idaw ef  
digawn ae gwyr y ryyrru yn  
anghyvreithyawl. Ac yssef 5  
y mae ynteu yn doddi ar y  
gyvreith, dylu dyvot yn  
gyvreithyawl traegvyn yr lle  
y ryyrrwyt yn anghyvreith-  
yawl ohonaw. 10

8. O dervyd bot rei a  
dywetto doddi ceidweid a  
gwybydyeid or un bleit,  
Ninni a dywedwn y gellir,  
yny warandawer atdeb y 15  
amdiffynnwr.

9. Heb yr amdiffynnwr:  
“ Mivi yssyd briodawr o ach  
ac edrif. A sef yd wyf yn  
gwarchadw vym priodolder, 20  
val y mae goreu y dylaf y  
warchadw . Acosit ae ham-  
heuo imi hynny, y mae imi  
ageidw digawn bot yn wir a  
dywedaf. A thitheu, o buost 25  
ti yma, ti a aethost yn  
gyvreithyawl odyma. Ac osit  
a hamheuo hynny y mae imi  
digawn ae gwyr.”

(Ch. 7). 2 the third *h* over the line, 3 digawn has probably been omitted, 4 *h* over the line, 5 *r* over the line

(Ch. 9). 1 *leg.* eramdiffenhur, 2 there is something like an *h* over the second *c*, 3 the third letter seems to have been altered to *p*, 4 *y* am; *leg.* y mi? 5 *leg.* digaun ageidu

Ninni adewedun ket darfo  
 eramdiffenur rohi atheb kin  
 oyholý ev or haulur bot en  
 anolo er ateb· eny warandao  
 5 ef· er haul ac odena atebet.

Ac guedy darfo vdunt  
 euduy kegheussayth maledewedassam ni vchot. Gouenet  
 10 er egnat udunt aydygaun hyn  
 adewedassant. Ac gouenet  
 udunt auennant guellau eu  
 kykeussayth.<sup>1</sup> Ac obit ay  
 menno gather<sup>2</sup> ydau. Ac  
 15 onibit ay menno kymeret  
 eregnat euduy kegheussayth<sup>3</sup>  
 a dadkanet huy. A guedy  
 estadkano aynt eregneyt  
 allan. ar effeyryhet y gyt  
 20 ac vy· a. Righyll ygyt aguy·  
 hy eu kadv. Rac douot  
 dynyon ywarandu<sup>4</sup> arnadunt.  
 Oderuit idyn deuot ywarandau  
 arnadunt huntheu<sup>5</sup> ev  
 25 adely talu teyrbuy kamluru  
 hir brenhin. Ac o bit ebrenin  
 enemays· ev adele talu kam-  
 luru deudeplic am hinny.  
 Ac ena guedy edeystedont  
 30 huy emay iaun· yr effeyryat·  
 guedya duy ydangos oduy

10. Ninni a dywedwn, kyt  
 darffo yr amdiffynnwr roi  
 atteb kyn noe holi ef or  
 hawlwr, bot yn anolo yr  
 atteb, yny warandao ef yr  
 hawl, ac odyna attebet.

11. A gwedy darffo udunt  
 eu dwy gyingheusaeth, val y  
 dywedassam ni uchot, gov-  
 ynet yr ynat udunt, ae  
 digawn yr hyn a dywedas-  
 sant, a gouynet udunt a  
 vynnant gwellau eu kyng-  
 heussaeth. Ac o byd ae  
 mynno, gatter idaw. Ac ony  
 byd ae mynno, kymeret yr  
 ynat eu dwy gyingheussaeth,  
 a dadganet hwy. A gwedy  
 as dadgano, aent yr yneit  
 allan, ar effeyryet y gyt ac  
 wy, ar ringhyll y gyt ac wy  
 y eu kadw, rac dyvot dynyon  
 y warandaw arnadunt. O  
 dervyd y dyn dyvot y waran-  
 daw arnadunt wynteu, ef a  
 dyly talu teirbuw kamlwrw  
 yr brenhin. Ac o byd y  
 brenhin yn y maes, ef a dyly  
 talu kamlwrw deudyplic am  
 hynny. Ac yna gwedy yd  
 eistedont hwy y mae iawn

(Ch. 11). 1 *ky* over the line, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *ssa* over the line, 4 *leg*.  
 ywarandaw, 5 the second *h* over the line

er yaun<sup>6</sup> udunt. Akanu onadunt huyntheu eu pader. Ac guedy epader emay yaun yr egnat dadkanu eduykeg-hessaith eylweyth.

Ac o deruit bot enreyt<sup>1</sup> egeyr keuarch. Elleger deu oy ouyn. Ac obit reyt yr bleyt egouener egeyr keuarhc ydy vrth kemyrit keghor<sup>2</sup> aynt tuy kan kanyat<sup>3</sup> yr egneyt hyeu keghor. ac essev edant ynŷuer ebuant en eukehussayth. heb auo muy. aguas yr argluyd ygyt aguy. yeu kadu Rac deuod neb yeu keghor. ygyt ac huy. ac odau neb atadunt ay keghoro talet ef kamluru er brenin a bot en anolo ekeghor. Ac guedy edarfo ekeghor deuent edeu hinny ar eregneyt<sup>4</sup> adatkanent egneyth<sup>5</sup> ekeghor.

Oderuit nabo reyt urth eyr keuarch yaun yu gadayl udunt vintheu eu ardelu.

yr effeiryat gwediaw Duw y dangos o Duw yr iawn udunt. A chanu onadunt wynteu eu pader. A gwedy y pader y mae iaun yr 5 ynŷat dadganu y dwy gyngheussaeth eilweith.

12. Ac o dervyd bot yn reit y geir kyvarch, ellynger deu oe ovyn. Ac o byd reit 10 yr bleit y govyrner y geir kyvarch idi wrth gymryt kynghor, aent wy gan ganyat yr yneit y eu kynghor. Ac yssev yd ant, y niver y buant 15 yn eu kyingheussaeth, heb a vo muy, a gwas yr arglwyd y gyt ac wy y eu kadw rac dyvot neb y eu kynghor y gyt ac wy. Ac o daw neb 20 attadunt ae kynghoro, talet ef gamlwrw yr brenhin, a bot yn anolo y kynghor. A gwedy y darffo y kynghor, deuent y deu hynny ar yr 25 yneit a dadganent yr yneit y kynghor.

13. Odervydnaboreit wrth eyr kyvarch, iawn yw gadael udunt wynteu eu hardelw, a 30

(Ch. 11). 6 *u* over the line

(Ch. 12). 1 *some* MSS. *add* wrth, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *y* over the line, 4 the second *e* over the line, 5 *n* over the line; *leg.* eregneit

- agerru deu youyn puy eu-  
gubideyt · ac eu kedweyt · a  
phale emaynt · odewedant eu  
bot ene mays · munaher vynt ·  
5 odewedant<sup>1</sup> eubot en<sup>2</sup> un ke-  
mut ac vy rodher oyd trideu<sup>3</sup>  
udunt. Odewedant eubot en  
ereil kemud rodher oyd  
naunyeu udunt. Odewetant  
10 eubot egulat arall vynt<sup>4</sup> neu  
lanu neu trey eregthunt ac  
vy · oyt petheunos or did  
hunnu · os kin hanner did  
vit · os guedy hanner did  
15 petheunos odranoyth · ar did  
hennu endyd kolli akaffayal.  
Abot eguystlon egkarch<sup>5</sup>  
brenin · hit edid hunnu · ac  
erchi y paup deuot ay devni-  
20 dev kanthau edid hynnu ·  
hit ar etir. Kenebo duun  
kan edu bleyd · hinny. Neu<sup>6</sup>  
edyu endid keureit bar-  
nedic.  
25 En etrededet guedi edele-  
her vyneb<sup>1</sup> iaun yu i paup  
eistet enelle mal ereystedus  
edid kint · ac obetant meiru  
30 rey or guir auu en ekeg-
- gyrru deu y ovyn pwy eu  
guibydeyt ac eu keidweit, a  
pha le y maent. O dywedant  
eu bot yn y maes, mwynhaer  
wynt. O dywedant eu bot  
yn un kymwt ac wy, rodher  
oet tridieu udunt. O dywe-  
dant eu bot yn yr eil gymwt,  
rodher oet naw nieu udunt.  
O dywedant eu bot yg gwlat  
arall neu lanw neu drei  
yryngthunt ac wy, oet  
pythewnos or dyd hwnnw,  
os kyn hannerdyd y byd.  
Os gwedy hannerdyd,  
pythewnos o dranoeth, ar  
dyd hwnnw yn dyd kolli a  
chaffael. A bot y gwystlon  
yg karchar y brenhin hyt y  
dyd hwnnw. Ac erchi y  
bawp dyvot ae devnydeu  
ganhaw y dyd hwnnw hyt  
ar y tir. Kynnybo duungan y  
dwy bleit hynny, neud ydiw  
yn dyd kyvreith barnedic.
14. Ynytrydyd dyd guedy  
y delher wyneb yn wyneb  
iawn yw y bawb eisted yn y  
lle, val y ryeistedws y dyd  
kynt. Ac o bydant meirw

(Ch. 13). 1 *ed* over the line, 2 over the line, 3 *e* over the line, 4 omitted in several MSS., 5 *leg.* karchar e, 6 *written twice over*; *leg.* neud

(Ch. 14). 1 *leg.* vyneb en vyneb; *there are remains of the missing words on the margin*



kussaeith dodder ereill en eu lle · a guedi er<sup>2</sup> eisteter ena emae yaunt yr haulur · kenic y devnidieu iam etestion ay keidveit<sup>3</sup> adeueduit evot ef en *paraut*. Ac ena emay yaun ir<sup>4</sup>amdifinnur gurtheb ac esev ateb a dere · deueduit yvot ef en *paraut* · ay defnetyeu kanhau val y hedeuis ac ena emae yaun yr brenin hercki dankos eguestelon en emays · kanys vint essit vechieu.<sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup>Ac ena emay yaun ir egnat deuedut kosb er anostec · esseu eu hene teir biu camluru abot en anolo egeir adeueter.

Ac ena emae yaun irhaulur dodi em pen er eneyt pan niu effo adedeuis<sup>1</sup> en kentaf testion · akeitueit · a deleu ohonau enteu<sup>2</sup> muenhau en kentaf Ac ena emay yaun yr eneit erchi ydau enteu duyn y keditveit<sup>3</sup> ay testion

rei or gwyr a vu yn y gyn-  
gheussaeth, dotter ereill yn  
eu lle. A gwedy yr eistether,  
yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr  
kynnic y devnydyeu y am y 5  
dystyon ae geidweit, a  
dyuedut y vot ef yn barawt.  
Ac yna y mae iawn yr  
amdifynnwr gwrtheb. Ac  
yssef ateb a dyry, dyuedut 10  
y vot ef yn barawt, ae  
devnydyeu ganthaw, val y  
hedewis. Ac yna y mae  
iawn yr brenhin erchi dangos  
y gwystlon yn y maes; 15  
kanys wynt yssyd veichieu.  
Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat  
dywedut kosb yr anostec.  
Sef yw hynny teir buw  
kamlwrw a bot yn anolo y 20  
geir a dywetter.

15. Ac yna y mae iawn yr  
hawlwr dodi ym pen yr yneit  
panyw efo a edewis yn  
gyntaf dystyon a cheidweit, 25  
a dylly ohonaw ynteu eu  
mwynhau yn gyntaf. Ac  
yna y mae iawn yr yneit  
erchi idaw ynteu dwyn y

(Ch. 14). 2 *some MSS.* yd, 3 the second *i* over the line, 4 *after this* brenin *cancelled*, 5 *kanis—vechieu* interlined, in part on the margin and illegible, 6 *there seems to be a lacuna here; some MSS. have: Ac ena gŵedy dangosser y gŵystlon y mae iaŵn yr brenhin erchi yr righyll dodi gostec ar y maes*

(Ch. 15). 1 *leg.* aedeuis, 2 *leg.* enteu eu, 3 *leg.* keidveit

y eu muinahu. Ac ena geidweit ae dystyon y eu  
 emae yaun idau enteu eu mwynhau. Ac yna y mae  
 duin huy ene keuil<sup>4</sup> ef ac iawn idaw ynteu eu dwyn  
 eudangos· esseu eu rei hwy yny kyvyl (?) ef ac eu  
 5 aedeueis<sup>5</sup> ef erei a enguis dangos. Sef yw rei a edewis  
 en edit kyntaf Ny dele er ef y rei a enwis yn y dyd  
 amdife~~n~~nwr llessu yrun ona- kyntaf. Ny dyly yr am-  
 dunt kanivir<sup>6</sup> nabo da idau diffynnwr llyssu yr un on-  
 adeueduit.<sup>7</sup> Ar hun a lleso adunt, kany wyr na bo da  
 10 onatuunt kin guibot bet idaw a dywettont. Ar hwn  
 aduedoent·<sup>8</sup> bit sauedc<sup>9</sup> a lysso onadunt cyn gwybot  
 hunu· er amdifenur beth a dywettont, bit savedic  
 gouin<sup>10</sup> aoes breint yr rei hwnnw. Yr amdiffynnwr a  
 hinny. Ac obit doent rac- eill ovyn a oes breint yr rei  
 15 dunt· esseu pa achaws<sup>11</sup> hynny. Ac o byd, doent  
 egeill ef gouin hinny vrth na racdunt. Sef pa achaws y  
 eill alldut bot en vybitiat ar geill ef ovyn hynny, vrth  
 treftadauc. Ac na eill na eill alltut vot yn wyby-  
 gureic· ar gur. Ac ekit dyat ar drevtadawc, ac na  
 20 ahene ni heill llauer o eill gwreic ar wr. Ac y gyt  
 deneon bot yn vibetiet nac a hynny ny eill llawer o  
 en kedueit heruit breint ar dynyon vot yn wybydyeit  
 amdifenur ni lluger arnau nac yn geidweit herwyd  
 deueduit hinny. breint. Ar amdiffynnwr ny  
 25 lwgyr arnaw dywedut hynny.

Oderuit ir amdifenur 16. O deruyd yr amdiffyn-  
 readau testion auo gwell no nwr ryadaw tystyon a uo  
 rei aedeuis er haulur· ae ouot gwell nor rei a edewis yr  
 en guell yu breint ay o bot hawlwr—ae o vot yn well eu  
 30 en amlach Amennu ohonau breint ae oe bot yn amlach—

(Ch. 15). 4 *some MSS. have kylch*, 5 the second *e* over the line; *leg.* aedewis, 6 the second *i* over the line, 7 *leg.* adeneduint, 8 *o* over the line, 9 *leg.* sauedic, 10 *i* over the line, 11 the second *a* over the line

kannal hinny. Iau<sup>n</sup> eu<sup>1</sup> dangos aguedi dangosso ef etestion nityaun<sup>2</sup> yr haulur eu llessu vyntheu. Ena emai iau<sup>n</sup> yr enat gouin yr haulur may breint de destion d<sup>y</sup>. Ac ena emay yaunt yr haulur deueduit breint y testion<sup>·</sup> ae vntoe en veirri neu en kegheoron<sup>3</sup> ae vnteu en veneich<sup>4</sup> neu en ahtraon ae vnteu en efferiet neu en escoleicion ae vinteu en lleecion breinaul Guedi daruo ir enat gouen ir haulur breint etestion iau<sup>n</sup> eu yr enat gouin yr amdifenu<sup>r</sup> breint y testion Ac ena emay yaunt yr amdifennur<sup>r</sup> deuedut ebreint goreu avo oy testion Ac ena emay yaunt yr enat datkanu deubrein yreduedasant eduypleit yeu testion.

Ena emay yaun yr enat gouin ir duipleit<sup>1</sup> a sauant huy hen erhen ededis en y dodien eu pen<sup>·</sup> llema paup or guebethit en deueduit

a mynnu ohonaw gynnal hynny, iawn yw eu dangos. A gwedi dangosso ef y dystion, nyt iawn yr hawlwr eu llyssu wynteu. Yna y 5 mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "Mae breint dy dystyon di?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr dywedut breint y dystyon, ae wynteu 10 yn veiri neu yn gynghelloryon, ae wynteu yn veneich neu yn athrawon, ae wynteu yn effeiryet neu ysgoleigyon, ae wynteu yn lleygion brein- 15 niawl. Gwedy darvo yr ynat govyn yr hawlwr breint y dystyon, iawn yw yr ynat govyn yr amdiffynnur vreint y dystyon. Ac yna y mae 20 iawn yr amdiffynnwr dywedut y breint goreu a vo oe dystyon. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat dadganu deu vreint y rydywedassant y 25 dwy bleit y eu tystyon.

17. Yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr dwy bleit a savant hwy yn yr hyn yd ydys yn y dodien eu pen. 30 Llyma bawb or gwybydyeit

(Ch. 16). 1 *leg.* eu eu, 2 *t* over the line, 3 *leg.* keghelloron, 4 MS. venich

Ch. 17). 1 There is a smudge between *p* and *l*

- esauahant · llema popun or  
 duipleit yn amheu guibytied  
 y kilit nasdegant yr degin ·  
 ket as deuetoent ar eutauaut  
 5 leu~~er~~it jaun eu yr eneit ena  
 ev kreirhau · ac guedi askreir-  
 hauont emay yaun vddunt  
 menet allan. Ac edrych<sup>2</sup> er  
 hyn jaunaf aueloent vrth a  
 10 gluassant. Ac oguelhant bot  
 en vell testion eneill rei noe  
 gilit · diuarnent huy eguae-  
 thaf e testion. Ode~~r~~uit bot en  
 kestal eustestion · diuarner er  
 15 amdife~~n~~nur · kanys etheuis  
 ef testion a vey guell noc  
 aoet kan ellall. Ac nis  
 cauas. Ac ena emay jaun  
 yr egneit barnu deuot er  
 20 haulur ar etir · ar e breint  
 edoet pan kechuinuus<sup>3</sup> en  
 agkaefreithiaul yarnau
- yn dywedut y savant. Llyma  
 bob un or dwy bleit yn  
 amheu gwybydieit y gilyd  
 nas dygant yr dygyn, kyt as  
 dywettont ar eu tavawt  
 leveryd. Iawn yw yr yneit  
 yna eu kreirhau. A gwedy  
 askreirhaont y mae iawn  
 udunt vynet allan, ac edrych  
 yr hyn iawna~~f~~ a welont wrth  
 a glywassant. Ac o gwelant  
 bot yn well testyon eneill rei  
 noe gilyd, divarnent hwy y  
 gwaethaf y dystyon. O  
 dervyd bot yn gystal eu  
 tystyon, divarner yr amdif-  
 ynnwr; kanys edewis ef  
 tystyon a vei well noc a oed  
 gan y llall, ac nys kauas. Ac  
 yna y mae iawn yr ygneit  
 barnu dyvot yr hawlwr ar y  
 tir, ar y breint yd oed pan  
 gychwynws yn aghyvreithy-  
 awl y arnaw.
- 25 Ac guediheni emay<sup>1</sup> yr  
 eneit proui ekedueit<sup>2</sup> y edric  
 a duc pop rey onadunt huy  
 bot en priodaur ebleit emaint  
 enikanhelu a deueduit o  
 30 keituueit pop rey eu bot  
 en priodaur Ac odamheuir
18. A gwedy hynny y  
 mae iawn yr yneit provi y  
 keidweit, y edrych a dwng  
 pob rei onadunt hwy bot yn  
 briodawr y bleit y maent yn  
 y chynhelu; a dywedut o  
 geidweit pob rei eu bot yn

(Ch. 17). 2 *h* over c, 3 *h* over the line(Ch. 18). 1 *leg.* emay iawn, + MS. ekeuit<sup>due</sup>

vntheu yaun eu eucrerhau  
ar nep akellio y kedueit  
onaduunt y vrht ellu kollet  
etir · o seif ekeitueit or due-  
pleit kehedet yv · ar lle ebo  
kehedet deuhanner vit.

Ked barner ydau deuod  
yr tir · nikecuuin egur aoet  
ene mediant kynt erdau  
okeill kaffael · tu · atal · ydau  
en er un lle ac en kastal  
edeudir vrth na burir odena  
ef. Ac nideleir talu tir  
ambreinaul en lle tir abreint  
ohonau val keggalloraith  
neu vaerony neu redit.

Ac ena emay yaun er  
egneit deuot traceukeuen y  
eu braudle ac ena emay  
yaun vdunt kemrit keder-  
nit a<sup>1</sup> bot vrth ebraut a  
kamrit mach areugober. Ac  
ena edeleant er eneit datcanu  
eduy kegheusaeh · a guedi  
hene datcanu eu uaraut<sup>2</sup> ac  
ena ebrenin adele redhau  
eguestelon · oeu carcar.

(Ch. 20). 1 leg. ar, 2 leg. braut

briodawr. Ac ot amheuir  
wynteu, iawn yw eu kreir-  
hau. Ar neb a gilio y geid-  
weit onadunt y wrth y llw,  
kollet y dir. O seif y keidweit 5  
or dwy bleit, kyhyded yw.  
Ar lle y bo kyhyded deu-  
hanner vyd.

19. Kyt barner idaw dyvot  
yr tir, ny chychwyn y gwr a 10  
oed yn y medyant gynt  
yrdaw, o geill gaffael tu a  
thal idaw yn yr un lle ac yn  
gystal y deu dir, wrth na  
vwryr odyne ef. Ac ny 15  
dylyir talu tir ammreiniawl  
yn lle tir a breint ohonaw,  
val kynghelloraeth neu vae-  
roni neu rydit.

20. Ac yna y mae iawn yr 20  
yneit dyvot tracheukevyn y  
eu brawdle. Ac yna y mae  
iawn udunt kymryt kedernit  
ar vot wrth y vrawt, a  
chymryt mach ar eu gobyr. 25  
Ac yna y dylyant yr yneit  
dadganu y dwy gyngheu-  
saeth, a gwedy hynny dad-  
ganu eu brawt. Ac yna y  
brenhin a dyly rydhau y 30  
gwystlon o eu karchar.

## V. THE PRIVILEGE OF ST. TELIO.

The following Latin Charter (Lib. Land., page 118) deals with the same subject, and illustrates the Welsh :

Privilegium Sancti Teliaui est et ecclesiae suae Landaniae, datum sibi et omnibus successoribus suis in perpetuo a regibus istis et principibus Brittaniae, confirmatum apostolica auctoritate, cum omnibus legibus suis in se plenariis sibi et terris suis, libera ab omni regali seruitio, sine consule, sine proconsule, sine conuentu intus nec extra, sine expeditione, sine uigilanda regione. Et cum omni iustitia sua; de fure et furto, de rapina, de homicidio, de arsione, de rixa, de sanguine, de refugio uiolato ubique in terra sancti, de assaltu uiarum et extra uias, de faciendo iudicio et patiando, de omni populo Sancti Teliaui in curia Landaniae; de communione aquae et herbae, campi et siluae populo ecclesiae Sancti Teliaui; cum mercato et moneta in Landauia; cum applicatione nauium ubique per terras Sancti Teliaui libera pro regibus et omnibus nisi ecclesiae Landaniae et episcopis eius. De opprobrio et omni iniuria quod rex Morcanhuc et sui homines fecerint episcopo Sancti Teliaui et suis hominibus, idem rex Morcanhuc et sui homines rectum faciant episcopo et suis hominibus, et iudicium patiantur in curia Landaniae. Omnis lex quae fuerit regali, omnis etiam et in curia plenarie episcopali Landauensi.

Lŷmma y cŷmreith ha  
 bryein eccluyŷ Teliau o  
 lanntaf arodes brenhined  
 hinn ha touŷssocion Cŷmrŷ  
 5 yntrŷcŷguidaul dŷ eccluyŷ  
 teliau hac dir escip oll gueti  
 ef amcŷtarnedic o audurdaut  
 papou rumein y holl cŷfreith  
 didi hac dŷ thir· hac di dair·  
 10 rŷd o pop guasanaith bre-  
 ennin bŷdaul· heb mair·  
 heb cŷghellaur· heb cŷhoith·  
 dadlma ŷmeun gulat hac nŷ  
 dieithŷr· heb luyd· heb  
 15 gauaŷl· heb guŷlma ŷcŷf-  
 reith idi ynholaul· o leitŷr  
 o latrat· o treis· odŷnnŷorn·

Llyma y gyvreith a breint  
 eglwys Deilaw o Lanndaf, a  
 rodes y brenhined hynn a  
 thywysogyon Cymry yn dra-  
 gywydawl y eglwys Deilaw  
 ac yr escyp oll gwedy ef,  
 amgadarnedic o awdurdawt  
 pabeu Ruvein. Y holl  
 gyvreith idi ac y thir ac y  
 dayar; ryd o bob gwasanaeth  
 brenhin bydawl; heb vaer,  
 heb gynghellawr, heb gyhoed  
 dadylva y mewn gwlat ac yn  
 y dieithyr; heb luyd, heb  
 avel, heb wylva. Y chyv-  
 reith idi yn hollawl o leidyrr,  
 o ladrat, o dreis, o dynyorn,

o cŷnluŷn hac o losc · o  
 amrŷson canguaŷt aheb-  
 guaŷt · ŷ diruŷ haŷ camcul  
 ŷndi didi ŷn hollaul · o dorri  
 naud ŷnn lann hac ŷn-  
 dieŷthŷr lann · orachot ŷnn  
 luhŷn hac dieithŷr luhŷn ·  
 o cŷrch ŷ popmŷnnic artir  
 teliau haŷ guir · haŷ braut  
 dŷ lŷtu ŷr ecluŷs ygundŷ  
 teliau ŷnn lantaf · hac nŷ lŷs ·  
 dufŷr ha guell · hac choŷt ha  
 maŷs ŷncŷfrŷtin dŷ lŷtu  
 teliau · cŷfnofut habathori-  
 aŷth ŷnn lanntaf hac aperua  
 ardir teliau dŷr loggou adis-  
 cŷnno nŷthir ŷ pop mŷnnic  
 ŷt uoŷ ryd rac brennin arac  
 paup namŷn dŷ teliau aŷ  
 eccluŷs lantam · ha dŷ escŷp ·  
 har mefŷl har sarhaŷthar cam  
 har ennuet a gunech<sup>1</sup> brenn-  
 hin morcannhuc hay gur haŷ  
 guas dŷ escop teliau hac dŷ  
 gur hac dŷ guas · dŷuot  
 brennhin morcannhuc ŷ-  
 gundŷ teliau ŷn lanntaf · dŷ  
 gunethur guir ha cŷfreith ·  
 ha diguadef braut diam  
 ŷ cam a diconher dŷ escop  
 teliau ha dŷ gur ha dŷ guas ·  
 ŷthir haŷ daŷr dŷ luŷd  
 dŷ uuner digauaŷl · ha pop

o gynllwyn ac o losc, o amry-  
 son gan waet ac heb waet.  
 Y dirwy ae chamgwl yndi  
 idi yn hollawl o dorri nawd  
 yn llann ac yn diethyr llann, 5  
 o ragot yn llwyn ac diethyr  
 llwyn, o gyrch [                      ]  
 ar dir Teilaw. Ae gwir ae  
 brawt y deulu yr eglwys yg  
 Gwndy Teilaw yn Llandaf 10  
 ac yny llys. Dwvyr a gwellt  
 a choet a maes yn gyffredin  
 ŷ deulu Teilaw. Cyvnewit  
 a bathoriaeth yn Llandaf, ac  
 aberva ar dir Teilaw yr 15  
 llongeu a discynno yny thir  
 pa le bynnac y bo, ryd  
 rac brenhin a rac pawb  
 namyn y Deilaw ac eglwys  
 Landaf ac y hescyp. Ar 20  
 mefyl ar sarhaet ar cam ar  
 enywet a wnel brenhin Mor-  
 gannuc ae wr ae was y escop  
 Teilaw ac y wr ac y was,  
 dyvot brenhin Morgannuc y 25  
 Wndy Teilaw yn Llandaf y  
 wneuthur gwir a chyvreith a  
 diodef brawt yam y cam a  
 a digonher y escop Teilaw  
 ac y wr ac y was. Y thir ae 30  
 dayar di luyd divuner  
 diavael. A pob cyvreith a  
 vo y vrenhin Morgannuc yn

cyfreith auo dŷ brennin morcannuc yn lŷs · ou bot oll yn hollaul dŷ escop teliau nŷ lŷs yntou · haŷ bot 5 ŷnemelldicetic hac yn ŷscu- munetic ŷr neb aitorro hac aŷ dimanuo ŷ bŷreint hunn · hac ef haŷ plant guetŷ ef. Hŷnn bendicetic hac ef haŷ 10 plant aŷ enŷŷdedocao ŷ- breint hunn hac aŷ cat(ŷo). <sup>2</sup> Amen.	[y] lŷs, eu bot yn hollawl y escop Teilaw yn y lŷs ynteu. Ae vot yn emelldigedic ac yn ŷscumunedic y neb ae torro ac ae divanwo y breint hwnn, ac ef ae blant wedy ef. Yn vendigedic ac ef ae blant ae enŷŷdedockao y breint hwnn ac ae katwo. Amen.
---	---

1. leg. gunel. 2. ŷo added in later hand.



## VI. MORAL VERSES.

Kalan gaeaf, kalet graŷn,  
 deil ar gychŷyn, llynnwynn llaŷn :  
 y bore gynn noe vynet  
 gwae a ymdiret y estraŷn.

Kalan gayaf, kein gyfrin ; 5  
 kyfret awel a dryckin :  
 gŷeith keluyd yŷ kelu rin.

Kalan gayaf, cul hydod,  
 melyn blaen bedŷ, gŷedŷ hauot :  
 gŷae a haed meuyl yr bychot. 10

Kalan gayaf, crŷm blaen gŷrysc,  
 gnaŷt o benn dirieit teruysc :  
 lle ny bo daŷn ny byd dysc.

Kalan gaeaf, garŷ hin,  
 anhebic y gynteuin : 15  
 namwyn Duŷ nyt oes dewin.

Kalan gaeaf, kein gyfreu  
 adar, byrr dyd, ban cogeu :  
 trugar daffar Duŷ goreu.

Kalan gayaf, kalet cras, 20  
 purdu bran, buan o vras :  
 am gŷymp hen chwerdit gŷen gŷas.

Kalan gaeaf, cul kerwyt,  
gwae wann pan syrr; byrr vyd byt:  
gŵir gŵell hegarŵch no phryt.

5      Kalan gayaf, llŵm godeith,  
aradyr yn rych, ych yg gweith:  
or kant odit kedymdeith.

## VII. DOOMSDAY.

Deus Duó delwat,	
Góledic, góaed neirthyat.	
Crist Jessu góyliat,	
Róysc rihyd amnat	
Aduelach kaffat.	5
Nym gónel heb ranned	
Moli dy trugared.	
Ný dyfu yma,	
Góledic, dy gynna.	
Ny dyfu, ný dyfyd	10
Neb kystal a Douyd.	
Ny ganet yn dyd plóyó	
Neb kystal a Duó.	
Nac nyt adef	
Neb kystal ac ef.	15
Vch nef, is nef	
Nyt góledic namyn ef.	
Vch mor, is mor	
Ef an creóys.	
Pan dyffo Deús,	20
Ef an gwnaho maór trós.	
Dyd braót yn echwrys.	
Kennadeu o drós	
Gwynt a mor a than,	
Luchet a tharyan,	25
Eiryf ab <sup>1</sup> góengan.	
Lóyth byt yg griduan	
Ergelaór, dygetaór Ilaóhethan.	
Ergelhaór mor a syr <sup>2</sup> ,	

1. leg. *eiry fab?*      2. leg. *ser.*

- Pan discynho Pater  
Y dadyl ae nifer,  
A chyrn gopetror  
Ac ennynnu mor.  
5 Llŷyth byt Noscetaŵr  
Hyny uŷynt marwaŵr,  
Loscaŵt ynyal ran  
Rac y vaŵr varan.  
Ef tynho aches  
10 Rac y varanres.  
Diffurn dyd reges  
Gŷae ae harhoes.  
Ef tardho talaŵr;  
Terdit nef y laŵr.  
15 Gŷynt rud dygetaŵr  
Ech y gadŷynaŵr.  
Neu byt mor wastat  
Mal pan great.  
Seith Pedyr ae dywaŵt,  
20 Dayar diwarnaŵt.  
Dywaŵt duŵ Sadŵrn  
Dayar yn vn ffŵrn.  
Sadŵrn vore rŷyd  
In gŷnaho ny Culŷyd.  
25 Tir bydaŵt tywyd,  
Gŷynt y todo gŷyd.  
Ebryn pop dyhed,  
Pan losco mynyded.  
Atuyd triganed  
30 A chyrn rac rihed.  
Kyfoethaŵc ae henuyn,  
Mor a tir a llyn.  
Atuyd cryn dygryn

A dayar gychwyn.	
Ac uch pop mehyn	
A marô mein uudyn.	
Eryf argelôch	
Ac enýnnu llôch.	5
Ton aghyolôch,	
Taryan ymrythôch.	
Teithyâôc afar	
Ac eryf trôy alar	
Ac enynnu trôy var	10
Rwg nef a dayar.	
Pan dyffo Trindaôt	
Y maes maestaôt,	
Lu nef ymdanaô,	
Lôyth llydan attaô,	15
Kyrd a cherdoryon,	
A chathleu egylyon.	
Drychafant o vedeu ;	
Eirant o dechreu.	
Eirant kôn coet,	20
Ar gymeint adoet.	
A rewinýôys mor	
A wnant maôr gaôr,	
Pryt pan dyffo	
Ef ae gôahano.	25
“ Y saôl a uo meu,	
Ymchoelant o deheu.	
A digonôy kamwed,	
Ymchaelent y perthgled.	
Ponyt erlys dy gyfreu	30
A lefeir dy eneu ?	
Dy vynet yn du hynt yn nanheu	
Yn tywyll heb leuureu.	

Ac ym oed y ereu,  
 Ac ym oed i ieitheu,  
 Ac ym oed i ganwlat  
 Ac eu cant lloneit.  
 5 Canuet gŵlat pressent  
 Nŷ bum heb gatwent.  
 Oed mynych kyfar chwerŵ  
 Yrof am<sup>1</sup> kefynderŵ.  
 Oed mynych kyriscŵydat  
 10 Yrof y am kywlat.  
 Oed mynych kyflafan  
 Yrof i ar truan.  
 Am goryŵ hŵn vyth;  
 Nym gŵnaei dyn byth.  
 15 Am gyrrŵys yg croc,  
 A wydŵn yn oc.  
 Am gyrrŵys ym pren  
 Dipynŵys vym pen.  
 Tafaŵ ti vyn deu troet,  
 20 Mor tru eu hadoet.  
 Taugaŵ dy 'r boenet,  
 Escyrn vyn traet.  
 Taugaŵ dy vyn dŵy vreich;  
 Ny ny dybyd eu beich.  
 25 Taugaŵ dy vyn dŵy yscŵyd;  
 Handit mor dyuyd.  
 Taugaŵ dy 'r cethron  
 Y myŵn vvg callon.  
 Taugaŵ dy gethraŵt  
 30 Yrwg vyn deu lygat.  
 Taugaŵ yr da allat,  
 Coron drein ym iat.  
 Taugaŵ dy oestru,

1. MS. *eim*.

A wanpŷt vyn tu.  
 Teu yŷ chitheu  
 Mal yr yŷch llaŷ deheu.  
 Iŷch nŷ byd madeu  
 Vy gwan a bereu." 5  
 "A wledic, ny wydym  
 Pan oed ti a grogem.  
 Gŷledic nef, gŷledic pop tut,  
 Nŷ wydem ni, Grist, tut vyhut.  
 Bei ath ŷybydem, 10  
 Crist, ath athechem."  
 "Nyt aruollir gŷat  
 Gan lŷyth eissyfflat.  
 Digonsaŷchi anuat  
 Yn erbyn Dofydyat. 15  
 Can mil egylyon  
 Yssyd imi yn tyston,  
 A doeth ym kyrchaŷ  
 Gŷedy vyg crogaŷ.  
 Yg croc yn greulet 20  
 Myhun ym gŷaret.  
 Yn nefoed bu cryt,  
 Pan ŷm crogyssit.  
 Pan orelwis Keli  
 Dy Culŷyd vch keli. 25  
 A chenŷch deu ieuan  
 Ragof y deu gynran,  
 A deu lyfyr yn ach llaŷ  
 Yn eu darlleaŷ.  
 Nys deubi ryrys 30  
 Rygossŷy rygossys.  
 Ac aŷch bi wynnyeith  
 Gŷerth aŷch ynuyt areith.

- Kayator y dyleith  
Arnaóch y vffern lleith.”  
Crist Jessu uchel ry seilas trycha[n] mil  
blóydyned,  
5 Er pan yttyó ym buched.  
Ac eil mil kyn croc  
Yt lewychi Enoc.  
Neu nyt atwen drut  
Meint eu heissyllut.  
10 Gólat pressent yth ermut,  
A chyt aóch bei odit.  
Trychan mil blóydyned namyn vn  
Oric odit buched tragywyd.



Yssit ym wledic wlat amdiffyn llary,  
(llawer dyn ae govyn)  
gwachlan wosparth warth wrthryn,  
gŵalpar gŵanar Gŵenwynwyn.

$$^1r \text{ over } d \quad ^2r \text{ over } 6$$

## IX. CYNDDELW TO RHYS AB GRUFFUDD.

(\*) BLACK BOOK, page 39*b*.

Assuŷnaw naut Duv diamhev<sup>1</sup> ŷ daun  
 ae donŷauc wifinnhev.  
 ar dŷ guir erir aerev.  
 ar dŷ gulad guledic dehev.

5     Assuinaf archaf eirchad ŷmgelwir.  
        naut kŷuir kŷgwastad.  
        ar dŷ drissev aer. drussad.  
        ar di drissaur gvaur gwenvlad.

Assuinaw archaw arch vaur ŷ *periw*.  
 10         a *peris* new a llaur.  
        naut rac dŷ uar car kertaur.  
        ar dŷ pirth ar di porthaur.

Assuinaf naut haut haelon deheuparth  
        diheuporth kertorion.  
 15         ath turuf oth tarianogion.  
        ath torŷf oth teern meibon.

Assuinaf ŷch naut na cheluch ŷch porth.  
        can *perthin* attreguch.  
        gostecwir llis gosteguch.  
 20         gostec beirt bart aglŷwuch.

Assuinaf naut haut<sup>2</sup> haelvonet worsset.  
        nŷth orsseiw teernet.  
        ar dŷ torif corŷf kŷwrisset  
        ar dŷ teulu teilug met.

1. MS. diamehv.    2. MS. haut naut *with marks of transposition*.

Metcuin ev gwiraud metkirn ae gwallav.  
 ae gwellig in eurdirn.  
 a gloev y ved in edirn.  
 a gliv deur. a glev teeirn.

Teernweilch Prïdein prýdaw ých priwgert. 5  
 ých prïwclod a digaw.  
 ých bart ých beirnad výtaw.  
 ých porth perthin ýv ataf.

Attep a ganaw ar canhuýw vý argluit.  
 ergliv. wi. can dothuif. 10  
 lleissaun lliw lleu gliv glevrvit.  
 llaessa di var di bart wif.

Viw kertaur im ruw. ruisc. morkimlaut gurt.  
 ruisfirt kirt kert. vahaut.  
 assuin asserv herv hirvlaut. 15  
 assuinaf ar wut naw. naut.

(b) RED BOOK.

Dadolóch Rys vab Gruffud. Kyndeló ae cant.

Assóynaf naód Duó (diamheu dy daón,  
 ath donyaóc óyf inneu)  
 ar dy wyr, eryr aereu, 20  
 ar dy wlat, wledic deheu.

Assóynaf, archaf arch vaór y beryf  
 a beris nef a llaór,  
 naód rac dy var, car kerdaór,  
 ar dy byrth, ar dy borthaór. 25

Assóynaf, archaf (eirchat ym gelwir)  
 naód kywir kyngwastat  
 ar dy drysseu, aer dróssyat,  
 ar dy dryssaór, gúawr gúenwlat.

236 CYNDELW TO RHYS AB GRUFFU

Assóynaf aóch naóð, na chelóch aóch porth  
can perthyn attregóch.

Gostecwyr llys, gostegóch:  
“Gostec, beird ! bard a glywch.”

- 5      Assóynaf naóð haóð haelon deheubarth,  
             diheuborth kerdoryon,  
             ath daryf oth duranogyon,  
             ath doryf ath deyrnueibyon.

- 10      Assóynaf naóð haóð haeloned worsaf  
             (nyth orseif teyrned)  
             ar dy doryf, koryf kywryssed,  
             ar dy deulu teilóng med.

- 15      Medgwyn eu góyn eu góiraót, medgyrn ae  
             ae góercheidó yn eurdyrn,  
             a glóeó yfet yn etyrn,  
             a glyó deór, a gleó deyrn.

Teyrnweilch Prydein, prydaf aóch prifgerc

## X. A RELIGIOUS POEM.

BLACK BOOK.	RED BOOK.	
In enu domni meu ý. voli. maur ý uolaud.	Yn enó Dñi, meu y moli ; maór y molaót.	
Molawe douit. maur ý kinnit ar ý cardaud.	Molaf Douyd, maór y gynnyd ar y cardaót.	5
Duu an amuc. Duu an goruc. Duu an guaraud.	Duó an hamuc, Duw an goruc, Duó an góaraót.	10
Duu an gobeith. teilug pirfeith. tec ý purfaud.	Duó an gobeith, teilóng perffeith, tec y purffaót.	
Duu an dýli. Duu issi vry. vrenhin trindaud.	Duó an dyly, Duó yssy bry, brenhin trindaót.	15
Duu a broued in ý truyted in <sup>1</sup> ý trallaud.	Daó a prouet ynn yn dróydet dróy y drallaót.	
Duu a dýfu. oe garcharu gan vuilaud.	Duw a dyuu oe garcharu gan uvulldaót.	20
Guledic deduit an gunel in rit erbin dit braud.	Góledic detwyd an gónel ni yn ryd erbyn dyd braó[t].	25

I. drwy M.A.

	An duch ir gulet ir y varet. ae werindaud.	An dŏc yr wled yr y wared ae werindaŏt.
5	Ym paraduis. im pur kŏnnuis rac puis pechaud.	Ym Paradŏys, ym pur gynnŏys rac pŏys pechaŏt.
	An gunel iechid ir y penid ae pimp dirnaud.	An gŏnel iechyt yr y penyt ae pym dynaŏt.
10	Dolur eghirith. Duu an diffirth ban kŏmirth cnaud.	Dolur eghyrth— Duŏ an diffirth, pan gymerth knaŏt.
15	Din a collei bei nas prinhei diuei devaud.	Dyn a gollei pei nas prynei— diuei deuaŏt.
	Or croc crevled y deuth guared ir vedissyaud.	Or groc greulet y deuth gwaret yr vedissyawt.
20	Kadarn bugeil Crist nid adweil. y teilyгдаud	Cadarn ugeil Crist nyt adueil y teilyngdaŏt.

XI. A DIALOGUE BETWEEN UGNACH UAB  
MYDNO AND TALIESSIN.

“Marchauc a girch y dinas,  
ae cun gwinion ae cirn bras,  
nyth adwaen, mi ryth welas.”

“Marchauc a kirch ir aber  
y ar march cadarn kadfer, 5  
dabre genhiw ; nym gwatter.”

“Mi nyd aw ina in aur,  
gotev gueith y godriccaur :  
elhid bendith new a llaur.”

“Y gur nim guelas beunit 10  
y<sup>1</sup> tebic y gur deduit,  
ba hid ei dy? a phan doit?”

“Ban deuaw o Caer Seon  
o imlat ac Itewon,  
it aw Caer Lev a Gwidion.” 15

“Dabre de genhiw ir dinas,  
ath uit met ara phellas,  
ac eur coeth ar di wanas.”

“Mi nyd adwaen y gur hy  
a metev tan a gveli : 20  
tec a chuec y diwedi.”

1. leg. *vyt*.

“Dabre genhiw im tino,  
ath uit guin gorÿsgelho,  
Vgnach ýw vÿ heno mab Mÿdno.”

5

“Vgnach, bendith ith orsset !  
ath vo rad ac enrydet !  
Taliessin viw inheu, talaw itti dÿ  
gulet.”

10

“Taliessin, penhaw or guir,  
beitad ýg kert kÿuergir,  
tric ima hid dÿv merchir.”<sup>2</sup>

“Vgnach, mvihaw ý alaw,  
ath vo rad ý gulad pennhaw :  
nÿ haetaw kabil, ny thrigiaw.”

*2. is added in a later hand.*



## XII. WINTER.

Llŷm awel, llum brin,  
anhaut caffael clid :  
llicrid rid, reuhid llin,  
rŷ seiw gur ar vn conin.

Ton tra thon toid tu tir, 5  
goruchel guaetev rac bron banev  
bre : breit allan or seur.

Oer lle lluch rac brŷthuch  
gaeaw, crin caun, calaw truch,  
kedic awel, coed in i bluch. 10

Oer guelŷ pisscaud yg kisscaud  
iaen, cul hit, caun barywhaud,  
birr diuedit, guit gvŷrhaud.

Ottid eirŷ, guin ŷ cnes,  
nid a kedwir oe neges, 15  
oer llinnev, eu llŷu heb tes.

Oŷtid eirŷ, guin aren,  
segur ŷscuid ar iscuit hen,  
rŷuaur guint, reuhid dien.

Ottid eirŷ ar warthaw rev<sup>1</sup>, 20  
goscupid guint<sup>2</sup> blaen guit tev,  
kadir ŷscuid ar ŷscuit glev.

1. In MS. *res* has been altered later to *reo*.

2. MS. *gint*

Ottid eirý, tohid istrad,  
diurýssint vy keduir y cad,  
mi nid aw, anaw nim gad.

5 Ottid eirý o dv riv,  
karcharaur goruit, cul biv,  
nid annuýd hawdit hetiv.

Ottid eirý, guin goror  
mýnit, llum guit llog ar mor :  
meccid llwyr llauer kýghor.

# Glossary



## GLOSSARY

The paragraphs refer to the Grammar. voc. = causing vocalic mutation (lenation). nas. = causing nasal mutation. spir. = causing spirant mutation. coll. = collective. n.l. = nomen loci. chw follows c, ð follows d, ng follows g in the order of the alphabet.

1. a (voc.) rel. part. § 82 ff. With pers. pron. (§ 48 ff.) sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath (voc.), sg. and pl. 3 ae, ay, as, pl. 1 an, pl. 2 ach.

2. a (voc.) interr. part. § 239. With pres. of copula ae. ae... ae *whether*... or.

3. a (voc.) interj. § 243.

4. a (spir.) prep. *with*, see 1. ac.

5. a (spir.) conj. *and*, see 2. ac.

6. a (voc.) prep., see 1. o.

6. a- used to infix pronoun. § 94. With pers. pron. sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath, sg. and pl. 3 as.

abad m. *an abbot*; pl. -eu.

aballu *to perish*. 158, 15.

aber *a river-mouth, estuary*.

aber-fa f. *harbour, harbourage*.

aberth *sacrifice*. 150, 17.

abid f. *a habit, monastic dress*.

abreïð *scarcely, hardly*. 159, 10. 197, 20. 200, 17.

1. ac, a (spir.) prep. *with*, § 162. With art. ar; with poss. adj. sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath (voc.), sg. 3 m. ae (voc.) f. ae (spir.), pl. 1 an, pl. 2 ach, pl. 3 ae.

2. ac, a (spir.) conj. *and, as*. § 198. With art. ar; with poss. adj. sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath (voc.) etc. ac... ac *both... and*.

1. ach (awch, ych) *your*. §§ 57, 58.

2. ach *lineage, descent*; pl. -oed.

3. ach, see 1. a, 1. ac, 2. ac.

achaws m. *cause, reason*. pa a. *why?* 218, 16. o a. *because* § 199.

Cf. achwysson.

achenoctid, see anghenoctid.

aches (from Lat. accessus) *flood-tide*. 228, 9. See CZ. V, p. 566.

achlan *entire, all*. 202, 22. 23.

achub *to occupy, seize, precipitate oneself, snatch*. 151, 5. 180, 19. 199, 12. 201, 20 (see cyfarth). 207, 17.

achubeid *to seize*. 152, 8.

achwanecäu *to augment, increase*.

achwaneg *more*.

achwanegu *to increase*.

achwysson (pl.) *causes*. 161, 15.

achyfyeth, see anghyfyeth.

adan f. *a wing*; pl. -ed. 203, 19.

adar (coll.) *birds*; sg. ederyn.

adaw *to leave, allow*. pres. ind. pass. edir. 152, 4. 158, 8. 193, 10.

adeilad *to build, a building*; pl. -eu. 139, 3.

ad-feilaw *to decay, decline*. 238, 20.

ad-fod *to exist, be*. fut. ind. sg. 3 adfyð 228, 29. 33.

ad-libin *a wretched remnant*. 153, 28.

ad-na-bod *to recognise, know*. § 144.

pres. ind. act. sg. 1 adwaen.

ad-newyðu *to renew*. 155, 4.

adolwyn *to beseech*. 142, 31. pret. pl. 3. adologyssant. 149, 10.

adref *homeward*. 196, 9. atref 198, 29.

adwaen, see adnabod.

adwy *a gap, opening*; pl. -eu. 175, 17.

aðas *fit, meet, suitable*.

aðassu *to fit, adjust*. 150, 26.

aðaw *to promise*. 170, 13. 177, 7. 218, 27. pres. ind. sg. 3 eðew 239, 20.

aðef *to acknowledge, admit, allow*. 227, 14.

aðfelach? 227, 5.

að-fwyn-der m. *gentleness, nobility, honour*. 181, 24.

að-oed m. *appointed time; destiny, fate*. 229, 21. 230, 20.

aðurn *adornment*. 163, 29.

aðurnaw *to adorn, decorate*. 155, 5.

1. ae, see 1. a. 2. ae, see 2. a.

3. ae, see 1. ac. 4. ae, see 2. ac.

aed, see myned.

Aeð (Ir. Aed) n. pr. m. 201, 14.

aedfed *ripe, mature*. 165, 20.

aer *slaughter*; pl. -eu.

Aer n. pr. m. 195, 26.

aer-fa f. *slaughter*; pl. -eu.

aer-glwylf *dealing wounds in battle.* 233, 5.  
 aer-llew m. *lion of battle.* 233, 6.  
 aeth, see myned.  
 aeth-lym *keen and sharp.* Aeth-lem f. *the name of a sow.* 207, 8.  
 af, see myned.  
 Afallach n.l. *Avallon.*  
 afar m. *grief.* 229, 8.  
 af-lonyðu *to incommode.* 209, 23.  
 aflonyðwch *disturbance.* 148, 6.  
 afon f. *a river; pl. -oed.*  
 afory *to-morrow.* 203, 28.  
 Affric *Africa.*  
 affwys m. *an abyss, deep, bottom.* 197, 29. 206, 32. 207, 2.  
 agalen f. *a whetstone.* 194, 14.  
 agori *to open; part. agoredig.*  
 agos *near; comp. nes; sup. nessaf.*  
 angel *an angel; pl. engylion.*  
 angerð m. *vehemence, force.* 151, 17.  
 184, 24. 186, 4.  
 angen, see angheu.  
 anghad f. *hand.* 233, 20.  
 anghaead *unclosed, open, liberal.* 233, 19.  
 anghen (agen) m. *need, necessity; a. yn a. by sheer necessity* 206, 14; cf. Hg. II. 197, 25.  
 anghenocid (achenocid) *want, indigence.* 142, 20. 146, 3.  
 angheu (agheu, agen) f. *death.* 150, 15.  
 angheuawl *deadly; mortally wounded.* 159, 8. 18. 183, 26.  
 anghlywedig *unheard of, unusual.*  
 anghreiff (agreiff, agriff) *example.* 165, 12.  
 anghyf-nerth *helplessness, impotence.* 143, 6.  
 anghyf-reith *injustice, wrong.*  
 anghyfreithawl *unjust, wrongful.*  
 anghyfrwys *untrained, unskilled.*  
 anghyf-yeith *alien in speech, foreign.* 191, 19. pl. -yðyon. 153, 17.  
 anghyolwch? 229, 6.  
 aho, see myned.  
 alaf *wealth; pl. -oed.* 164, 9.  
 Alban *Scotland.* yr A. 141, 7.  
 allan *out, outwards, outside.* o hynny a. *thenceforth.*  
 allt a cliff. A. Clwyd (wrongly, instead of Clud) *Dumbarton.*  
 all-tud *a foreigner, alien; exile.*  
 am (voc.) *prep. about, on account of.* § 164. am hynny *therefore.*  
 am-blygu *to embrace.* 148, 12 v. 1.

amcawð *said (he).* amkeuðant *said they.* § 133 (b).  
 am-ðiffyn *to defend, protect; defence.*  
 amðiffynwr m. *a defendant in a lawsuit.*  
 am-gadarnedig *confirmed, ratified.*  
 amgen *different.* nyd a. *namely.*  
 amherawdyr m. *an emperor; pl. amherodron.*  
 amherodraeth f. *empire, dominion.*  
 amheu *to doubt, dispute, call in question.*  
 amlach, amlaf, see amyl.  
 amlwg *clear, manifest.*  
 ammreiniawl (ambreinawl) *without privilege.* 221, 16.  
 amnad? 227, 4.  
 amod m. *a covenant, compact.* 149, 17. 150, 20. 153, 24. 159, 10.  
 amryfael *various, different; pl. -on.*  
 amryson *a quarrel.* 223, 2.  
 am-ryw *various, divers.*  
 am-sathyr *a treading, moving of feet.* 193, 15.  
 amser m. *time; pl. -oed.*  
 amug, see amwyn.  
 amws m. *a stallion; pl. emys.*  
 am-wyn *to protect.* § 133 (b). pret. ind. act. sg. 3 amug.  
 Amwythig *Shrewsbury.* 161, 31.  
 amyl *frequent; numerous; comp. amlach; sup. amlaf.*  
 amyllder *plenty, abundance, multitude.* 145, 23.  
 amylhäu *to increase, augment.*  
 1. an (yn) *our.* § 57.  
 2. an, see 1. a.  
 3. an, see 1. and 2. ac.  
 anadyl *breath.*  
 anaf m. *a blemish, wound.* 242, 3.  
 anaw *poetry, muse.* 233, 13.  
 anawð, see an-hawð.  
 an-dylyedus *illegal, wrong.* 167, 26.  
 an-eiryf *innumerable, countless; a countless number.* 184, 27.  
 an-fad *evil, crime.* 231, 14.  
 an-feidrawl *immense.*  
 anfon *to send, dispatch.* pres. ind. sg. 3 enfyn 228, 31.  
 Angiw *Anjou.*  
 an-hawð *not easy, difficult.* 241, 2.  
 anhebig (y) *unlike, dissimilar (to).* 225, 15.  
 anheilwng *unworthy.*  
 anher, see hanher.  
 anifeil m. *an animal, beast; pl. -eid.*

annerch to greet, address; pl. -eu greetings. 143, 8.

annobeithaw (o) to despair (of).

annod delay. 171, 27.

annoeth (anoeth) a precious thing; pl. -eu. 165, 13. 187, 13. Cf. Arch. I, p. 453.

annog to urge, encourage, recommend.

annwyd nature, temper. 242, 6.

anolod void, worthless, nugatory.

an-osteg f. disturbance, disorder.

anreg f. a dish of meat; pl. -yon. 163, 31 (fercula).

anreithaw to plunder, ravage.

anreithwr m. a plunderer.

anrydeð, see enrydeð.

ansawð f. condition, nature, quality, state, station. 160, 10. 180, 6.

ansoðedig established, founded.

ant, see myned.

an-udonawl perjured, treacherous, wicked. 149, 31 v. l.

an-uundeb (-dab) discord, disunion, conflict. 167, 30.

an-waethach no less. 145, 20 v. l.

anwyl a friend; pl. -yd. 160, 26.

anyanawl natural, native, innate.

1. ar (voc.) prep. on, over, for, before. § 165. within 146, 25. ar hynt thereupon. About to, on the point of. ar gychwyn 225, 2.

2. ar, see 1. and 2. ac.

3. ar=a (rel. part.) + ry, see § 95 note.

4. ar, see 1. o.

aradyr a plough.

araf slow, gentle, mild. 155, 27.

arall another, other; pl. ereill.

§ 68. ereill . . ereill some . . others.

arbed to spare, save. 153, 23.

ar-benhig chief, principal.

arch f. a request. 153, 34. 234, 9.

arch-esgob m. an archbishop; pl. archesgyb.

archesgobaeth an archbishopric;

pl. -eu.

archesgobawd f. an archbishopric.

archesgob-dy m. an archbishop's palace.

archyssant, see erchi.

ar-dymheru to temper, warm.

143, 13.

ar-ðelw a voucher. 215, 30.

ar-ðerchawg exalted, noble, illustrious.

ar-ðerchocäu to exalt, honour,

ar-ðyrchafel to raise, exalt; part. ar-ðyrchafedig.

areith f. a speech. 231, 33.

aren (arien) hoarfrost. 241, 17.

arf m. a weapon; pl. -eu.

arfawg armed.

ar-fer to be wont, be accustomed; use, wont.

arferu (o) to use, employ, enjoy, be accustomed.

arfoll to entertain, receive. 148, 10; 231, 12.

ar-gelwch concealment, seclusion. 229, 4.

ar-gledyr m. a protector.

arglwyð m. a lord; pl. -i.

arglwyðes f. a lady, mistress.

arglwyðiaeth f. lordship.

ar-gyfreu a marriage portion. 140, 12. 24.

ar-gyweðu (y) to injure, hurt.

arnaf etc., see ar § 53.

aros to await, expect, wait. past subj. sg. 3 arhoei; pret. sg. 3 arhoes.

arth m. a bear. 172, 27.

aruthreð terror, fear. 172, 28.

aruthyr terrible, fearful. 172, 29.

ar-weðu to bear, wield. 159, 3.

arwein to carry, bear. 163, 3. 10.

arwyð f. a token, mark; a battle-standard; signal; pl. -on. 150, 26. 158, 32. 180, 4. 183, 8. 194, 22.

arwyðocäu to signify, imply.

aryant silver.

as (es), see 1. and 6. a.

asgell a wing; pl. esgyll.

asgell-wrych m. spray. 154, 18.

asgrifenu, see ysgrifenu.

asgwrn a bone; pl. esgryn.

asserw bright, brilliant. 235, 15.

assw (asseu) left.

asswyn an invocation. 235, 15.

asswynaf I invoke, entreat.

at (voc.) prep. to. §§ 53, 166.

attal to restrain, withhold, hinder.

attek (at-heb) m. to answer; an answer, defence; pl. -yon. 167, 19. 169, 1.

attregwch a stopping, delay. 234, 18. 236, 2.

1. ath, see 1. and 6. a.

2. ath, see 1. and 2. ac.

athechem? 231, 11.

athoeð, see myned.

athraw a teacher; pl. -on. 145, 3. 161, 11. 219, 13.

awdurdawd m. authority. 222, 7.

awch, see ach.

awel m. *a breeze, wind.* 241, 1.  
 awn, see myned.  
 awr f. *hour.* yn a. *now.* 239, 7.  
 yr a. *hon now.* 142, 15.  
 awssen *absence.* 177, 6.  
 awst *August.* 166, 16.  
 1. ay, see 1. a.  
 2. ay, see 1. and 2. ac.  
 ba, see pa.  
 bach *a bend, angle.* 198, 8.  
 baeð m. *a boar.* b. coed *a wild boar.* 184, 12; pl. beið. 201, 16.  
 Baðon n. l. *Bath.* 179, 31.  
 bagyl f. *a crook, crutch.* Cwrr y Fagyl n. l. 204, 4.  
 1. ban *loud.* 227, 18.  
 2. ban, see pan.  
 bann *a height*; pl. baneu 241, 6.  
 b. y gaer *battlement*; 196, 1.  
 banw *a pigling.* porcheil . . hyt tra uo en denu . . ac o henne eny el e moch yr coet banu vyt BCh. 92, 28.  
 bar m. *wrath, anger.* 229, 10.  
 233, 1.  
 baraf, see baryf.  
 baran *wrath, fury.* 280, 8.  
 baran-res *rank of soldiers, host.* 223, 10.  
 Barberfloi n. l. *Barfleur.*  
 bard m. *a poet, bard*; pl. beirð.  
 bard-eir *song, panegyric.* 235, 14.  
 barfawg *bearded.* 199, 31.  
 barn *judgment.* 188, 6 v. 1.  
 barnuto *to judge, decide, fix, pass judgment, deem.* past. part. barnedig.  
 barwn m. *a baron*; pl. -eid, -yeid.  
 baryf (baraf) *a beard.*  
 baryfhâu *to grow a beard.* 241, 12.  
 Cf. baryf-lwyf rew FB. 244, 9.  
 bathoriaethf. *mintage, mint.* 223, 14.  
 bedissyawd f. *the universe.* 238, 18.  
 bedw f. (coll.) *birch-trees.* 225, 9.  
 Bedwyr n. pr. m.  
 beð m. *a grave*; pl. -eu.  
 1. bei, bey, see bod.  
 2. bei *a fault.*  
 beich *a burden, load.* 230, 24.  
 beiðad m. *a challenger.* 240, 9.  
 beirnad (beirnyad) m. *a judge.* 235, 7. 236, 19.  
 bendigedig *blessed.*  
 bendyth (bendith) f. *a blessing.*  
 bennwig f. *a young sow.* 205, 19.  
 ber *a spike, lance*; pl. -eu. 231, 5.  
 beth, see peth.  
 beunydyawl *daily.* 190, 9.

biw f. *cattle.* 242, 5; *a standard of value.* teirbuw 211, 5.  
 blaen m. *point, top, end, front.* or b. *in front, oe f. before him, ym b. pawb before any one else, yn ol ac ym b. behind and before.*  
 blaen-weð *highest state, summit.* 169, 21. RB. II. 41, 33.  
 blawð *tumult, commotion.* 235, 15.  
 bleið-ast f. *a she-wolf.*  
 blin *weary, wearisome.*  
 blinaw *to weary, molest, harass.*  
 blinder *weariness.*  
 blodeuaw *to flourish, prosper.* 186, 1.  
 blwch? 241, 10.  
 blwyðyn f. *a year*; pl. -eð.  
 blynghâu *to become angry, to frown.* 140, 7. 172, 23.  
 blyneð f. *years (after numerals).*  
 bo, see bod.  
 bocsach f. *a boasting, vaunting.* 174, 13.  
 boch, see bod.  
 bod *to be, state of being (verb subst. and copula)* § 152 ff.  
 boð *goodwill, pleasure.* oc eu b. *of their own free will.* 156, 6. 12.  
 boði *to drown.*  
 bogel f. *the navel.* 174, 25.  
 Bolwyn n. l. *Boulogne.* 184, 31.  
 bon *stem, root, stump*; pl. -eu.  
 boneð *lineage, noble birth.* 162, 1.  
 bonheðig *hereditary, innate* 180, 15; *noble*; pl. -yon; superl. bonheðickaf.  
 bore m. *morning.* y b. *in the morning.* 225, 3.  
 brad m. and f. *treachery, plot.*  
 bradwr m. *a traitor*; pl. bradwyr.  
 bran m. and f. *a raven*; pl. brain.  
 bras *stout, fat.* 241, 2. 227, 20.  
 Cf. Gnawd buan o vain, gnawd buan o vras MA. 845<sup>b</sup> 15.  
 brath m. *a stab, wound.* 188, 21.  
 brathu *to wound, stab, spur.* impf. ind. act. pl. 3 brethynt; impf. ind. pass. brethid; part. brathedig.  
 1. brawd f. *judgment, day of judgment.* 185, 16.  
 2. brawd m. *a brother*; pl. brodyr, broder.  
 brawd-le m. *a judgment seat.*  
 bre *hill, promontory*; 243, 7.  
 Redyn-fre n. l.  
 breich m. and f. *an arm.* 230, 23.  
 breið *hardly, scarcely.* 241, 7.  
 breiðwyd f. *a dream, vision.* 173, 6; v. 1. ib. 14.



breiniawl *privileged*. 219, 14.  
 breint (bryein, brein) *m. privilege, prerogative; state, condition*. 220, 22.  
 breisg *stout*. 233, 10.  
 brenhin, (breenhin, brennhin, brennin) *a king; pl. -eð*.  
 brenhinawl *kingly, royal*.  
 brenhines *f. a queen*.  
 brenhin-wisg *royal robe; pl. -oeð*.  
 brenhinyaeth *f. kingdom*.  
 brethid, brethynt, see brathu.  
 breu *brittle*. 200, 1.  
 breuan *f. a handmill, quern*. 206, 31.  
 briwaw *to break in pieces, shatter, destroy. past part. briwedig*. 147, 3.  
 broder, brodyr, see brawd.  
 bron (bronn) *breast; pl. bronnoeð; dwy-ron breasts. rac b. before, in front of; ger b. before; ym b. y dyð towards day; cf. ymron y gorffen Hg. II, 248, 17; dynyon ymron aglieu, ib. 201, 34.*  
 brwysg *strong, impetuous, swift*. 233, 10.  
 bry *adv. above*. 237, 15.  
 bryd *mind, thought; o un f. with one accord*. 175, 10.  
 bryn (brin) *m. a hill, mount*.  
 brys *m. haste; ar f. in haste*.  
 bryssyaw *to hasten*.  
 Brytaen *f. Britain. B. Fechan Brittany. Brytanyeid Britons*.  
 brythwch *tuult, storm* 229, 7;  
 241, 8. brythweh gaeaf MA. 189a46.  
 bu, see bod.  
 bual *a drinking-horn*.  
 buan *swift, rapid*. 151, 21. 225, 21.  
 buaned *swiftness, fleetness*. 158, 29.  
 bucheð *f. life, salvation*. 150, 15.  
 bucheðu *to live*. 165, 9.  
 buðugawl *victorious, gifted*. 164, 28.  
 buðugolyaeth *f. victory, triumph; pl. -eu*. 144, 5.  
 buðyn? 229, 3.  
 bugeil *m. a shepherd*. 238, 19.  
 bwich *a gap; pl. bylcheu embrasures*. 164, 22.  
 Bwlwyn *n. l. Boulogne*. 162, 14.  
 bwrð *m. a table; pl. byrðeu*.  
 Bwrgwyn *n. l. Burgundy*.  
 bwrw *to throw, cast, strike, hit, overthrow. impf. ind. act. sg. 3 byryei; pret. ind. sg. 3 byrywð*.

bwyll-ig *a small hatchet*. 201, 21.  
 bwyd *m. meat, food*.  
 bwyta *to eat, act of eating*.  
 bwyttal *victuals*. 203, 2.  
 bychan *small*.  
 bychod *a trifle*. 227, 10.  
 1. byd *m. world. gwyn y f. happy he!* 170, 18. goreu yn y b. *best of all; gwas yn y b. any youth*.  
 2. byd, see bod.  
 bydawl *earthly*. 222, 11.  
 byðin *f. a troop, division of an army; pl. -oeð*.  
 byðinaw *to array in troops, to draw up in battle array*.  
 byhud? 233, 9.  
 bylchau, see bwlch.  
 byrr (birr) *short, brief*.  
 byryei, see bwrw.  
 byth (fyth) *ever*.  
 byw (1) *alive; (2) life*.  
 bywyd *life*. 193, 9 v. 1.

cabil *reproof*. 240, 13.  
 cad *f. (1) battle, roði c. ar faes to give battle; (2) a battalion*.  
 cadarn *strong, firm, powerful*.  
 cadarnhäu *to strengthen, fortify, confirm, ratify, affirm*.  
 cadeir *f. a chair, seat*.  
 Cadell *n. pr. m.*  
 cad-ffer *strong in battle*. 241, 5.  
 cad-lys *f. a fortified court*. 195, 5.  
 cadw *to keep, preserve, maintain*.  
 Cad-wallawn *n. pr. m.*  
 cadwent *f. battle, fight, contest*. 198, 20; 230, 6.  
 cad-wr *m. a warrior; pl. cedwyr*. 241, 15. 242, 2.—*n. pr. m.*  
 cadwyn *a chain; pl. -awr*. 228, 16.  
 cadyr *strong, firm*. 241, 22.  
 cae *m. an enclosure, fence*. 149, 6.  
 cael, see caffel.  
 caer *f. a citadel, fortress, city. pl. ceiryð* 156, 31. 193, 2. C. Alclud (Ir. Ail Clúaide) *Dumbarton*, C. Efrawg *York*, C. Faðon *Bath*, C. Fudei *Silchester*, C. Geint *Canterbury*, C. Idor *Dorchester*, C. Lew Dinas *Dinllel*, C. Loyw *Gloucester*, C. Lyr *Leicester*, C. Lleon *Chester*, C. Llion ar Wysc *Caerleon*, C. Lwydcoed *Lincoln*<sup>2</sup>, C. Seon *Segontium*,<sup>3</sup> C.

<sup>1</sup> See Rhys, *Celtic Heathendom*, p. 406.

<sup>2</sup> According to Holder, *Alteltischer Sprachschatz* II, col. 192, *Létocëtum* is the old British name for Lichfield in Staffordshire.

<sup>3</sup> On p. 239, l. 13 *Caer Seon* is confused with *C. Sion 'Zion'*; hence the mention of Jews in l. 14. Cf. Rhys, l.c., p. 272.

**Weir Warwick, C. Wynt Winchester, C. Wyrangon Worcester.**

**caeth captive**; pl. **ceith**.

**caeu to shut, close.** fut. ind. pass. **cayator.** 232, 1.

**Cafall the name of one of Arthur's hounds.** Cabal, Nennius ed. Mommsen, p. 217.

**caffel (caffael, cael) to get, seize, obtain, succeed** 184, 15. pres. ind. sg. 2 **ceffy**, pl. 2 **ceffwch**, pret. pass. **caffad (cahat)**, etc. § 145.

**calaf (coll.) stalks, reeds**; 241, 9.

**calan m. Calends**; c. **Awst first of August**; c. **gaeaf All Saints' Day**; c. **Mei May-day**.

**calaned corpses**, pl. of **celein**. 188, 12. **caled hard, severe**; pl. **-yon**.

**Caled-fwlch (Ir. calad-bolg) m. hard in making notches, the name of Arthur's sword.**

**calon (callon) heart**; pl. **-eu, -oed**.

**cam crooked, wrong**; **wrong, injustice**; **gan g. wrongfully, unjustly**.

**camgwl a fine, penalty.** 225, 3. v. l. for **camlwrw** Leg. Wall. 40b2.

**camlwrw a fine, penalty for the lesser offences.**

**cam-ryfygu to act arrogantly.** 166, 10. Cp. Hg. I. 219, 28.

**cam-wed sin, iniquity.** 229, 28.

1. **can (gan) (voc.) prep. with, by.** § 167. With pron. end. § 53. **gellwng y enei gan yr wybyr spiritum in auris emisit** 159, 25; **yr yseymunedickaf vradwr gan Vedrawt that most accursed traitor of a Medrawd** 189, 15.

2. **can (gan) conj. since.** § 202.

3. **can**, see 1. **cant**.

**canal**, see **cynhal**.

**canfed hundredth, a hundredth part.** 230, 5.

**can-fod to perceive.** § 160.

**canhorthwy help, aid.** 178, 8. 10.

**canhorthwyaw to help.** 176, 8.

**canhwyf**, see **canu**.

**canhym-deith to accompany, keep up with.** 208, 28.

**cani**, see **cany**.

**can-lyn to follow.**

**can-llaw m. a supporter.** 212, 11; 213, 21; 214, 10.

**can-mawl to praise, commend.**

**canonwr m. a canon**; pl. **-wyr**.

**cans**, see **cany**.

1. **cant (can) (nas.) m. a hundred.**

2. **cant**, see **canu**.

**canu to sing, celebrate in song, recite, play**; pres. subj. act. sg. 1

**canwyf**; impf. ind. pl. 3 **cenynt**; pret. ind. sg. 3 **cant**.

**can-wlad a hundred countries.** 232, 3.

**can-wr a hundred men** 151, 25. 172, 15.

**cany (cani)**, before vowels **canyd**, conj. *since not*, § 202.

**canyad permission, consent.** 217, 13.

**cans (cans) i.e., can with the present of the copula, for, since.** § 202.

**caplan m. a chaplain.** 155, 3.

**car a friend, relative**; pl. **-ant**.

**Caranwys Carnotensis.** 179, 21.

**carchar m. a prison, gaol.**

**carcharawr m. a prisoner**; pl. **carcharoryon**.

**carcharu to imprison.** 242, 5.

**cardawd charity, alms.** 237, 7.

**carn a cairn.**

**carreg a rock**; pl. **cerrig**.

**carn-wyn having a white hill.** Hence **carnewennan f.**, the name of Arthur's knife. 207, 31.

**caru to love.** impf. ind. act. pl. 3 **cerynt**; past part. **caredig**.

**carw a stag.** 196, 29.

**caryad m. love, affection.** 233, 15.

**caryant** 140, 4, either miswritten for **caryat** or formed like **mol-yant**, **með-yant**, &c.

**cassân to hate.**

**casseg f. a mare.**

**castell m. a castle, fortress**; pl. **cestyll**.

**cathyl f. a song, lay, poem**; pl. **cathleu**. 229, 17.

**Catyneis n. l. Caithness.** 145, 11.

**Caw n. pr. m.** 201, 19.

**cawn m. (coll.) reed grass, stalks, coarse grass**; 241, 9; 12; sg. **conin**.

**cawr m. a giant, mighty man**; pl. **cewri**.

**cawssei**, see **caffel**.

**cayator**, see **caeu**.

**cedernid strength, force, security, violence.**

**cedig battlesome, boisterous.** 241, 10.

**cedwyr**, see **cadwr**.

**cedymdeith**, see **cydymdeith**.

**cefeis**, see **caffel**.

cefn (keuen) *back*; pl. cefneu; dan-gos eu cefneu *to flee, take to flight*. drachefyn *behind, back, again*; traec-gefn *behind him*; dyfod t. *to return* 213, 8; trach-eu-cefn 221, 21; drae-cefn wynteu *behind them*. 179, 26.

cefynderw *a cousin*. plant yr hen-vam a uyd keuyn-dyru BCh. 75, 28. cegin f. *a kitchen*.

Cei n. pr. m. *Caius*.

ceidwad m. *a witness*; pl. keidweid.

ceing f. *a branch*. 165, 21. 197, 3.

cein *beautiful, fair, delightful*.

Ceint (Cent) *Kent*. 189, 19.

ceissaw *to seek, fetch, endeavour*.

ceirch *oats*. 196, 4.

ceith, see caeth.

celfyd *skilful, ingenious*; *an artist*.

celfydyd f. *an art*; pl. celfyðodeu.

celi *the heavens*. 231, 25. Celi *God*. 231, 24.

celu *to hide, conceal*.

celwrn m. *a piece?* 207, 32.

celwyðawg *lying, false*. 190, 10.

Celydon: llwyn C. 148, 25 = coit Celidon, Nennius, p. 199.

Celli-wig f. *the name of Arthur's court in Cornwall, now Callington*.

cenedlaeth f. *a race, kind*.

cenedyl f. *a race, kind*; pl. cened-loed.

ceneu m. *a whelp*. 198, 32. 199, 4. 32. Ceneu n. pr. m. 162, 3.

cennad m. and f. *a messenger, emissary, embassy*; pl. -eu.

cennadwri f. *a message, tidings*.

cenfeint *a convent*; pl. cenveinoed.

cenwch, see l. can.

cerd *craft, art, song*; pl. cyrd.

cerdawl m. *a craftsman, minstrel, bard*; pl. cerdoryon.

cerded to walk, travel, journey, go.

cerdediad *a course, motion*. 161, 11.

Ceredigyaewn *Cardigan*. 205, 28.

cerenhyd *relationship*. 168, 20.

Cernyw *Cornwall*.

cerwyd *a stag*. 226, 1.

cerwyn f. *a caldron*. Cwm C., n. l. 204, 15.

cesseil *the armpit*. 194, 14.

cethr *a spike*; pl. -awd. 230, 29.

cethron *a spike*. 230, 27.

cewilyd *shame*. 141, 8. 142, 31.

cewssynt, see caffel.

ci m. *a hound*; coll. 205, 9; pl. cwn.

cicwr *a footsoldier*; coll. *infantry*. 202, 29.

cig m. *flesh*.

ciglef, see clybod.

cil *a recess, nook*.

Cil-gwri n.l.

cilyaw *to retreat, desert, fail*.

cilyd *a mate, fellow*. § 72.

ciwdawdwr m. *a citizen, inhabitant*.

cladu *to bury*.

claf *sick*. 143, 13. 149, 28.

cleddyf m. *a sword*; pl. -eu, per metathesis cleyðeu.

clefyd n. *sickness, disease*. 161, 27.

clefyðeu, see cleddyf.

cleigaw *to plunge, immerse*. 206, 21.

cleis *a stripe*. 194, 14. Cf. maen

cleis, *marble*. Lhwyl.—Porth Cleis n. l. 204, 1.

clid *a shelter*. 241, 2.

clod m. and f. *fame, renown*.

clod-fawr *famous, celebrated*.

clodfori *to make illustrious, render famous*. 165, 15.

cloff *lame*.

clomen (colomen) f. *a dove*. 163, 10.

clust m. *an ear*. 201, 29. 203, 26.

clwm *a tune*; pl. clymeu moduli 147, 14.

Clwyd *a river-name*. 204, 17.

clybod *to hear*. impf. ind. act.

sg. 3. clywei; impf. pass. clywid; pret. ind. sg. 1. ciglef; sg. 3. cigleu.

§ 133 b. clybod ar *to hear of*.

clymeu, see clwm.

cnawd *flesh*. 238, 12.

cnes *skin*. 241, 14.

cneuen *a nut*. 196, 23.

cnithaw *to pluck*. 200, 9.

coch *red*.

cochi *to redden, become red*. 173, 16.

coðyant m. *provocation, offence*. 166, 4.

coed (coyt) m. (coll.) *a wood, trees*; baeð c. *a wild boar*. pl. coedyð.

coeth *pure, fine*. eur c. *refined gold*.

cof *memory, recollection*.

coffau *to remember, to call to mind*.

cog *a cuckoo*; pl. -eu.

congyl f. *a corner, angle*. 204, 9. colled m. *loss*; pl. -eu 175, 31.

collen *hazel*. c. derwen *an oak sapling*. 197, 2.

colli *to lose, be lost*. 238, 13.

conin, see cawn.

corff *a body, corpse*.

corn *a horn, trumpet*; *a drinking horn*. pl. *cyrn*, *cirn*.  
 coron f. *a crown*.  
 coryf *pommel, saddle-bow*; metaph. *stay, support*. 233, 20; 234, 23. Arch. I, p. 487.  
 cosb *punishment, fine*. 217, 18.  
 craff *firm, steadfast*. 140, 5.  
 cras *hard, dry*. 225, 20.  
 crown, see *croni*.  
 credu *to believe*. pres. subj. pl. 2 *crettoch*.  
 crefyddus *devout*; *a religious person*. pl. -son. 155, 5.  
 crefyddwr m. *a religious person*. 144, 13 (miswritten for *crefftwyr* = *operarii* Geoffrey II, 14).  
 Creidiylad n. pr. f.  
 creir m. *a relic*; pl. -eu. 153, 26.  
 creirhau *to cause to swear by relics*. 221, 2.  
 crettach, see *credu*.  
 creu *to create*. 227, 19. 228, 18.  
 creu *gore, blood*.  
 creu-lawn *blood-thirsty, cruel*; compar. *creulonach*.  
 creulon-der *cruelty, tyranny, oppression*.  
 creu-lyd *blood-stained, gory*; f. *creuled*. 231, 20. 238, 16.  
 crib f. *a comb*. 203, 25.  
 crin *withered, brittle*. 241, 9.  
 Crist *Christ*.  
 cristawn *a Christian*; pl. *cristonog-yon*.  
 cristonogawl *Christian*.  
 crog f. *a cross*.  
 crogaw, crogi *to crucify, hang*.  
 cronï *to hoard, amass, accumulate*. pres. ind. act. sg. 3 *crawn* 233, 12.  
 crwm bent. 225, 11.  
 crychyd *a shake* (in music); pl. -eu. 147, 14 v.l.  
 cryd *a trembling, tremor*. 231, 22.  
 cryfang *a talon*; pl. -heu 197, 28.  
 cryn *a trembling, quaking*. 228, 33.  
 cryno *suitable*. 156, 32. compar. -ach. 169, 2.  
 crynu *to tremble, quake*. 184, 22.  
 past part. *crynedig* 152, 16.  
 cuan *an owl* 197, 8; 9; *a rock-owl*, *Lhwyd*.  
 cuðyaw *to cover, hide*. 154, 13.  
 cul *lean, thin, emaciated*.  
 Culwyð *God*. 228, 24. 231, 25.  
 Custenhin n. pr. m. *Constantine*.

cwbbwl (cwbyl) *entire, whole*.  
 cweiraw, see *cyweiryaw*.  
 cwfent (cwfent) f. *convent, assembly*; pl. *cwfenoes*.  
 cwm m. *a valley*. 197, 12.  
 cwnsli m. *counsel*. 148, 2.  
 cwrr *an edge, corner*. C. y Fagyl u.l. 204, 4.  
 cwym m. *a fall*. 225, 22.  
 cwynaw *to lament*.  
 cwyn-fan f. *a lament, wailing*.  
 cychwyn, cychwynnu *to set out, move, start*. deil ar gychwyn = *dail yn syrthio* MA. 361 b, n. 8.  
 cyd (ced) conj. *though*; § 205.  
 cyd ac, y gyd ac *together with*.  
 y gyd yg cyd *together* 155, 2. § 171.  
 y gyd a hynny *likewise* 204, 26. 218, 20.  
 cyd-ðioðef *to suffer*. 142, 14. past. part. -edig (y) *suffering (with)*.  
 cyd-ðioch *to congratulate*. 180, 10.  
 cyd-farchawg m. *a knight-comrade*.  
 cyd-gynghor *joint counsel*. 155, 2.  
 cyd-synnedigaeth f. *consent*. 145, 4.  
 cyd-tywyssawg m. *a joint leader*. 178, 1.  
 cyd-ym-deith m. *a companion, comrade*; pl. -on.  
 cydymdeithocâu *to accompany, associate with*. 146, 4.  
 cyf-agos *near*.  
 cyfan *whole, entire*. 183, 32.  
 cyfar *trouble, anger*; 230, 7. Cf. *Rhyfedd ym fyw llyw llawged gan gyfar o gwyn gofid* MA. 301 a 17.  
 cyf-arch (keuarch) *to request, ask*; c. gwell *to greet*; geir cyfarch *a supplementary question asked after the trial, before the verdict is given*.  
 cyf-ar-fod *to meet, encounter, touch*; § 160.  
 cyfarth *to bark, bay*; roði c. *rendre les abois, to stand at bay*. achub yr c. (sic leg.) *to be first at the charge*.  
 cyf-arwyð m. *a guide*.  
 cyf-ar-wyneb(ac) *opposite(to)* 210, 5.  
 cyf-eillt m. *a friend*.  
 cyf-eir f. yn y gyfeir *straight before him, headlong*. 207, 6.  
 cyf-enw *a namesake*. yg kyuenw yr vn dyd ym phen y vlywydyn *that day a year*. 195, 19.  
 cyf-ergir m. and f. *a conflict, contest*. 240, 9.  
 cyf-ing *narrow, strait*. 175, 17.  
 cyf-lawn *full, complete*.

cyflafan f. *an outrage, slaughter.*  
 cyf-le m. *an opportunity.* 159, 16.  
 cyflehau to dispose, arrange, place. 163, 27.  
 cyf-lym sharp, quick, speedy.  
 cyf-newid (O. W. cyfnofud) f. coin, merchandise. 223, 13. Cf. ef a holltir furyf y gyfnewit; haner crwn a vyd RB. 2. 146, 19.  
 cyfodi to arise.  
 cyf-oed having the same age, so old. 141, 28.  
 cyf-oeth m. power, dominion, kingdom, wealth; pl. -eu.  
 cyfoethawg powerful, wealthy.  
 cyfoethogi to enrich.  
 cyfranc f. *an encounter, fight, combat.* 178, 12.  
 cyf-red equally swift. 225, 6.  
 cyf-reith f. law, right; pl. -eu.  
 cyfreithiawl legal, lawful.  
 cyfren plumage? 225, 17. action? 229, 30.  
 cyf-rin a confidant. 225, 5.  
 cyfrwch a meeting. 147, 5 (v.l.).  
 cyfrwng m. mean, interval. yg c. in the midst of 184, 9.  
 cyfrwys trained, expert. 186, 19. 190, 9 v.l. 191, 21.  
 cyf-ryw m. the same kind. 181, 27. a kind 161, 27. similar, like, such.  
 cyf-uch of equal height. yn g. ac on a level with. 174, 30.  
 cyf-un-deb unity, concord. 167, 23.  
 cyf-yawnhau to adjust, arrange. 163, 27 v.l.  
 cyf-yeith having the same language. 196, 13.  
 cyf-yl nearness, proximity. yn y gyfyl near him.  
 cyff m. stock, trunk, stem; pl. -yon.  
 cyffelybu to compare, imitate.  
 cyffredin common. yn g. in common 185, 25. 223, 12.  
 cyffro m. excitement. 164, 27. 176, 6.  
 cyffroi (kefroy) to excite, arouse, disturb; c. cyfreith (hawl) to institute a legal action (a claim). past part. cyffroedig. 184, 10.  
 cyffur occasion, opportunity. 147, 9.  
 cynghaws m. a counsel, advocate.  
 cynghellawr m. a chancellor, the king's principal steward or reeve.  
 cynghelloraeth f. chancellorship.  
 cyngheusaeth f. a pleading.  
 cynglodforussed equally renowned. 186, 5.

cynghor (keghor) m. counsel, advice; caffel yn y gyghor to decide.  
 cynghorfynt envy, malice. 156, 20. Cf. L.A. 12, 19.  
 cyngkori to advise.  
 cynghreir f. a covenant, truce. 159, 12.  
 cyngwastad constant. 234, 6. 235, 27.  
 cyhoeð public. 222, 12.  
 cy-hyd having equal length. yn gyhyd ac as long as.  
 cyhydeð equality, parity. 221, 6. 7.  
 cylch m. a circle. yg c. around, about, towards, concerning; yn eu c. about them, around them; yg c. hynny about that.  
 cylchynu to surround, encompass, besiege. 146, 17 v. 1.  
 cylllell f. a knife, dagger.  
 cylllell-bren the wooden lath of a scabbard; pl. -eu 195, 14. wooden tweezers 200, 5.  
 cylllell-fawr big-knived. 206, 19.  
 cymhell to compel, force, drive, exact. c. y law to force one to surrender.  
 cymenn wise; compar. cymhennach. 175, 28.  
 cymer, see cymryd.  
 cymmeint of equal size, as much, as many, so great, so many.  
 cymnuwd m. a commote, a division of country.  
 cymod to propitiate, make peace. 197, 32. 201, 7.  
 cymodawg a neighbour; pl. cym-odogion.  
 cymod-loneð a concord, agreement.  
 cymrwd mortar. 193, 2.  
 Cymry (pl. of Cymro m. a Welshman) Wales. 154, 10. 203, 31. 222, 4.  
 cymryd (kemyrit) to take. pret. ind. sg. 3. cymerth, cymirth. c. arnaw to feign; c. eu florê (hynt) to set out; c. ffo to take to flight.  
 cymyn to entrust. 157, 10.  
 cymynediw a command, injunction; pl. -eu; 150, 24; 166, 26.  
 1. cyn (cynn) prep. before. § 170.  
 2. cyn (gynn) conj. sooner, before. § 204. gynn noe fyned before he goes. 225, 3.  
 3. cyn a stump; pl. -yon. 197, 14.  
 cynadyf a meeting, assembly. 171, 19.  
 cyn-deced as fair. 163, 14.

cyn-digrifed as pleasant. 163, 14.  
 cyn-dosted equally harsh. 198, 17.  
 Cyn-ðelig n. pr. m. 162, 7.  
 Cyn-ðelw n. pr. m.  
 Cyn-farch n. pr. m.  
 cynefawd custom, usage. 163, 24.  
 167, 1.  
 Cyn-felyn n. pr. m.  
 cynhal, cynnal (kanal) to sustain, support, maintain.  
 cynhebig similar, like.  
 cynhebygu to compare. 161, 2.  
 cynhelu to support. 220, 30.  
 cynhen contention, strife, contest; pl. cynhennu.  
 cynhyrfu to excite, move. 173, 27.  
 cynired to come together, assemble; bring together; a concourse. 162, 20.  
 Cyn-las n. pr. m.  
 cynllwyn an ambush, waylaying. 223, 1.  
 cyn-llyfan a leash, a slip.  
 cynna equally good, peer. 227, 9.  
 cynnal, see cynhal.  
 cynnelw pattern, example, model. 233, 16.  
 cynnifywr (coll.) m. combatants, warriors. 202, 27.  
 cynnig to propose, proffer, suggest.  
 cynnullaw to collect, call together.  
 cynnwys to receive, admit, adopt. 238, 5. Ar sawl a oed dan geithiwet heuyt ef æ kynnwysawd ym paradwys L.A. 133<sup>12</sup>; Creawdyr celi an kynnwys ni yn trugared, F.B. 199<sup>6</sup>.  
 1. cynnyð m. a huntsman; pl. -yon. 205, 4. 7.  
 2. cynnyð increase, prosperity. 237, 6. ef a doeth att Walchmei. Ac a gyuarchawd gwell idaw. Duw a ro kynnyd arnat, heb y Gwalchmei Hg. I. 223, 2.  
 cynnyðu to increase. 180, 12.  
 cyn-ran m. a first or chief part; a leader. 231, 27.  
 cynt adv. formerly, before. yn g. sooner, rather 181, 8.  
 cyntaf first; yn gyntaf first, at first.  
 cyntefin (Ir. cêtemuin) the beginning of summer. 225, 14.  
 Cyn-was n. pr. m. 204, 4.  
 cyny (kene) conj. though not. § 205.  
 cyrch m. an attack, onset, raid.  
 cyrchaw to fetch, bring. 231, 18.  
 cyrchu to attack, set upon, march upon, make for, approach.

cyrn, see corn.  
 cyryscwyðad a quarrel, contention? 230, 9.  
 cysgawd m. shade, shelter, shadow. 241, 11.  
 cysgu to sleep.  
 crystal equally good, as good.  
 cy-war-sangu to trample upon, oppress, crush. 149, 26. 152, 16. 180, 32.  
 cy-weir prepared, equipped, complete. 158, 29. 179, 16.  
 cyweiryaw to prepare, equip, lay out.  
 cy-weithyð a company. 194, 3.  
 cy-wir true, just. 234, 6.  
 1. cy-wlad f. a neighbouring territory, borderland. 233, 18. Rybu Vran vab Llyr lla rywmadur mat ygkamp ygkyulat ygkur M.A. 180 b 13.  
 2. cy-wlad m. a compatriot. 230, 10.  
 cywrein skilful, cunning.  
 cy-wrissed contention, strife. 234, 23. 236, 11.  
 cy-wyð-ol-(y)aeth f. harmony, music; pl. -eu 163, 14. Used also as sg. pa gywydolyaethiev yw hoinn? L.A. 82, 10.  
 chwaer f. a sister; pl. chwioryð.  
 chware to play; play; pl. chwaryeu.  
 chwech, chwe (whe) (spir.) six.  
 chwedyl m. a story, tale, news, tidings; pl. chwedlen.  
 chweg sweet. 239, 21.  
 chwerthyn to smile. chwerðid (§ 129) 225, 22.  
 chwerw bitter. 230, 7.  
 chwi you. Emphatic chwichwi, conjunctive chwithen, chitheu. § 45.  
 Chwintus n. pr. m. Quintus.  
 da (1) good, profitable; (2) goods, wealth, benefit.  
 dabre come! § 141.  
 dad-ganu to recapitulate, rehearse, recite. 173, 6.  
 dadolwch intercession, invocation. 235, 17.  
 dad-rithaw to re-transform. 199, 8.  
 dadyl m. and f. a meeting, dispute, suit, judgment; pl. dadleu (used as sg. masc. and pl.) a dispute.  
 dadyl-fa a meeting-place, court. O.W. dadlma 222, 13.  
 dafad f. a sheep; pl. defeid.

daffar *provision*. 225, 19; cf. gwnneth Duw trvgar gardaund F.B. 15, 14.

dangos (dankos) *to shew, disclose, produce*. d. cefneu *to flee*; d. bronnoeð *to face*; d. deheuoed *turn the right to, face*; d. ysparduneu *y to spur*.

dala (daly) *to hold, seize, retain, hold back, capture*. act. pret. ind. sg. 3 delis (dellis), past subj. pl. 3 delhynt, pluperf. pl. 3 dalyassant.

dam-gylchu *to surround*; past part. damgylchedig.

dam-gylchynu *to surround*. 142, 17.

damunaw *to desire, wish, seek for*; part. damunedig.

damwein m. *accident, chance, fortune, event*; pl. -eu; o ð. *by chance*.

damweinaw (y) *to happen to, to befall*. 173, 11.

danfon *to send, dispatch*. 178, 7.

dar f. *an oak-tree*. 197, 2.

dar-estwng *to subdue, subjugate, yield*; past part. darestyngedig.

dar-fod *to cease, end, come to pass, happen*. pres. ind. act. sg. 3 deryw; fut. ind. sg. 3 deryyð; impf. ind. sg. 3 daroeð; cond. sg. 3 darffei. § 160.

dar-llaw *to read*. 231, 29.

darmerth *provision, preparation*. 162, 19.

dar-o-gan *prophesy, prognostication*; pl. daroganneu.

darpar (am) m. *preparation (for), provision, project*.

darparu *to prepare, intend*. 196, 7.

dar-ym-red *to pass to and fro*; 210, 7.

dathoedd, see dyfod.

1. daw m. *a son-in-law*; pl. dofyon.

2. daw, see dyfod.

dawn *gift, mental endowment*; pl. donyeu.

dayar (dayr, dair) f. *earth, land, ground*.

dayar-dy *a subterranean vault*.

dayar-gychwyn *an earthquake*; 229, 1.

dayoni *goodness, virtue, valour*.

dayrawl *earthly, mundane, material*. 164, 9.

de, see dy.

dechreu *to begin, inaugurate*; *a beginning, origin*.

dedwyð *happy, blessed, virtuous*.

dedwyðyd *happiness, felicity*.

defawd f. *custom, practice, habit, ordinance*; pl. defodau.

defnyð m. *material, clement, substance, cause*; pl. defnyðeu, defnyðyeu *witnesses, guarantors, etc. in a lawsuit*.

deg, deng (nas) *ten*. § 41.

deheu (1) *right (dexter), righteous*; (2) *the right hand or arm, the right side of the body, south, South-Wales*; pl. -oeð.

Deheu-barth *South-Wales*.

dehongyl (dehogyl) *to interpret; interpretation*. 173, 8, 13.

dehol *to expel, banish*. 143, 21, 155, 7.

deifaw *to roast*. 199, 28.

deil (coll.) *leaves*.

deissyfeid (deissyfyt, dissiuit) *to demand, request, seek, merit*.

deissyfyd (dysseifyd) *sudden, unexpected*. 147, 3, 187, 23, 208, 17.

1. delhynt, see dala.

2. delhynt, see dyfod.

delw f. *image, form*.

delwad m. *creator*. 227, 1.

delwyd, see dyfod.

deni, see 1. tan.

derwen f. *an oak-tree*. collen d.

*a young oak*.

dethol *select, picked*. 202, 29.

deu m. *two*; f. dwy (dui, du).

§ 42 (a).

deubi, see dyfod.

deu-ðeg (nas.) *twelve*.

deu-ðeg-mlwyð *twelve years old*.

deu-ðyblig *double, two-fold*. 214, 29.

deugeint *forty*.

deugeinfed *fortieth*; ar y d. *with forty men*. § 165.

Deu-gleðyf *the name of a cantref in Pembroke*. 204, 5.

deu-hanner *divided in two equal halves*. 221, 7.

deuth, see dyfod.

Dewi n. pr. m. *David*.

dewin m. *a magician*. 225, 16.

dewis *to choose, prefer*.

dewr *brave*.

dewreð *proveness, valour, prime of life*. 140, 6, 180, 10, 186, 1, 4.

warriors 144, 1, (omnem armatum militem).

Dews (Deus) Lat. Deus. 227, 1, 20.

1. di, see ti.

2. di (dy) (voc.) O.W. = later i, y, prep. to. diði *to her*. § 195.

di-aerfa *without slaughter*. 170, 10 (sic leg.)

di-afael exempt from seizure. 223, 32.  
 di-angc to escape. pret. ind. act. sg. 3 diengis (dihegis).  
 di-al to avenge; vengeance.  
 di-am (O. W.) for. § 164.  
 di-amheu undoubted, certain, evident. 235, 18.  
 di-anaf flawless, whole. 202, 5.  
 di-annod without delay.  
 di-anrydeu to dishonour. 142, 6.  
 di-arfeu unarmed. 156, 1.  
 di-arfod unprepared. 177, 30.  
 di-arfu to disarm.  
 diawd drink. 170, 16.  
 did, see dodi.  
 di-drifwr m. a hermit. 165, 8.  
 di-dryf a solitary place, hermitage. 165, 9.  
 di-ðarbod to consider, care. heb ð. parum cogitans 184, 14. impf. ind. act. pl. 3 diðorynt 175, 26. § 147.  
 di-eithyr outside. § 172. yn y d. 222, 14.  
 diën buds. 241, 19. Arch. I. p. 503.  
 dieu, dieuoëf, see dyð.  
 difa to destroy, annul. 197, 13.  
 di-fanw (O. W. dimanw) to disparage, slight. pres. subj. act. sg. 3 difanwo. 224, 7.  
 di-farnu I judge, decide against. 140, 9. 220, 13. 16. fut. sg. 3 diwarnawd 228, 20.  
 di-fei faultless, perfect. 238, 15.  
 di-fetha to destroy. 197, 31.  
 di-fryssio to hasten, speed. 242, 2.  
 di-funer exempt from allegiance to a lord. 223, 31.  
 di-fwlch without a notch. Cleðyf D. n. pr. m. 204, 12.  
 di-fwyn void, idle, unused, untouched (of a virgin). 201, 4.  
 di-fwynant profitless. 211, 8.  
 diffeith waste.  
 diffeithaw to lay waste.  
 diffeithwch m. a waste, wilderness.  
 differei, see diffryd.  
 diffryd (rac) to defend, protect (from). past. subj. act. sg. 3 differei; pret. ind. sg. 3 diffyrth, diffirth. § 133a.  
 diffurn? 228, 11.  
 di-garyad unloving, unkind. 142, 4.  
 1. digawn (dygawn) m. a sufficiency; sufficient.  
 2. digawn to be able, to effect, do, accomplish; pres. ind. sg. 1 digonaf.

di-gribyaw (y) to attack. 205, 5.  
 Cf. ym-gribiaw.  
 digrif pleasant, agreeable.  
 digrifwch pleasure, enjoyment.  
 di-gyfoethi to dispossess, deprive of territory. 191, 17.  
 diheu undoubted, certain. d.-porth firm support. 234, 14.  
 di-hewyd affection, inclination, desire. 175, 25. 180, 32. 182, 11.  
 dilëu to exterminate, annihilate.  
 dilid to pursue.  
 di-luyð exempt from hosting. 223, 31.  
 dillad (coll.) clothes, dress. 154, 8.  
 dim a thing, something; nothing, naught. dilëu hyd ar ðim to annihilate; dilid hyd ar ðim to pursue to extinction; adv. at all.  
 din a fortress. Din Tywi n. l. 205, 27.  
 Din-dagwl n. l. Tintagel.  
 dinas m. a city, citadel; pl. dinas-soeð.  
 di-obeithaw to despair. 190, 13.  
 di-od to take off, divest, extract.  
 di-oðef (O. W. diguadef) to suffer, undergo, withstand.  
 dioer verily, certainly. 176, 1.  
 di-o-gel safe, secure.  
 diogelwch safety, security.  
 diolch (i) to thank.  
 dipynwys, see dybynu.  
 dir necessary. 190, 10.  
 dir-fawr very great, huge, enormous.  
 dirieid wicked. 225, 12.  
 dirwy f. a fine, mulct.  
 di-rybuð without warning. 158, 12.  
 disgyblu to study, imitate (like a disciple). 156, 22. Cf. Hg. I. 208, 5.  
 disgynnu to dismount, descend, alight, land, put up at.  
 dispeilaw to unsheathe. 199, 13.  
 dissifd, see deissyfyd.  
 distryw to destroy, demolish.  
 ditheu, see titheu.  
 dithwn (O. W.) this day. 208, 15. 16.  
 di-wall careful, unceasing. 164, 5.  
 1. diwarnawd m. a day.  
 2. diwarnawd, see di-farnu.  
 diwedyð m. evening. 241, 13.  
 diwed end or d. at last.  
 di-weir chaste. 164, 15.  
 diweir-deb chastity. 190, 16.  
 diwethaf last. 154, 30.  
 di-wreid an uprooting. 233, 3.  
 di-wreidedig uprooted, demolished. 155, 4.  
 di-wyll cultivation. 167, 8.



*dodi (dody) to place, put, give, charge.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 *did*; *dodi ar y gyfraith to appeal to the law*; *dodi ym mhen un to suggest, submit, entrust, hand over.*

*dodyw, doent, see dyfod.*

1. *doeth wise, sage.* 143, 3.

2. *doeth, see dyfod.*

*doeth-ineb wisdom.* 142, 32.

*Dofyð m. the Lord, God.*

*Dofyðyad m. the Lord.* 231, 15.

*dofyon, see l. daw.*

*dogyn portion, share.* 202, 14.

*doið, see dyfod.*

*dolur grief, anguish.* 144, 20.

*doluryaw to grieve.* 154, 25. 204, 20.

*domni=Lat. Domini.* 237, 2.

*donyawg gifted, endowed.* 235, 19.

*donyen, see dawn.*

*dos, see myned.*

*dothuif, doy, doynt, see dyfod.*

*drachefyn, see trachefyn.*

*dragon, dreig f. a dragon;* 172, 29.

*a battle standard. pl. dreigau.*

150, 26. 180, 2. 184, 3.

*drein (coll.) thorns.* 230, 32.

*dros, see tros.*

*drudbold, arrogant, wicked.* 186, 13.

232, 8.

*drudannaeth f. arrogance.* 165, 28

(*protervia*).

*Drud-wyn m. the name of a hound.*

204, 8.

*drwg bad, evil; mischief, harm.*

*drws door, entrance; pl. dryssen.*

*drwy, see trwy.*

*drycin (i.e. dryg-hin) foul weather.*

225, 6.

*drychafel to raise, lift; rise.*

*dryg-ðamwein misfortune, ill-luck.*

*dryll m. portion, fragment; pl. -eu.*

*dryllyaw to break in pieces, shatter.*

*dryssawr m. a doorkeeper.* 234, 8.

*drysseau, see drws.*

*du black.*

*duc m. a duke.*

*duch, dug, see dwyn.*

*du-hunaw to awake.* 173, 6.

*Du-las (Ir. Dub-glas) a river-name.*

146, 14.

*du-un accordant, agreeable.* 216, 23.

*duw (dyw): pob d. on every day.*

201, 5. *d. Sadwrn on Saturday.*

228, 21. 240, 10.

*Duw m. God. pl. dwyweu* 142, 21.

*dwfrein, see dwyreïn.*

*dwfyr (dwfwr) m. water.*

*dwrn a fist, hand; pl. dirn.* 235, 2.

*dwy, see deu. dwyweu, see Duw.*

*dwywawl divine.*

*dwy-law (pl. of llaw) hands.*

*dwyn to take, carry, bring, capture;* § 133 (b). *d. ar gof to call to mind.* *d. ruthur to attack.* *d. yr*

*dygyn to affirm on oath.* pres.

ind. act. sg. 1 *dygaf*; fut. ind. pass.

*dygetawr* (§ 129. n.); imper. sg. 2

*dwg*; pres. subj. sg. 3 *duch* (§ 110

n. 2); pret. ind. sg. 3 *dug*.

*dwyreïn (dwfrein, dwyfrein) the*

*east.* 172, 1. 181, 17.

1. *dy, see 2. di.*

2. *dy (de) (voc.) poss. adj. thy.* § 57.

3. *dy (de), see ti.*

*dy-borthi to carry, inflict.* 180, 26.

*dy-bryd ugly, foul, base.* 178, 6;

180, 19; 190, 26.

*dybynu to hang down.* 230, 18.

*dycco, dyccwy, see dwyn.*

*dychmyg m. invention, device;*

pl. -eu, -yon. 164, 26.

*dyð (O.W. did) m. day, daytime,*

*daylight, date; pl. dieu (after*

*numerals), dieuod, dyðeu; d. brawd*

*Doomsday; hanner d. mid-day.*

*dyð-gweith on a certain day, one*

*day.* 199, 10.

*dy-ðwyn to bring.* 194, 13.

*Dyfed Demetia.*

*Dyfnarth n. pr. m.* 200, 28.

*Dyfnaint n. l. Devon.* 206, 5.

*dyfod (deuod, douct) to come.* § 141.

*dyfodedigaeth f. a coming, arrival.*

*dy-fryssyaw to hasten.* 242, 2.

*dyfnant, dyfyð, see dyfod.*

*dyfynnu to summon.* 201, 1. 205, 2.

*Dyfn-wal n. pr. m.*

*dyffio, see dyfod.*

*dyffryn m. a valley.* *D. Llychwr*

*the valley of Loughor.*

*dyffygaw to fail, lack.* 145, 24.

180, 11.

*dy-gaboli to belabour, beat soundly*

207, 21.

*dygaf, dygetawr, see dwyn.*

*dygonho, see 2. digawn.*

*dy-gryn terror.* 228, 33.

*dygrynnyaw to seize, clutch.*

206, 20.

*dy-grynði to avail, profit.* 153, 10.

175, 30.

*dy-gwyðaw to fall, chance.*

*dygwyðedigaeth f. setting (of the*

*sun).* 151, 4.

dygyn *hard, severe; a test, proof.*  
See dwyn.

dy-gyrchu *to make for, set upon;*  
*draw.* 194, 23. 202, 12. 206, 24.

1. dy-heð *discordant, strange?*  
*piteous, a pity?* 194, 19.<sup>1</sup>

2. dyheð? 228, 27. Here MA.  
73 b 6 has the variant *tuedd*, pl. of  
*tu* 'country-side, country.'

dy-leith *death.* 232, 1.

dylyed f. *due, claim, right, title.*

dylyedawg *high-born, noble; pl.*  
*dylyedogyon.* 140, 29. 155, 14.

156, 24.

dylyedus *due, proper.* 182, 20.

dylyu (deleu) *to have a right to,*  
*deserve, be due, owe.* 171, 26. 208, 20. 23.  
217, 25. 237, 19.

dyn m. and f. *a human being, man;*  
*coll. men* 204, 5. pl. *yon* (deneon).

dy-nessau *to approach, draw near.*

dyn-y-orn (cf. Ir. duin-orgun) *homi-*  
*cide, murder.* 222, 17.

dyrchefynt, see drychafel.

dyrn-awd m. *a blow; pl. dyrnoden.*

dyrn-feð *a handbreadth.* 197, 24.

dy-roði *to give.* pres. ind. act.  
sg. 3 *dere, dyry;* imperat. sg. 2 *dyro.*

dyrys (1) *difficult, intricate;* (2)  
*adversity.* 162, 20. 167, 16. 175, 18.

dysg m. *teaching, instruction,*  
*example, behaviour.* 164, 12. 182, 19.  
184, 23 (*hortamen*). 187, 7.

dysgu *to teach, instruct.*

dysseifyd, see deissyfyd.

dywad, see dywedud.

dywal *fierce.* 183, 13. 233, 4.

dywalhau *to harass.* 185, 26.

dyfyð, see dyfod.

dyw, see duw.

dywedud *to say.* § 133.

dywygyad (di-) *manner, fashion.*  
164, 12.

1. e, see yð.

2. e, see 4. y.

eb-rwyð *swift, quick.* 176, 11.

ebryn? 228, 27.

ech *outside of, beyond?* 228, 16.  
Cf. FB. 66, 8; 106, 30; 140, 31; MA.  
208a 49.

Echel *Achilles.*

echenawg *needy, destitute.* 143, 5.

echwrys *violent, fierce.* 227, 22;  
Cf. FB. 159, 5; 199, 20. MA. 247,  
24. 36.

ed, see yð.

ederyn, see adar.

edifar *repentant, sorry.* 149, 17.

edir, see adaw.

edirn (etyrn) *sovereignty, supre-*  
*macy.* 235, 3. 236, 15.

edrych *to look, see.* 164, 23. 220, 9.

ed-rif *descent, lineage.* 212, 29. Cf.  
MA. 168a 51.

ed-ucher (= hyd ucher) *till evening.*  
193, 1. 203, 5.

edyw, see ydyw.

edewis, see adaw.

ef (eff) *he, it.* §§ 45; 47. *Emphatic*  
*efo* (effo); conjunct. *ynteu.* § 45 (b).

efelly *thus, so.* See felly.

efo, effo, see ef.

Efyas n. l. *a cantred in Hereford-*  
*shire.* 206, 4.

effeiryad m. *a priest; pl. effeiryaid.*

eglur *clear, bright, brilliant,*

*renowned, famous.* 167, 1. 169, 22.

eglur-der *brightness, brilliance.*  
173, 1.

eglwys f. *church; pl. eglwysseu.*

egnad (O.W.), pl. *egneyd, see*  
*ynad.*

englyn m. *a stanza of three or four*  
*lines.* 200, 13.

englylon, see angel.

enghyrth (eghirith) *terrible, pain-*  
*ful.* 238, 10. FB. 177<sup>2</sup>; MA. 351b 21.

chang *unrestricted, free.* 173, 29.

chawg m. *a salmon.* 197, 28.

chedeg *to fly.* 172, 29.

ehofyn-der *fearlessness, confidence,*  
*courage.* 187, 4.

ehunan *himself; pl. ehunein* § 60.

ei, see myned.

eidaw *his; eidunt theirs.* § 55.

Eifft Egypt. yr E. 172, 18.

eigawn *ocean, sea.* 161, 18.

eingon f. *an anvil.* 196, 21.

1. eil *second, next.* eil hynaf *eldest*  
*but one; eilweith a second time,*  
*again; bop eilwers alternately.*

2. eil *a son.* 200, 28; 205, 24.

eilenwvi *to fulfil, accomplish.*  
152, 14. 169, 22.

eillaw *to shave, to cut (hair).*

einym *ours.* 169, 14. § 55.

eirant *they will arise.* 229, 19; 20.  
See RC. VI, 27.

eirchad *a suitor, suppliant.* 234, 5.

eir-m-oed *since my time.* 198, 9.  
§ 197 n.

<sup>1</sup> For oed dyhed ketu y ryw was hwnn WB. 475, RB. 116 has ys oed gryssyn ketu &c.

eiry *snow*.  
 Eiryawn n. pr. m. 204, 30.  
 eiryf *number*. 172, 14.  
 eir-y-oed (eiroed) *ever, always*.  
 § 197 n. 140, 3.  
 eisseu *want, indigence*. 146, 2.  
 199, 19.  
 eissoes *yet, nevertheless*.  
 cissyflad *hell*. 231, 13. v. l. issaf  
 wlad, MA. 74b 14. cissyflat, FB.  
 161<sup>34</sup>, v. l. Eissyf wlad MA. 27a<sup>56</sup>.  
 See FB. 302<sup>28</sup>.  
 cissyllud *progeny, followers*. 232, 9.  
 Cf. FB. 44, 2; 203, 24; MA. 143a 39.  
 169a, 35.  
 eisted (eyste) *to sit*; e. wrth y gaer  
*to besiege the city*.  
 eisted-fa f. *a seat, throne*; pl. -eu.  
 eithaf *end, extremity*; pl. -oed.  
 eithyr prep. *except*. § 172.  
 el, see myned.  
 el-chwyl *a second time, again*. 141,  
 22. 142, 22.  
 elhei, elhid, elhynt, eloch, see  
 myned.  
 Elen n. pr. f. *Helen*.  
 ell (ill, yll) *all*, see § 67.  
 ellwng *to dismiss, dispatch, let*;  
*shed (blood)*. past. subj. act. sg. 3  
 ellygei, pret. ind. sg. 3 ellygwys, etc.  
 past part. ellyngedig.  
 ellyn *a razor*. 203, 25.  
 em, see yn.  
 emelldigedig *accursed*.  
 Emrys n. pr. m. *Ambrose*.  
 Emyr n. pr. m.  
 en, ena, see yn, yna.  
 encil, encilyaw *to retreat*. 185, 1.  
 encyd *space of time*. 184, 8.  
 ene, see yny.  
 eneid (eneyt) m. *life, soul*; pl. -eu;  
 myned e. dros e. *to engage in a life-*  
*for-life struggle*.  
 enfyn, see anfon.  
 enguis (O. W.), see enwi.  
 enull *to gain, win*. 145, 18.  
 enneint *an ointment, a bath*. 143,  
 13. Cf. RB. 76, 11.  
 Enoc n. pr. m. *Enoch*.  
 ennynnu *to kindle, fire; be inflamed*.  
 enrydeð (anryded) m. *honour*,  
*dignity*. 142, 16. 144, 11. 145, 21.  
 enrydeðu (anrydedu) *to celebrate*.  
 154, 23. pres. subj. act. sg. 3  
 enrydeðocao.  
 enrydeðus *honourable, noble, vener-*  
*able, dignified*. 143, 24.

enteu (entheu, entehu) pers. pron.  
 sg. 3 m. §§ 45(c); 46(c).  
 enw (heno) m. *a name*.  
 enwi *to name*. pret. ind. act. sg. 3  
 enguis (O. W.) 218, 5.  
 eny, see yny.  
 enywed (ennuet) *damage, injury*.  
 Sew y turtyw ac enwywet llosgy tey a  
 thorry aradyr BCh. 63, 8.  
 1. er, see l. yr.  
 2. er (yr) prep. *for*. §§ 53, 197.  
 3. er, see l. y.  
 er-by n *against*; yn erbyn *to meet*,  
*against, by*. § 173. yn awch e.  
*against you*. 180, 19.  
 erbynyaw *to receive; withstand*.  
 erbyneyd (erbyneid) *to receive*.  
 141, 16. 143, 25.  
 erchi (hercki) *to ask, request, bid*;  
 pres. ind. act. sg. 1 archaf.  
 eregthun, eregthunt, see rwng.  
 ereill, see arall.  
 ereint *silver*. 200, 24. 203, 19.  
 205, 5. Cf. Rhys, Celt. Heathendom,  
 p. 125.  
 erestyn m. *a juggler*. 147, 13. The  
 parallel passage in M. A. 531a 55 has:  
 ac en rith kroesan ac arwestdyn ac  
 gwareyt.  
 ereu 230, 1 = eireu MA. 73b<sup>46</sup>,  
 see geir.  
 er-gelu *to hide*. fut. ind. pass.  
 ergelawr 227, 28. ergelhawr ib. 29.  
 er-glybod *to listen to*. imper. sg. 2  
 erglyw 235, 10. 236, 22.  
 er-gryn *dread, fear*. 202, 31.  
 er-gyd m. *a stroke, blow, cast*; pl.  
 -eu.  
 er-hyl *hunt, chase*. 201, 18; 204, 8.  
 er-lid *to pursue*.  
 er-lysu *to reject, deny*. 229, 30.  
 ermid m. *a hermit*. pl. -wyr.  
 ermud? 232, 10.  
 ermyn-wisc *a robe with border of*  
*ermine*. 161, 29.  
 eryf? 229, 4. 9.  
 eryr m. *an eagle*; pl. -od 154, 3.  
 metaph. *a leader*.  
 es, see §§ 94; 159 n. 2.  
 Esgeir Oervel n. l. *Seiscenn Uar-*  
*beoil in Ireland*. 201, 32. 203, 3.  
 esgob m. *a bishop*; pl. escyb.  
 esgobaeth f. *a bishopric*; pl. -eu.  
 esgobawd *a bishopric*.  
 esgolheig m. *a scholar, clerk*; pl.  
 -ion.  
 esgyll, see asgell.

esgyrn, see asgwrn.  
 esgynnu *to ascend, mount, climb.*  
 esmwyth-der m. *ease, rest.*  
 estrawn *a stranger.* 225, 4.  
 estwng = gestwng *to let down.*  
 e. gantunt *incumbentes* 176, 30.  
 etifeð m. *an heir; coll. heirs.*  
 141, 1. pl. -yon 181, 26.  
 eto, see etwa.  
 etheuis, see ađaw.  
 ethol *to choose, select.*  
 ethynt, see myned.  
 etwa (eto) *yet, still.* ettwa 191, 7.  
 eu *their.* § 57. eu hun *themselves.*  
 eur m. *gold.*  
 eur-đwrn *golden-handed, liberal.*  
 pl. -đirn 235, 2. 236, 14.  
 eureid *golden, gilt, set with gold.*  
 184, 3 ( *aureus*).  
 eur-gleđyf-ruđ *golden-sword-red.*  
 233, 9.  
 euryr *golden.* 201, 11.  
 ewin f. *a nail, talon, claw.* 201, 9.  
 ewythyrr m. *an uncle (brother of*  
*one of parents, grand-parents, or*  
*great-grand-parents); pl. ewythyređ*  
*206, 2.*  
 eyl-weyth, see l. eil.  
 fal (mal) conj. *as.* § 216.  
 felly *thus.* yfelly 164, 30. 166, 20.  
 fi, ffi, see mi.  
 fry *above.*  
 fyhud? 231, 9.  
 fyn (nas.) *my.* §§ 57, 59.  
 ffalst *cunning.* 147, 16.  
 Ffichteid *Picts.*  
 fflam f. *a flame, fire.* 160, 4. 185, 4.  
 fflamychedig *inflamed, flaming.*  
 159, 20.  
 Fflandrys *Flanders.*  
 ffo *to flee.* ar ffo *in flight.*  
 fforđ f. *a road, way, passage, means;*  
 pl. fflyrđ.  
 fforest f. *a forest; pl. -i.*  
 Ffreinc f. *France.*  
 ffuruf f. *form, manner; pa ff. how?*  
 ffustaw *to strike, beat.* 175, 2.  
 ffwrn f. *a furnace.* 228, 22.  
 ffyđ *faith.* 149, 31.  
 ffyđ-lawn *faithful.* 181, 3.  
 ffynhawn f. *a fountain, spring.*  
 fflyrđ, see fforđ.  
 gadael (gadayl) *to leave, allow.*  
 215, 29. See gadu.  
 gadaw *to leave.*

gadu *to leave, allow, permit.* pres.  
 ind. act. sg. 2 gedy; § sg. 3 gad  
 146, 2; pl. 2 gedwch; imper. pass.  
 gat-her.  
 gafael (gafayl) f. *a seizing, hold-*  
*ing; seizure.* 222, 15.  
 gafael-fawr *of mighty grip.*  
 Glewlwyd G., 204, 24.  
 galar *sorrow.* 229, 9.  
 galw *to call, summon, name.* pres  
 ind. pass. gelwir; imper. pl. 2  
 gelwch.  
 gallel, gallu *to be able; power,*  
*might.* pres. ind. act. sg. 2 gelly;  
 sg. 3 geill, etc.  
 gan, see can.  
 ganed, see geni.  
 garcon? 199, 12.  
 garth *a mountain ridge.* 205, 29.  
 garw *rough.*  
 gast f. *a bitch.*  
 gawr f. and m. *a shout, cry;*  
*battle.* 205, 10. 229, 23.  
 gayaf (gaeaf) m. *winter.* 156, 14.  
 gefeil *tongs, pincers.* geffeil 194, 14.  
 1. geir (geyr) m. *a word, request.*  
 pl. -eu; o un eir *with one accord.*  
 2. geir (gyr, ger) *near.* g. llaw  
*near, close by: g. bronn before, § 168.*  
 gelfin *a beak.* 196, 23.  
 gelyn m. *an enemy; pl. -yon.*  
 gelynwyl *hostile.*  
 gellwng *to loose, let loose, let,*  
*dismiss, deliver up, draw (a sword).*  
 pret. ind. act. pl. 3 gellygassant.  
 geneu m. *jares, mouth.* 229, 31.  
 geni *to be born; pret. ind. pass.*  
 ganed. 227, 12.  
 genthi, genti, see can.  
 ger, see 2. geir.  
 Gereint n. pr. m. 203, 9. 211, 8.  
 Gllamor (Ir. Gilla mōr *Big Lad*)  
 n. pr. m. 192, 14.  
 Gllamwri (Ir. Gilla Muire *the ser-*  
*vant of Mary*) n. pr. m. 192, 13.  
 Gllpadrig (Ir. Gilla Pādraig *the*  
*servant of Patrick*) n. pr. m. 192, 13.  
 gilyđ, see cilyđ.  
 girad *lamentable, piteous, terrible.*  
 173, 3. 192, 9.  
 glan f. *a bank, shore; pl. glannau.*  
 glanhau *to clean, polish.* 194, 16.  
 gleif m. and f. *a lance, spear.* Hg.  
 II. 91, 12 = paladyr onn CM. 87, 32.  
 gleis, see cleis.  
 glew *brave, stout; a brave man,*  
*hero.—n. pr. m. 204, 20.*

glew-der *bravery, boldness, valour*.  
 Glew-lwyd n. pr. m. 204, 24.  
 gliin m. *a knee*; pl. -yeu.  
 gloew *bright, sparkling*. 235, 3.  
 glud, *tenacious, fast, diligent*.  
 175, 5. MA. 285 a 1.  
 glyn (wrth) *an adhering (to), following close*. 195, 4.  
 glynn m. *a valley, glen*. 197, 12. 204, 14.  
 Glyth-myr n. pr. m. 201, 12.  
 Glythfyr ib.  
 glyw m. *a ruler*. 233, 3. 235, 4.  
 gnawd *customary, usual, common*.  
 gnotäedig *accustomed, usual*.  
 142, 11. 145, 22.  
 gobeith *hope*.  
 go-bedr *or the four-corners (of the world)*. 228, 3. FB. 199, 20. 160, 19. MA. 236b 28.  
 go-ben-yð m. *a pillow*; pl. -eu.  
 go-byr m. *a fee, pay*. 221, 25.  
 go-chel *to avoid, wash off, shun, escape*. 148, 30. 150, 21. 159, 3. 169, 28.  
 Godlont *Gothland*. 156, 11.  
 go-dricawr m. *a lingerer, sojourner*. 239, 8.  
 go-dwrð m. *a rumbling noise*. 172, 28.  
 go-ðef *to suffer, allow, permit*. 233, 8.  
 godeith m. *a heath*. 185, 5. 226, 4.  
 godeu *purpose, design*. 239, 8.  
 yg g. gweith Mynaw FB. 187, 29.  
 gof m. *a smith*. 196, 21.  
 gofal m. *anxiety* 147, 6; pl. gofeilon 156, 30.  
 gofalus *anxious*. 149, 27. 160, 3.  
 gofud m. *affliction, injury*. 143, 6.  
 gofwy *to visit*. 142, 3.  
 gofyn (wrth) *to ask (of), seek*. 199, 2.  
 gofynnyad *an asking; demand*. 205, 20.  
 Gogigwr n. pr. m. 204, 23.  
 go-gleð m. *the North*. 145, 12. 200, 32. 201, 15.  
 go-gof f. *a cave*; pl. -eu.  
 go-gyfarch *prominent, conspicuous*.  
 Read with Add. gogyfurð (*duodecim pares*), q. v. 162, 16; 171, 11.  
 go-gyf-urð *of equal rank, peer*. 171, 11, v.l.  
 go-hir *to delay; delay, respite*.  
 golchi *to wash, polish*. 194, 6.  
 go-leith *to dissolve*. 233, 7. FB. 58, 30.

goleuhau *to light up, illumine*, 173, 1.  
 golud *wealth*. 198, 20. 233, 12.  
 go-luð *to hinder, obstruct*. 233, 12.  
 golwg f. *a look, glance*.  
 gor-alw *to cry or call aloud*. 184, 18.  
 pret. ind. act. sg. 3 gorelwis. 231, 24. FB. 283, 10. MA. 195 a 54.  
 gor-cheidwad m. *a guardian, custodian*; pl. gwercheidweid 208, 17.  
 gor-chyfygu *to overcome, conquer*. 155, 26.  
 gor-chymyn (gorchymun) *to command, commend, commit to; a command, injunction*; pl. -eu.  
 gorðerch-wraig f. *a concubine*; pl. -wraegð 164, 12.  
 gorðeri m. *a shrieking, noise, disturbance*. 176, 19. 183, 22.  
 gor-ðifwng *very steady, steadfast*. 233, 1.  
 Gor-ðu n. pr. f. 207, 12.  
 gorðwy *oppression, violence*. 233, 2.  
 gor-ðyfeid *to experience, enjoy habitually*. 142, 14. FB. 28, 18; 44, 13; 88, 27; 258, 22.  
 gorelwis, see gor-alw.  
 gor-esgyn *to invade, overrun*.  
 1. goreu best.—n. pr. m. 195, 8.  
 2. goreu, see gwneuthur.  
 gor-flwng *very severe, austere*. 233, 3.  
 gor-fod *to overcome, conquer*. g. ar 181, 4. pres. ind. sg. 3 gor-yw 230, 13. § 160.  
 gor-flowys *to cease, rest*. 157, 25.  
 gor-hoffder m. *a boasting, vaunting*. 174, 34.  
 gor-hoffeð *a boasting, affectation*. 174, 13.  
 gor-llewin *the West*.  
 gormes f. *oppression, tyranny*.  
 gormod *excess*; 164, 6. yn o. too much, 176, 6.  
 gor-or m. *a border, side*. 242, 7.  
 gor-seð (gworseð) f. *a seat, throne, court*. 234, 21. 240, 4.  
 gor-sefyll *to withstand, stand*.  
 pres. ind. act. sg. 3 gorsseiw 234, 22.  
 pres. pass. gorseuir 241, 7. Cf. MA. 160 b 2.  
 gor-uchel *very high or loud*. 150, 7. 241, 6.  
 gorug, see gwneuthur.  
 Gor-wen n. pr. f. 207, 12.  
 gorwyð m. *a steed, warhorse*. 242, 5.

\*gor-ysgelu to overflow (*the bowl*).  
 pres. subj. sg. 3 gorysgelho 240, 2.  
 Ni ddodai eirif ar ra dillad  
 Na gwin grysgelo nac ysgarlod  
 MA. 222 b 18.  
 Cf. gwin gorysgalawc RB. 103, 18.  
 gorysgalauc in large bowls E. Lh.  
 gosgorð retinue. 141, 9.  
 go-sgubaw to sweep. pres. ind.  
 act. sg. 3 gosgupið 241, 21.  
 gosgymonn (literally *fuel, food*)  
 occasion. 174, 5. RB. 114, 4; Hg.  
 II. 34, 30; FB. 6, 8; 306, 16.  
 gossod to put, establish, set, attack,  
 thrust. g. ar to attack; g. drwy  
 arrange. past part. -edig 148, 16.  
 gosteg f. silence, the proclaiming  
 of silence in court. 211, 3. 8. 234, 20.  
 gostegu to proclaim silence. 234, 19.  
 gostegwr m. a silencer. 234, 19.  
 grað f. a step; pl. -eu. 166, 27.  
 grawn m. grain (coll.) 225, 1.  
 Greid n. pr. m. 198, 18.  
 Greidawl n. pr. m. 199, 10.  
 grið-fan to groan, a groaning.  
 Groeg f. Greece.  
 Gruffið n. pr. m. 162, 4. 235, 17.  
 Grugyn n. pr. m. 203, 19.  
 grwm-seid having a dark-coloured  
 hair. 194, 15; MA. 954a 2. Cf.  
 gwrym-dudet FB. 83, 19; gweileh  
 gwrym-de 84, 4.  
 grym force, strength, effort. 151, 13.  
 184, 24.  
 gwad m. a denial. 231, 12.  
 gwadu to deny, refuse; pres. subj.  
 pass. gwatter 239, 6.  
 gwae woe! g. a. woe to him who...  
 225, 4. 10. g. wann woe to the weak!  
 226, 2.  
 gwaed m. blood. 150, 10.  
 gwaed-lyd bloody. 184, 9.  
 gwaed an outcry, cry of distress;  
 pl. -eu.  
 gwaeth worse; gwaethaf worst.  
 gwa-hann to separate. past. subj.  
 pass. gwehenid 183, 5. pass. part.  
 gwahanedig.  
 gwa-hawð to invite.  
 gwal a lair. 202, 1; 203, 15.  
 gwala f. a fill, sufficiency. 200, 3.  
 gwalch a hawk; metaph. a leader;  
 pl. gweileh.  
 gwalch-lan a band of heroes?  
 233, 23. MA. 150a, 40; 161 B 20.  
 Gwalchmei n. pr. m. 173, 31.  
 gwal-par strong-spared. 233, 24.

gwalstawd m. an interpreter.  
 MA. 128a, 42. Cf. Rhys, Celt.  
 Heathendom, p. 489.  
 gwallaw to serve liquor. 235, 1.  
 Anc. Laws, I. 32. § viii.  
 gwallt the hair of the head.  
 1. gwan to pierce; pret. ind. act.  
 sg. 3 gwant, § 133 a; past. ind. pass.  
 gwanpwyd, § 134, (f).  
 2. gwan (gwann) feeble, weak.  
 gwanar a chief, lord. 233, 24.  
 MA. 181 a 40; 203 b 19; 220 a 34;  
 221 a 45; b 37.  
 gwanas a clasp, buckle. 239, 18.  
 FB. 250, 21. 18, 19; 23, 16; 59, 14;  
 MA. 144 b 26; 177 a 19; 205 b 4; 269 a  
 29; 299 b 46; 48.  
 gwanhau to weaken. 178, 6.  
 gwanwyn m. spring. 155, 27.  
 gwaradwyð m. disgrace, shame,  
 reproach. 150, 12.  
 gwaradwyðus disgraceful. 180, 29.  
 gwarafun to forbid, refuse. 168, 25.  
 gwarandaw to listen, hear.  
 gwarawd, see gwa-red.  
 gwar-chadw to guard, protect;  
 g. ar to besiege. 146, 18.  
 gwarchae to besiege; m. a siege.  
 gwar-der humanity, pity. 153, 33.  
 gware to play; m. a game, play;  
 pl. gwary-eu. Cf. chware.  
 gware n. pr. m.  
 gwa-red to succour, help, rescue;  
 help, deliverance. pret. ind. act.  
 sg. 3 gwarawd.  
 gwar-eð meekness. 238, 2. RB. II.  
 123.  
 gwarth disgrace, shame. 233, 23.  
 gwarthaf upper part, surface.  
 ar w. on the top of 241, 20.  
 gwartheg kine, cattle.  
 Gwarthegyð n. pr. m. 204, 9.  
 gwary-yð m. a juggler. 147, 13.  
 Hg. II. 10, 15.  
 gwas m. a youth, lad, servant; pl.  
 gweis.  
 Gwasgwin Gascony. 160, 4.  
 gwassanaeth service, attendance.  
 gwassanaethn to serve.  
 gwassanaethwr m. a servant.  
 gwa-sgaru (tr. and intr.) to disperse,  
 scatter. past part. gwasgaredig.  
 gwa-sgawd shelter, protection.  
 148, 28; 156, 2.  
 gwasgu to press, crush.  
 gwasad level, even, constant,  
 temperate; yn w. constantly.

gwastadawl constant. 169, 4. v.l. (sic leg.)

gwawr dawn. 173, 15. metaph. 234, 8.

gwayw (gwaew) m. and f. a lance, spear; pl. gwewyr. 175, 2.

gwōam, gwōost, see gwybod.

gwedi prep., conj. after. §174. 210

gwed f. form, fashion. pa (py) wed how?

gweði f. a prayer. 161, 28.

gweðlaw to pray. 215, 1.

gweðu to befit, to submit. 144, 6. 148, 11. 165, 5.

gweðus fitting, meet, seemly.

Gweðw n. pr. m. 201, 8.

gweðw deserted, desolate, lonely. 225, 9.

gwehenid, see gwahanu.

gweilch, see gwalch.

gwein f. a sheath, scabbard.

gweir-glawd f. a meadow; pl. -gloðyeu.

gweis, see gwas.

1. gweith m. work, task, yg g. at work. 226, 5.

2. gweith f. a turn, time; dyd-g. once; weithon (weithyon) this time, now; pl. -eu sometimes. -eu . . . -eu ereill now . . . again. 187, 18.

gweith-red m. an action, deed; pan del ar weithred cum ad actum accedit 167, 21. RB. II 846.

gweled to see, provide, arrange.

gweledigaeth f. a vision, dream.

gweli f. a wound; pl. -eu, -oed.

gwely m. a bed. 241, 11.

gwell better; 204, 26. cyfarch g. to greet.

gwellâu to improve, amend. 214, 12.

gwellen shears, scissors. 203, 25.

gwellig leg. gwellig? to distribute? 235, 2. FB. 45, 15. MA. 172b15; 181 b 39 v.l., 140 b 12.

gwellt (gwell) grass. 223, 12. Cf. Peredur, ed. K. Meyer, § 80, 16.

gwen a smile. 225, 22.

gwen-gan white and fair. 227, 26.

Gwen-hwyfar (Ir. Find-abair) n. pr. f. 172, 20.

gwenith m. wheat. 196, 3.

gwenn, see gwynn.

Gwenn f. the name of Arthur's shield.

gwen-wlad f. a happy land. 234, 8. = Heaven, MA. 173 b 24; 177 a 42; 189 b 20; 222 b 38.

gwenwyn m. poison. 202, 4.

Gwenwynwyn n. pr. m. 233, 24.

gwer-, see gor-

gwerin-dawd f. virginity. 238, 3. LA. 17, 4; 65, 21.

gwern (coll.) alder-trees. G. Abwy n. l.

gwers f. a while, space of time. 197, 29. 194, 6. pob eil-w. alternately, in succession. gwers . . . g. arall 175, 29.

gwersyll a camp; pl. -eu.

gwerth m. price, reward.

gwerth-fawr valuable. comp.

gwerthfawrogach 169, 1.

gweryd f. a virgin. 161, 5; pl. -on.

gwestei m. a guest. 193, 9.

gwewyr, see gwayw.

gwiðon f. a witch.

gwin m. wine.

gwr (1) true, truly. g.-aberth 150, 17. g. gwell truly better. 226, 3. (2) justice, right. 223, 27.

gwrrawd a beverage, drink; pl. gwirodeu. 164, 2. 235, 1.

gwisg f. dress, clothing; pl. -oed.

gwisgaw to put on, wear; part. gwisgedig dressed, clad.

gwlad f. a kingdom, country; pl. -oed, gwledi; g. pressent the present world. G. yr Haf n. l. 202, 29.

gwledig m. a ruler.

gwledychu to rule, reign.

gwleod f. a feast, banquet. 238, 1.

Gwndy n. l. 223, 10.

gwnel, see gwnenthur.

gwnenthur to make, do, form. § 142.

gwnn, see gwybod.

gwor-saf support, bulwark. 236, 9.

gworsseð, see gorseð.

gwosparth support 233, 23. Cf. gosparth Brython MA. 124 b 38.

gwr m. a man, husband, vassal; y gwr he who 239, 10; (applied to God) 203, 17. pl. gwyr men, soldiers 179, 11.

gwrach f. a hag, witch.

gwraged, see gwreig.

gwrawl manly, brave, stout; pl. gwrolyon. 139, 3.

Gwrbothu n. pr. m. 206, 3.

gwr-da m. a noble. pl. gwyrda; gwyrda saint holy men; MA. 142a.

gwrð strong, vehement. 233, 1.

235, 13; g.-fleid a fierce wolf 233, 3.

gwreig f. a woman, wife; pl. gwraged.

- gwreigawl** *womanish, cowardly*;  
 pl. **gwreigolygon**. 186, 17.  
**Gwr-gi** (Ir. Fer-chú) n. pr. m.  
**Gwr-gwst** (Ir. Fer-gus) n. pr. m.  
**gwrhäu** to pay homage.  
**gwr-hyd** *manliness, valour, bravery, strength*.  
**Gwrhryr** n. pr. m.  
**gwrteith** to dress, mend, temper;  
*a dressing*; 195, 10. Cf. Hg. 38, 37.  
 pl. -**yeu**.  
**gwrth** (**wrth**) voc. (1) prep. *against, towards, for, for the purpose of*; **wrth hynny** *because of that, therefore*; **y-wrth** *from, of; in comparison with*. §§ 53, 194. (2) conj. *because*. § 231.  
**gwrth-dir** *borderland*. 207, 12.  
**gwrth-eb** to answer, reply.  
**gwrth-gasseð** *rebellion, dissension*. 174, 4. Hg. 276, 2. L.A. 15, 26; CM. 110, 28.  
**gwrth-od** to give back, reject, renounce 165, 7. pres. ind. act. sg. 3  
**gwrthyd** 154, 14.  
**gwr-thrwrm** *very heavy*. 149, 28. 172, 26.  
**gwrthryn** *resistance, opposition*. 233, 23.  
**gwrth-wyneb** *opposite, adverse*; **yg g. y mynyð** *facing the mountain*; **talü yn y g.** to pay in return. 142, 23.  
**gwrth-wynebu** (**y**) to oppose, resist.  
**gwrthyd**, see **gwrth-od**.  
**gwrych** (coll.) *bristles*. G. Ereint n. pr. m. 203, 19.  
**gwrys** *strife, hostility*. 197, 31. FB. 63, 25; 85, 12; 159, 5; 193, 6; 199, 20; 200, 9.  
**gwrys**g (coll.) *the smaller branches of a tree*. 225, 11.  
**Gwy** the Wye. Aber G. 206, 17.  
**Gwyar** n. pr. m. 173, 31.  
**gwybod** to know, recognize; *knowledge, courtesy*. § 143.  
**gwybyðiad** m. *an eye-witness*; pl. **gwybyðyeid**.  
**gwychyr** *stout, resolute, bold*; superb. **gwychraf**. 183, 13; 191, 4; 192, 10.  
**Gwydre** n. pr. m. 204, 19.  
 1. **gwyð** m. (coll.) *wood, trees* 241, 13. 21. *mast of a ship* 242, 8.  
 2. **gwyð** *presence*; **yny vyð, hyny vyð** to! behold! thereupon; 193, 1; 198, 13. 199, 27. **yn eu g.** at once 202, 24.  
**gwyðad, gwyðyad**, see **gwybod**.  
**gwyð-bwyll** *some game like chess*; 164, 24; 167, 3. See RB. 153, 5.  
**Gwyðel** *an Irishman*; pl. **Gwyðyl**.  
**gwyl-fa** f. *festival, watch, ward*; pl. -**eu**.  
**gwyliad** m. *a guardian*.  
**gwyllt** *wild*; **acth yg g.** he became mad. RB. 100, 6, 8. **Cyledyr W.**  
**gwyneb** (**wyneb**) *face*. 209, 23. 216, 27.  
**Gwyneð** *Venedotia, North Wales*. 161, 22.  
**gwynn** m., **gwenn** f. *white, blessed*; pl. -**ion**. **gwyn y fyd** *happy he!* 170, 18. **Gwynn** n. pr. m. 200, 25. Avon Wenn 173, 23.  
**gwyn-seid** *having a white haft*. 194, 15. Cf. Laws I. 586, 726. II. 866, cvii.  
**gwynnyeith** *pain, torture*. 231, 32. FB. 185, 5. FB. 303, 3; MA. 193 a 13.  
**gwynt** m. *wind, favourable wind*.  
**gwyr**, see **gwybod**.  
**Gwyr** n. l. Gower. 205, 24.  
**gwyrð** *green, fresh, vigorous*. 236, 25.  
**gwyr-häu** to incline, bend. 241, 13. FB. 241, 8.  
 1. **gwys** f. *a summons, command*.  
 2. **gwys**, see **gwybod**.  
 3. **gwys** a sow. 205, 17.  
**gwyssyaw** to summon. 198, 24.  
**gwystylm** *a hostage*; pl. **gwystlon**.  
**gwystyn** m. *a withered stump*. 197, 4.  
**Gwythyr** n. pr. m. *Victor*.  
**gynn**, see **cyn**.  
**gynt**, see **cynt**.  
**gyr**, see 2. **geir**.  
**gyrru** to send, despatch, drive, hasten 199, 6; **ry-yrnu** (**reherru**) 213, 4.  
**gyt**, see **cyt**.  
 1. **ha**, see 2. **ac**.  
 2. **ha** interj. § 243.  
**hac**, see 2. **ac**.  
**haeðu** to deserve, claim, merit.  
**hael** *generous, liberal*; pl. -**on**.  
**haelder** m. *generosity*. 145, 17.  
**hael-foneð** *one of noble descent*. 234, 21.  
**haf** *summer*. **Gwlad yr H.** 202, 29.  
**haf-ðyð** *a summer's day*. 242, 6.  
**hafod** *a summer dwelling*. 225, 9. Cf. RB. II. 277, 5.  
**Hafrn** f. *the Severn*.  
**hagen** *however, yet, indeed*.



han-bwyllaw *to consider, remember* 190, 27. R.B. 120; 173<sup>16</sup>.

handit, see hanfod.

han-denu *to have leisure, linger.* 190, 27 v. 1.

han-fod *to arise, issue; proceed from, descend.* § 160.

hanner (hanher) m. *a half, middle.* 140, 20. 179, 20. h.dyð *midday*; h. nos *midnight*; h. gwr *a coward* 170, 24. 180, 32.

harð *fair, beautiful, comely.*

hawdit, see haf-dyð.

hawð *easy, pleasant; compar.* haws.

1. hawl f. *a claim.*

2. hawl, see holy.

hawlwyr m. *a claimant.*

haws, see hawð.

hayach *wellnigh, almost.* 167, 6. 192, 15.

hayachen *almost.* 207, 23.

hayarn *iron, sword.* 160, 4.

1. heb, hebyr *says.* § 151.

2. heb (voc.) *prep. without, besides.* §§ 16 (i); 53; 175.

hebrwng *to conduct, escort.*

hebyr, see 1. heb.

heðiw *to-day.*

heðwch *peace.*

heðychu *to make peace, pacify.*

hefyd *also, in addition.*

hegarwch m. *kindliness.* 226, 3.

heibaw *adv. past, by.* 156, 14. 204, 3.

heint m. *a sickness, disease.* 149, 28.

hela *to hunt, chase.*

helw *possession; ar y h. in his possession.* 152, 11; 204, 25.

helym f. *a helmet.* 159, 22.

hen *old; an old man. superl.*

hynaf.

hen-dad m. *an ancestor; pl. -eu.*

heneint (henein) *old age.* 139, 9.

1. heno, see enw.

2. heno *to-night.*

henw, see enw.

herw *a plundering, pillaging.* 235, 15. Cp. Gwynfyd herwyr yw hirnos MA. 361 a<sup>17</sup>.

herwyð *according to, by; yn h. according to; yn h. y nerth with all his might.* h. fal 165, 2.

hestawr, *a corn measure of about two bushels.* 199, 17.

heul f. and m. *the sun.*

heussawr m. *a herdsman.* 195, 3. FB. 174, 1.

hi she, her. Emphatic hihi, conjunct. hitheu. § 45.

hin *weather.* 209, 22.

hir *long, tall; drwy h. o amser for a long time* 141, 5. Compar. hwy.

Hir n. pr. m. 206, 1.

hir-flawð *a long tumult.* 235, 15.

Hir-las n. pr. m. 178, 16. 184, 10.

hitheu, see hi.

hob : dan eu hwb ac eu h. *pushing and kicking them.* 207, 22.

hoedel *lifetime, life.* 152, 18.

hoff-der m. *a boasting.* 174, 34. LA. 143, 22.

holi (holi) *to claim, ask, search, demand; imper. sg. 2 hawl.*

holl, see oli.

hollawl *whole, entire; yn h. completely, altogether.*

holiti *to split, cleave.*

honni *to proclaim.* 159, 25.

honno, see hwnnw.

Howel (Hywel) n. pr. m.

Humyr *the Humber.* 145, 11.

Huandaw n. pr. m. 204, 23.

1. hun *sleep.* 172, 26.

2. hun, pl. huncin *self.* § 60.

hwb, see hob.

hwch m. and f. *a pig.* 203, 11.

hwinn m., honn f., hynn n. *this.*

pl. hynn. §§ 61; 62.

hwnt *yonder; h. ac yman (yma) here and there.* 185, 25.

hwinnw m., honno f., hynny n. *that. pl. hynny.* §§ 61, 62.

1. hwy (wy), hwynt *they, them.* Emphatic (h)wyntwy, conjunct. (h)wynteu. § 45.

2. hwy, see hir.

hwyl f. *a sail; pl. -eu.*

hwylaw *to sail.* 157, 28.

hwynt, see 1. hwy.

hwyred *slowness, tardiness.* 151, 19. hy *bold.* 239, 19.

1. hyd f. *length; prep. as far as, up to, § 177; conj. as long as, as far as, § 214; h. na so that not § 214; until almost 154, 13; h. pan until, so that § 225; h. tra while. § 230. ba h. whither?*

hy-dwf *well-grown, tall.* 158, 18.

hyd *a stag; pl. -od.* 241, 12.

Hy-gwyð n. pr. m. 202, 19.

hynaf, see hen.

hynefð m. *an elder.* 210, 3.

hynn, see hwnn.

hynny, see hwnnw.

hynt f. *a course, path, journey.*  
 ar h. *immediately.* 174, 16. 175, 6.  
 hyny vyð, see 2. gwyð.

1. i (voc.) prep., see 1. y.  
 2. i, see mi.  
 3. i, see yð.  
 iach *sound, whole.* 200, 16.  
 iachau *to heal.*  
 iad *the upper part of the head.*  
 230, 32.  
 iaen *ice, a sheet of ice.* 241, 12.  
 iarll (jarll) m. *an earl*; pl. ieirll.  
 iawn (yaun, jaun) (1) *right, just*;  
 ymlað yn i. *to fight in reality.* superl.  
 -haf, -af 198, 30. 31. (2) *a recompense,*  
*satisfaction.* 166, 15. 18.  
 iawnder m. *right.*  
 iðaw, iði, see 1. y.  
 iðew *a Jew*; pl. -on.  
 iechid *health, salvation.* 158, 21.  
 ieith f. *language*; pl. -oed, -eu.  
 Iessu *Jesus.*  
 ieuanc *young*; superl. ieuaf.  
 ieuencid *early manhood*; *youth.*  
 Ieuan n. pr. m. *John.* 231, 26.  
 in, see yn. ima, ina, see yma, yna.  
 inheu, inneu, see mi.  
 ir-lloned m. and f. *wrath.* 159, 20.  
 is *below, beneath.* §§ 53, 178.  
 Iscawyn n. pr. m. 204, 20.  
 Islont *Iceland.*  
 issod *below.* 199, 5.  
 Iwerðon f. *Ireland.* 155, 28.

llad (Ir. laith) *liquor, drink.* Sic  
 leg. 230, 31? Cf. FB. 201, 22; 23.  
 lladrad *robbery.* 222, 17.  
 llad *to strike, slay, cut, cut off, kill.*  
 impf. ind. pl. 3 lleðynt; impf. pass.  
 lleðid; pret. pass. llas. p. part.  
 llaðedig. § 134(a).  
 Llaesgenym n. pr. m. 204, 25.  
 llaessau *to relax, abate, moderate.*  
 llafur m. *labour, exertion, toil,*  
*effort.*  
 llafuryaw *to labour, endeavour,*  
*attempt.* 140, 13. 159, 15. 166, 21.  
 180, 32. 186, 9.  
 llafuryus (llafurus) *laborious.*  
 191, 27.  
 llafyn *a blade*; pl. llafneu, llafnawr.  
 y llall *the other*; pl. y lleill. § 70.  
 Llamrei *the name of Arthur's*  
*mare.* 201, 20.  
 llann *an enclosure, land.* 223, 5;  
 Ll. daf n. l. *Llandaff.*

llanw (1) *to fill.* 175, 7. (2) *tide.*  
 198, 7. 209, 4. 216, 11.  
 llary *generous, gracious, gentle.* 233,  
 31. MA. 249 b 48; 247 a 48; 241 b 42.  
 llas, see llað.  
 llathru *to glitter, glisten.*  
 llaw f. *a hand*; pl. dwy-law.  
 cymhell y l. *to force to surrender*;  
 152, 23; rag ll. *at hand, imminent.*  
 llawch *protection.* 233, 6. MA.  
 192 b 8; 247 b 6.  
 llawen *glad, gay, merry.* ll. yw  
 genyf gaudeo 170, 13.  
 llawer *many, much.*  
 llawhethan 227, 28 = llywethan<sup>1</sup>  
 MA. 73 a 18 v. l. *one of the constella-*  
*tions.* Cf. Barddas I., 404.  
 llaw-hir *long-handed.*  
 llawn *full.*  
 llawr m. *the ground*; *the earth*;  
 239, 19. 234, 10. 239, 9. yr ll. *to the*  
*ground*; y lawr *down.*  
 lle m. *place*; pl. -oed. *where* 225, 13.  
 yn lle *instead of, for* 180, 2; yn y lle  
*immediately*; yssid le iðaw gwynaw  
*he has reason to lament*; pa le *where?*  
 with subjunctive clause, *where.*  
 225, 13.  
 llechu *to lurk, hide.* 177, 22.  
 lled m. *breadth.* 154, 7.  
 Lledewig, see Llywedig.  
 lled-lwm *half-bare, half-naked.*  
 Gwrgwst Ll. n. pr. m. 200, 28.  
 llefaru *to speak.* 229, 31.  
 llef m. *voice, sound.*  
 llefein *to shout, cry*; m. *a shout-*  
*ing.*  
 lleferyð *to say*; *speech, utterance.*  
 139, 22. 202, 16. 220, 4.  
 lleng *a legion.*  
 Llengrys n. l. *Lengriae.* 179, 6.  
 llei *less, inferior.* 162, 1.  
 lleidyrr m. *a thief*; pl. lladron.  
 1. lleill, see llall.  
 2. lleill: y ll. *one of two.* 194, 17. § 71.  
 lleis *voice.* 153, 4.  
 lleissawn *generous, liberal.* 235, 11.  
 MA. 154 b 11; 159 b 8.  
 lleith *death.* 232, 2. 233, 7.  
 llemenig *striding, bounding.*  
 Cadwr Ll. n. pr. m. 161, 23.  
 llenwi *to fill.* 206, 22.  
 Lles n. pr. m. *Lucius.* 157, 31.  
 llesg *feeble, faint.* 191, 20.  
 llesgeð f. *feebleness, sloth, cowar-*  
*dice.* 166, 30; 167, 5. 9. 180, 23.  
 lletty m. *a lodging*; pl. -eu. 195, 9.

\* A popular etymology for Leviathan.

lletty-wr m. *a host*. 195, 9.  
 Lleu n. pr. m.  
 lleufer f. and m. *light*; pl. -eu.  
 llew m. *a lion*. 186, 30. 235, 11.  
 llewenyð *joy*.  
 llewychu *to shine*. llewychi 232, 7,  
 leg. llewychei ? MA. 243 b 9.  
 lleyg m. *a lay-man*; pl. -yon.  
 lliaws m. *a multitude, host*.  
 llicrið, see llygru.  
 llid m. *anger, indignation*.  
 lliDYaw *to become angry*.  
 llin, see l. llynn.  
 llinad (llin-had) coll. m. *linseed*,  
 sg. llin-hedyn. 199, 18, 20.  
 lliithraw *to slip, glide along, pass  
 by*. ll. at *to flock to*. 145, 23.  
 lliithrei 203, 20 leg. lliathreigh *listened*;  
 cf. RB. 2, 2.  
 1. lliw (llyw) m. *colour, hue*. 164, 13.  
 241, 16. 2. lliw, see l. llyw.  
 llof-ruð (lit. *red-handed*) *a slayer  
 of men*. 233, 10.  
 llong f. *ship*; pl. -eu.  
 lloneid *fill, the full of anything*.  
 llosg arson. 223, 1.  
 llosgi *to burn, set on fire*.  
 llu m. *a host, army*; pl. -oed.  
 lluched *lightning*. 227, 25. pl.  
 llucheid. 185, 27.  
 Lluð n. pr. m. 198, 18. See Rhŷs,  
 Celt. Heath. p. 125.  
 lluded *fatigued*. 207, 9.  
 lludyas *to hinder*. 208, 21.  
 lluest *a camp*; pl. -eu.  
 Llundein London.  
 llunyaethu *to arrange, dispose,  
 array*. 146, 5. 165, 19. 182, 14.  
 llunyeithaw *to arrange, put in  
 order*. 178, 2.  
 lluosog-rwyð *a multitude*. 141, 28.  
 llurug f. *a coat of mail*. 150, 25.  
 llu-yð m. *a hosting, military ex-  
 pedition*. 222, 14; 223, 32.  
 llw m. *an oath*. 221, 4.  
 llwch *a lake*. 229, 5. 241, 8. Ll.  
 Tawy 205, 25.  
 llwdyn m. *the young of animals*;  
 pl. llydyn. 203, 4.  
 llwfyrr m. *a coward*. 242, 9.  
 llwgyr *harm, damage, disad-  
 vantage*. 218, 25.  
 llwm *bare, poor*. 226, 4. 241, 1.  
 242, 8.  
 llwrw (Ir. *lorg track*): yn ll. *as  
 regards?* 198, 17. *loco, vice*, Davies.  
 llwyd *grey*.

Llwyðawg n. pr. m. 205, 6.  
 Llwyðeu n. pr. m. 202, 25.  
 llwyn (lluhyn) m. *a wood, grove,  
 bush*; pl. -eu.  
 llwyr *complete*; yn ll. *wholly, com-  
 pletely*.  
 llwyth m. *a tribe, people*. 227, 27.  
 Llychlyn Norway. 157, 9:  
 Llychlyn-wr m. *a Norseman*.  
 157, 11.  
 Llychwyr n. l. Loughor. 205, 5.  
 llydan *broad, extensive*.  
 Llydaw Armorica, Brittany.  
 Llydewig Armorican, Breton.  
 Glythmyr Ll. 201, 12.  
 llydw *a host, household, com-  
 munity*; 223, 10; 13. See MA. 308 b 28,  
 249 a 14, 343 a 51.  
 llyfyr m. *a book*.  
 llyfyr-der m. *cowardice*. 233, 7.  
 llygad m. *an eye*. taraw l. *in the  
 twinkling of an eye, immediately*.  
 Llygad-ruð n. pr. m. *Red-eye*.  
 206, 2.  
 llygru *to corrupt, mar, spoil,  
 violate*. 167, 4. 189, 3. 195, 13; *to  
 become foul* 241, 3.  
 llyngcu *to swallow*.  
 llynghes f. *a fleet*. 145, 9.  
 llym *keen, sharp*. 241, 1.  
 llyma *to here!* 169, 17 (en). § 244.  
 llyna *to there!* 169, 16 (en). § 244.  
 1. llynn (llin) f. *a lake, pool*; pl.  
 llynneu. Ll. Lliwan 206, 17 = Linn  
 Lluan, Nennius ed. Mommsen,  
 p. 214.  
 2. llynn *a drink*. 193, 15.  
 llynnwyn m. *a pool*. 225, 1. Leg.  
 Wall. 480 b 4.  
 Llyr n. pr. m. 139, 1. 206, 19.  
 llys f. *a court, palace*; pl. llysoed.  
 llyssu *to reject*. 218, 7.  
 llythyr m. *an epistle, letter*; pl. -eu.  
 1. llyw (lliw) m. *a leader*. 235, 11.  
 236, 23.  
 2. llyw, see l. lliw.  
 llywelyn n. pr. m.  
 llywodraeth f. *management*.  
 llywodyr m. *a leader, commander*;  
 pl. llywodron.  
 llywyaw (llywaw) *to rule, direct*.

ma, see mae.

mab m. *a son*; pl. meib, meibon.

Mabon n. pr. m. 195, 24. See  
 Rhŷs, Celt. Heath., p. 21.

mach m. *a surety, guarantor*; pl. meicheu, meychyeu. 210, 20; 21; 217, 14; 221, 25.  
 Madawg n. pr. m. 204, 29.  
 maðen *to forgive; forgiveness*. 231, 4  
 maðeueint *forgiveness, remission*. 150, 20.  
 mae (may) *is*; pl. maent. *what is?* 219, 7. §§ 152. 154 (a).  
 maeðu *to beat, strike, pound*. 159, 24. 183, 23.  
 maen m. *stone*; pl. mein; m. freuan *quern-stone*. m.-dy m. *a stone house*. 198, 15.  
 maer (mair) m. *a steward, reeve*; pl. meirri. 202, 7. 219, 9.  
 maerony f. *stewardship*. 221, 18.  
 maes (mays) m. *an open field, open court, battlefield*; roði cad ar f. *to give battle*; cawssant y m. *they won the day*.  
 maestawd *majesty*; maes m. *field of judgment* 229, 13. MA. 165 a 22; 171 b 51; 195 a 9.  
 magu *to rear, bring up, to produce, engender, conceive*. pres. ind. sg. 3  
 meccið 242, 9. FB. 244, 21. MA. 363 a 21; 33.  
 magwyr f. *a wall*. 198, 12.  
 mal (fal) conj. *as; when*. § 216.  
 malpei (malpei) *as if*. y m. 195, 11.  
 mam f. *mother*.  
 man *fine, small, insignificant*. 184, 18; 196, 10.  
 manach m. *a monk*; pl. meneich.  
 manachlawg f. *a monastery, convent*; 188, 22. m. gwraged 190, 15.  
 pl. -logoed 165, 4.  
 Manawyðan n. pr. m. 206, 19.  
 march m. *a horse*; coll. *horsemen*. 202, 30. pl. meirch, meirych. 143, 15. 162, 20. ar feirych *on horseback* 174, 18.  
 marchawg m. *a knight*; pl. marchogyon.  
 marchogaeth *horsemanship, riding*.  
 1. marw *dead*; pl. meirw.  
 2. marw *to die*. 145, 1. 149, 9.  
 marwawr (pl.) *cinders*. 228, 6.  
 marwolyaeth (marwolaeth) f. *death*. 145, 7.  
 mawl, see moli.  
 mawr *great, big*; compar. mwy; super. mwyhaf, mwyaf.  
 mawr-fuð *great gain or advantage*; 233, 11.  
 Maxen n. pr. m. *Maximus*.

meccið, see magu.  
 með *mead*.  
 með-gell f. *a mead-cellar, cellar*. 164, 2. 204, 27.  
 með-gorn m. *a mead-horn*; pl. -girn 235, 1.  
 með-gwyn *a mead-banquet*. 235, 1. 236, 13.  
 meðu *to possess*. 181, 5.  
 meðwl m. *thought, purpose, mind*.  
 meðyant m. *possession, power, authority*.  
 meðylyaw *to think, consider, meditate*.  
 mefyl f. and m. *disgrace, shame, insult*. 225, 10.  
 meglyd (yn) *to grip, grasp, cling to*. 176, 14; 202, 20. FB. 51, 12; 141, 29; 183, 24; 247, 7.  
 megys conj. *as, like, as it were*. § 217: m. na *as if not*; with subj. so that 145, 23. 180, 3.  
 mehyn *place, country?* 229, 2. FB. 123, 28; 133, 25; 169, 1; 190, 29; 202, 8; 210, 10.  
 Mei May. 208, 5.  
 meicheu, see mach.  
 mein, see maen.  
 meint f. *size, number, quantity, length; such*. pa f. *how much*.  
 Meir Mary (*the Virgin*).  
 meirw, see marw.  
 melyn *yellow*.  
 melys *sweet*. 170, 18.  
 Mellt n. pr. m. 201, 11.  
 menegi *to make known, declare*.  
 meneich, see manach.  
 Menw n. pr. m. 201, 28.  
 merch f. *a daughter*; pl. -ed.  
 Merchyr; dywM. *on Wednesday*. 240, 10.  
 meredig *irrational, foolish*. 193, 5. RB. 115, 18. Laws I., 260.  
 merthyr m. *a martyr*. 161, 4.  
 messur m. *a measure, impression*. 202, 26.  
 messuredig *measured, according to measure*. 199, 19.  
 meu *mine*; § 55.  
 Meugant n. pr. m.  
 Meuruc n. pr. m. *Mauricius*.  
 meycheu, see mach.  
 mi (fi, fy, i) *I, me*. Emphatic mifi, conjunctive minheu, inneu. § 45.  
 1. mil f. *a thousand*; pl. -yoeð.  
 2. mil m. *an animal*; coll. 204, 5.  
 pl. -eid.

mil-wr m. *a warrior*.  
 milwryaeth f. *prohess, warfare*.  
 164, 15; 175, 25; 177, 8; 185, 30.  
 mill-dir f. *a mile*.  
 minheu, minneu, see mi.  
 mis m. *a month*.  
 moch (coll.) *swine*.  
 moð m. *manner*. 191, 30.  
 modrwy f. *a ring*; pl. -eu.  
 moes *custom*. 193, 7. RB. II. 300, 1.  
 molawd *praise*. 237, 4.  
 moli *to praise, commend*. pres.  
 ind. sg. 3 mawl. 233, 11.  
 molyant *praise, fame*. 146, 2. 4  
 (*probitas*); 156, 21; 181, 19; 185, 17.  
 1. mor (voc.) with adjectives, *how*,  
*so, as*.  
 2. mor m. *sea*; pl. -oeð.  
 morðwyd m. *a thigh*. 205, 23.  
 Morgannwg *Glamorgan*.  
 mor-gerwyn f. *a maelstrom, whirl-*  
*pool*. 154, 13.  
 mor-gymlawð *the raging of the sea*.  
 235, 13. MA. 173a<sup>31</sup>; 193b<sup>7</sup>; 254a<sup>44</sup>;  
 266a<sup>29</sup>.  
 mor-grug (lit. *anthill*), *ants*; sg.  
 -yn m. 199, 20.  
 Moruð n. pr. m.  
 morwyn f. *a maiden*; pl. morynyon.  
 mud *dumb, mute*.  
 mul m. *a mule*; pl. -yoeð.  
 muner m. *a lord, king*.  
 mur m. *a wall, rampart*; pl. -oeð.  
 y Mureif *Murray*. 152, 28.  
 murmur *a growling*. 172, 27.  
 mwg m. *smoke*. 199, 23.  
 mwy, mwyhaf, see mawr.  
 mwyalch f. *a blackbird*. 196, 17. 20.  
 mwyhäu *to increase, augment*.  
 mwynhäu (muenhäu) *to use, employ*,  
*enjoy, profit*. 199, 33; 216, 4; 217, 26;  
 218, 1.  
 Myg-ðwnn *smoke-dun, or for*  
*Myng-ðwn dusky-maned, the name*  
*of a horse*. 201, 8. Gwynn m. 206, 15.  
 myhun *I myself*. § 57.  
 myn (in oaths) *by*. 203, 1. 206, 7.  
 mynaches m. *a nun*; pl. mynach-  
 esseu.  
 myned *to go*; m. dros *to break*  
*through, penetrate*; § 140.  
 mynnu (mennu) *to desire, wish*,  
*seek, endeavour*.  
 mynwent f. *a graveyard*, 188, 17.  
 LA. 84, 8.  
 mynwgyl *neck*. 176, 14.  
 mynych *frequent*.

mynyched m. *frequency*. y m.  
 hwnnw *so often*. 191, 1. v. l.  
 mynyð m. *a mountain*; pl. -eð.  
 y fynyð *upward, up*.  
 Mynyw Menevia, *St. David's*.  
 mysg *midst*.  
 y mywn (mewn) *within, in*; o f.  
*inside, within*. § 181.  
 1. na (spir.), before vowels nad *not*.  
 § 236.  
 2. na (voc.), before vowels nag *not*.  
 § 237.  
 3. na (spir.), before vowels nac *nor*.  
 § 238. na . . na *either . . or* 168, 2.  
 naccäu *to refuse*.  
 nachaf *lo, behold!* 187, 21. (voc.)  
 153, 16. 189, 3. 193, 2.  
 1. nad (nat), see 1. na.  
 2. nad *is not* (dependent). § 155 (ε).  
 Nadolig *Christmas*. 154, 23.  
 Naf m. *the Lord*. 235, 16. 236, 28.  
 1. nag *a refusal*. 202, 10. 16.  
 2. nag, see 2. 3. na.  
 nam, see 1. 3. na.  
 namyn, namwyn conj. *except*;  
 after a negative, *but*. § 219.  
 nant *a valley*; pl. nanheu 229, 32.  
 1. nar = na + def. art.  
 2. nar = ra + ry. 184, 1. § 95 N.  
 naw (nas.) *nine*.  
 nawð m. *protection, sanctuary*.  
 nawfed *ninth*. 208, 5.  
 neb any; any one, someone. y  
 neb a who. § 64.  
 nef m. *heaven*; pl. -oeð.  
 neges f. *a business, affair, quest*.  
 nei m. *a nephew*; pl. nyeint.  
 neill one (of two); ar neill-du on  
 one side. § 69; 71.  
 neill-du-edig *apart, aside*.  
 neirthyad m. *a strengthener, stay*.  
 227, 2; FB. 241, 21; MA. 193b, 1.  
 neithawr *a wedding feast*; pl.  
 neithoreu, -yeu 189, 9.  
 ner m. *a lord*. 233, 5.  
 nerth m. and f. *support, help*,  
*strength, power*; pl. -oeð.  
 nerth-fawr *mighty*. 233, 5.  
 1. nes prep. *until*. § 182.  
 2. nes, nessaf, see agos.  
 nessäu *to draw near*. 147, 16.  
 nessed *nearness*. yr n. *however*  
*near*. 154, 20.  
 Nethawg n. pr. m.  
 1. neu (voc.) *or, nor*. § 220.  
 2. neu now. before vowels neud;  
 with ry, neur. § 221.

*newidyaw to exchange (blows).* 186, 8; 191, 24. *tra newitywn an deheunoëd quando dextras conferemus.* 170, 19.

*newyð new.* o n. *anew, again, recently.* 178, 28. 179, 4. 195, 15 v. l. *newyn m. hunger.* 149, 5; 186, 30. *ni (ny) we, us.* Emphatic *nini, conjunct. ninheu, nipneu.* §§ 45 (a). *nifer in. a number, host, retinue;* pl. -oed.

*no (spir.), nog, with def. art. nor, conj. than.* § 222.

*nodi to mark, notify, specify.* 199, 18. *pluperf. pass. sg. 3 ry nodyðoeð.* 205, 10.

*noði to protect, preserve;* pres. subj. sg. 3 *notho (nodho)* 193, 8.

*noe, see no.*

*noeth naked, bare, unprotected, unarmed;* pl. -on.

*noethi to bare, to unsheathe.*

*Normanyeid Normans.*

*nos f. night.*

*nottäu to mark, specify.* 201, 24.

*Nuð n. pr. m.* 200, 25.

*Nwython n. pr. m.*

*1. ny (spir.) before vowels nyd, not.* § 235.

*2. ny, see ni.*

*1. nyd, see 1. ny.*

*2. nyd is not.* § 155 (ð).

*nyeint, see nei.*

*Nyfer the river Nevern.* 204, 12.

*nym, nys, see 1. ny.*

*1. nyth m. a nest;* pl. -od. 154, 3.

*2. nyth, see 1. ny.*

*nyw, see § 49 (c).* 233, 2. 8. 12.

*1. o (a) (voc.) prep. of, from, with, for; with passive verb, by. o gyfreith according to law* 211, 17. § 183. *with def. art. or (ar).*

*2. o (spir.), before vowels od, or, os conj. if; neg. ony, onyd; with the pres. of copula os, neg. onyd.* § 224. *obry below.*

*1. oc prep.=1. o before pronouns beginning with a vowel.* § 183.

*2. oc ?* 230, 16.

*och ah! alas! o. fi ah me!* 142, 21.

*odi to snow.* 241 passim.

*odid scarcely, hardly, rarely.* 226, 6. 232, 11; 13.

*odolygyssant, see adolwyn.*

*oðieithyr outside* 158, 26; 164, 19; *o. hynny besides.* 161, 34. 162, 21.

*oðyma hence.*

*oðyna thence, from that time.*

*oðyno from there.*

*oðy-rwng from between.* 196, 19.

*oðy-uchtaw above it.*

*oe, see 1. o. oeð, oedynt, see bod.*

*oed (oyd) m. age; appointed time, respite, delay.* 208, 20.

*oer cold; dire, cruel, deadly.*

*o.-grynedig fearfully trembling.* 152, 16.

*1. oes f. life, lifetime, age, generation; pl. oessoed.*

*2. oes (oys) there is.* §§ 152, 154 β.

*oestru ?* 230, 33.

*ofn-awg timorous.* 184, 21.

*ofyn m. fear.* 148, 22. 187, 31.

*ofynhäu to fear.* 142, 4. 167, 26.

*offeren mass; pl. -eu.* 162, 29.

*ohan-, ohon-, see §§ 53, 183.*

*oia interjection.* § 243.

*ol track; yn ol after, behind. a oeð*

*yn ol or dyð what remained of the day.*

*olyf-wyð (oliwyð) m. coll. olive-wood.* 165, 21.

*oll, holl, all.* § 67.

*onaðunt of them.* § 53.

*oni, onyt, see ny.*

*or, see 1. 2. o.*

*Orc, Orch the Orkneys.* 156, 12. 162, 11.

*organ f. a musical instrument, organ.* 163, 6. 15.

*orig (dimin. of awr) a short hour.* 230, 13.

*os, see 2. o.*

*osid if there is.* 213, 22, 28. §§ 152, 154

*osp m. a stranger, guest.* 193, 7.

*ottid, see odi.*

*Owein n. pr. m.*

*pa, ba (voc.) what ?* § 80.

*pab m. a pope.* pl. -eu 220, 8.

*Pabo n. pr. m.*

*pader f. the Paternoster.* 215, 4. 5.

*pagan a pagan, heathen; pl. -yeid.*

*paladyr m. a spear-shaft.* 194, 23.

*pallu to fail.* 180, 11.

*pan (pann) (1) whence, § 225.*

*(2) (voc.) when, § 226. (3) that; pan*

*yw 155a (β); hyd pan until, so that.*

*yr pan since.* 170, 5.

*parabyl m. a speech.* 170, 4.

*paradwys f. Paradise.* 238, 4.

*parattöi to prepare.* 148, 7.

*parawd prepared, ready, easy.* 144, 3. 158, 24. 30.

*parchell m. a young pig.* 203, 10.

pared m. *a wall, partition*. 196, 20.  
 parhau to remain, continue. 180, 15.  
 parth m. and f. *part, direction*;  
 149, 2. 201, 5. p. *act towards*. 139, 9.  
 Parth Parthia. 172, 6.  
 parth-gleð *left-hand side*; sic leg.  
 229, 29. MA. 274a 25.  
 pawb *everyone, everybody*.  
 pebyll m. *a tent*; pl. -eu.  
 pebyllaw to pitch a tent or tents,  
*encamp*. 173, 24.  
 pechawd m. *sin*; pl. pechodeu.  
 peceir, see pedwar.  
 pedr-ongyl square. 154, 7. RB. II.  
 12, 31.  
 pedwar m. *pedeir f. four*.  
 pedwyrdd m. *pedwareð f. fourth*.  
 peðyd *infantry*.  
 peðydganta *troop of infantry*. 171, 5.  
 Pedyr Peter. 228, 19.  
 pei *if he were*. 200, 16. conj. *if*. § 227.  
 peidaw (peidyaw) (ac) *to cease*  
*(from)*. 140, 4. 179, 3. 190, 21;  
 p. o 167, 3 v. l.; p. yn 178, 24.  
 RB. II. 253, 10.  
 peir m. *a cauldron*. 202, 7. 14.  
 peiss-awg coated. Hir P. n. pr.  
 m. 206, 1.  
 pell *far, distant*; ym p. *far off*;  
 o b. *from afar*. comp. bellach *further*.  
 193, 16 v. l.  
 pellenhig *a stranger*. 193, 7.  
 penn *a head, top, point, end*; mouth.  
 225, 12. pl. -eu. am b. *against* 146, 26.  
 uch b. *over, above*; ym p. *at the end*.  
 Penn n. pr. m.  
 pennaf (penhaf) *foremost, chief*.  
 Penn-beið *chief of boars*. 201, 16.  
 penn-cawr *chief giant*.  
 Penn-dragon *chief leader*.  
 penn-ffestin *a helmet*. 150, 25;  
 159, 17. RB. II. 55, 19; 155, 7; 162, 14.  
 penn-saer m. *a chief craftsman*.  
 204, 27.  
 penn-swyðwr m. *a chief steward*.  
 160, 13.  
 penn-trullyad m. *a chief butler*.  
 160, 12.  
 penyd *penance*. 150, 20. 238, 8.  
 Peredur n. pr. m.  
 perfeð *middle, centre*. 176, 26.  
 183, 3. 29. 210, 10.  
 perffeith *perfect*. 237, 12.  
 peri *to cause, make, create*. 190, 19.  
 234, 10.  
 perigyl m. and f. *a danger*; pl.  
 perigleu. 151, 30. 153, 30.

perthcled, see parth-gleð.  
 1. perthyn (at) *to belong (to)*. 155,  
 21.  
 2. perthyn *appropriate, pertinent*.  
 234, 18. 235, 8. MA. 191a, 26; 228a, 26.  
 peryf m. *the Creator*. 234, 9. MA.  
 228a 18.  
 petrus m. *a doubt*. 150, 4 v. l.  
 167, 4.  
 petrussaw *to doubt*. 169, 7.  
 petrusder *hesitation, doubt*. 147, 28.  
 150, 4.  
 peth *a thing, something, somewhat*.  
 peth, beth = pa beth *what?* §§ 74. 79.  
 203, 11.  
 peunyð adv. *daily, everyday*.  
 beunyð 239, 10.  
 peunyð-yawl *daily*. 190, 9.  
 phellas: ara phellas 239, 17. "*which*  
*I have set apart*," Skene, FB. I., 289;  
 Pughe s.v. gwanas has: a ryfullias  
 "*which I have prepared*."  
 pieu *whose is?* 193, 5. 6. *to whom*  
*it belongs*, 16, 7. §§ 83, 161.  
 pigo *to peck at*. 197, 23.  
 pimp, see pump.  
 plant (coll.) *children*.  
 pleid f. *a side, party*; o b. *on the*  
*side of*.  
 plith: o blith *from among*; trwy  
 blith *through the midst of*; ym plith  
*among*.  
 plwyw *people*. 227, 12. LA. 106,  
 19; 22. RB. II. 270, 24.  
 pob *each, every*; bob un, bob deu  
*in ones and twos*; pob eilwers *alter-*  
*nately*; § 43. pobmynnig *any place*.  
 223, 8.  
 pobyl f. *people*; pl. pobloesð.  
 poen f. *pain*; pl. -eu. 142, 13.  
 poened *pain, torment*. 230, 21.  
 pony, before vowels and with pres.  
 of cop. ponyd, interrog. part. = Lat.  
 nonne? § 240.  
 1. porth m. *a gate, gateway*; pl.  
 pirth. 193, 11. 194, 3. 234, 12.  
 2. porth f. *help, assistance, sup-*  
*port*. 175, 6. 176, 18. 196, 8.  
 208, 20. 25.  
 3. porth *a port, harbour*. P. Cerdin  
 n. l.  
 porthawr m. *a doorkeeper*.  
 193, 12. 17: 234, 12.  
 porth-fa f. *a port*. 172, 21.  
 post *a post, pillar*. Pabo p.  
 Prydein 162, 3.  
 pren m. *a tree, cross*. 230, 17.

Presseleu n.l. 204, 6.  
 pressennawl *pertaining to this world*. 198, 20. LA. 130, 31; 142, 4.  
 present *present*. gwlad p. *this world*, 230, 5; 232, 10. MA. 272a, 16; 281, 36.  
 priawd *own*. 181, 18.  
 prif-gerð *a panegyric*. 235, 5.  
 prif-glod *loud praise, eulogy*. 235, 6.  
 priodas f. *marriage*. 141, 2.  
 priodawr m. *a proprietor, land-owner*. 212, 24. 27; 213, 8; 220, 28. 31.  
 priodol-der m. *proprietary right*. 212, 28; 213, 1. 20. RB. II. 341, 21.  
 processio (procesiwn) *procession*.  
 profi *to try, test, tempt*. 139, 11. 237, 17. p. part. profedig 146, 1; 164, 15; 206, 13.  
 1. pryd *aspect, beauty*. 140, 22; 155, 25.  
 2. pryd m. *time*; pa bryd *when?*  
 p. pan *when* 229, 25. p. na *since not*. § 228.  
 prydu *to sing, compose poetry*. 235, 5.  
 pryder *care, anxiety*; pl. -eu.  
 pryderus *anxious*. 190, 29.  
 Prydein f. *Britain*.  
 Pryd-wenn f. (*fair-shaped*) *the name of Arthur's ship*. 199, 6; 202, 12.  
 prynu *to buy, redeem*. 238, 14.  
 Pumlumon n. l. *Plimlimon*. 199, 22.  
 pump (nas.) *five*.  
 pur *pure, perfect*. 238, 5.  
 pur-ðu *jet black*. 225, 21.  
 pur-ffawd *pure, perfect happiness*. 237, 13. MA. 315<sup>b</sup>14.  
 pur-wynn m. -wenn f. *pure-white*.  
 pwll m. *a pit, hole*. 200, 6.  
 pwyl *who? which?* 139, 11. 194, 14. *who*; p. bynhac *whoever*. § 81.  
 pwys *a weight, burden*. 238, 6.  
 pwystyr *why?* 193, 14.  
 py (voc.) *what?* § 185; *pyr why?* § 229. *py diw (O.W.) to whom*. 146, 1. § 80 n. 4.  
 pyd m. *a pitfall, snare*. 177, 25. MA. 231<sup>b</sup>4; RB. II. 76, 10.  
 pylu *to make blunt*. 159, 17. RB II. 106, 31; 56, 33; 71, 19; 161, 1.  
 pym, see pump.  
 pymhed *fifth*.  
 pymtheg (nos.) *fifteen*.  
 -pynhag *-soever*. § 81.  
 pyr, see py.

pysg m. *a fish*; pl. -awd. 154, 8. 198, 26. 241, 11.  
 pythrew-nos *a fortnight*. 209, 6. 216, 13. 16.  
 racco (racko) *yonder*. § 63.  
 rad f. *grace, favour, blessing*. 140, 5. 12. 145, 18.  
 raff *a rope*; pl. -eu. 147, 4.  
 rag prep. *before, for, from*. §§ 52, 186. yn r. 195. 28. p yr. *wherefore?* 193, 13 v. l. r. wyneb *following, next*.  
 rag-dywedud *to foretell*. 176, 15. p. part. rag-dywededig *aforesaid*. 173, 3.  
 rag-fedilyaw *to consider, provide*. 167, 18. 20; 169, 4.  
 rag-flaenu *to excel*, 164, 8. RB. II. 293,<sup>29</sup>; 350, 11. r. y ffordd *iter praecedere*. 179, 7.  
 ragod (rachod) *to waylay; an ambush*. 147, 1; 177, 16; 206, 12; 223, 6.  
 rag-weled *to foresee, provide*. 167, 20. 169, 4. part. weledig 169, 2 v. l.  
 rag-ynys f. *an adjacent island*, 202, 28.  
 ranc: r. boð *content, satisfaction*. 195, 12.  
 ranghei, see rengi.  
 rann f. *a division, part, portion, share*. ran 228, 7. pl. -eð. 227, 6.  
 rannu *to divide*. 141, 5. 179, 14.  
 redeg (rydec) *to run, race, pass by*.  
 redyn fern. Redyn-fre n, l. (*Fern-hill*) 196, 29.  
 Reged f., n. l. 152, 29. 155, 16.  
 reges *ebb-tide; adversity*. 228, 11. CZ. V, p. 566.  
 rengi boð *to satisfy, please*. pres. ind. sg. 3 reinc 194, 18; past subj. sg. 3 ranghei 195, 11. RB. II. 329, 18. MA. 321b, 31.  
 rei (rey) *some, few*. y rei *those, such*; pob rei *both sides* § 66; rei . . rei (ereill) *some . . some* § 75.  
 reid (wrth) *need (of), necessity, trouble*.  
 reið (reit) *a shaft, antler*. 197, 1. MA. 148<sup>b</sup>58.  
 Reidwn n. pr. m. 204, 17.  
 reinc, see rengi.  
 Rein n. pr. m. *Regin*.  
 reolawdyr *regular*. 161, 8. RB. II. 171,<sup>16</sup>; CM. 14, 15.  
 restru *to range*. 204, 11.  
 rew *frost, ice*. 241, 20.  
 rewri *to freeze*. pres. ind. act. sg. 3 rewhið 241, 3. 19. § 129.



*rewinyaw to cause to perish, destroy, ruin.* 3 sg. pret. ind. act. *rewinywys* 229, 22. cp. MA. 140a, 33; FB. 146, 6.

*rid*, see *ryd*.

*riein-gadeir f. a queen's throne.* 189, 8.

*rieni pl. ancestors.* 168, 13; 170, 12, 22.

*rif number.* 171, 16.

*ringhyll (ringyll) m. an apparitor, a beadle.* 210, 12, 18; 214, 21.

*rihed ?* 228, 30. FB. 11, 10; 174, 2.

*rihyd splendour, splendid ?* 227, 4.

MA. 195a, 12; 229, 21; FB. 6, 24; 8, 5; 110, 12; 112, 3; 211, 15; 212, 17; 305, 7.

*rin a secret.* 225, 7.

*rith form, guise.*

*rithaw to shape, create, transform.* 196, 27; 197, 7.

*riw a slope.* 242, 4.

*ro prep. between.* § 53.

*rod f. a wheel. gelliwng cledyf ar y r. to brandish a sword in circle.* 202, 21. MA. 286a,<sup>35</sup> L. Glyn Cothi 92, 10.

*rod m. and f. a gift; pl. -yon.*

*rofi*, see *ro*.

*rofi (roy, rohi) to give, put, place, grant, surrender.*

*Ron the name of Arthur's lance.*

*rud red, ruddy.* 228, 15.

*Rud-fyw n. pr. m.* 205, 31.

*Rufein f. Rome.* 181, 4.

*Rufeinawl Roman.*

*Run n. pr. m.*

*ruthur (rythur) f. a rush, onset.* 151, 21, 24. 176, 12, 24. 178, 21, 182, 6, 8.

*Ruthyn n. l.*

*rwng (yrwng) prep. between.* §§ 53, 187.

*rwysd easy, free, prosperous, favourable; 172, 24. ar r. in prosperity; glew-r.* 235, 11.

*rwyl m. a ruler, leader.* 236, 23, 25.

*rwygaw to rend, break.* 198, 27.

*r. (y) mor to plough the sea* 149, 16, 172, 25.

*rwymaw to bind, gird.* 150, 29, 188, 5. p. part. *rwymedig bound, attached.* 162, 25. 158, 6.

*rwysg sway.* 227, 4. 235, 13.

*ry verbal particle.* §§ 95, 96, 97.

*ry- intensive prefix, very, too.*

*ry-fawr* 241, 19. *ry-hir* 162, 8.

*rych a furrow.* 226, 5.

*ryd a ford.* 241, 3. R. Ychen Oxford 161, 34.

*rydec*, see *redeg*.

*ryd free.* 198, 29. 237, 24.

*rydaw*, see *ro*.

*rydhau to free, liberate.*

*ryddif. freedom, franchise, privilege.* 186, 23. 221, 19.

*rydynt*, see *ro*.

*ry-feð a wonder; wonderful.* 162, 23. compar. *-ach*, 154, 5.

*ryfeðu to wonder.* 149, 23. 154, 4.

*ryfel m. war.* 167, 25.

*ry-gosswy, ry-gossys ?* 231, 31.

*Rymhi n. l.*

*rynawd awhile.* 142, 1.

*ryodres magnificence, pomp.* 156, 21. 161, 2.

*ryrys ?* 231, 30.

*Rys n. pr. m.* 205, 31. 235, 17.

*rysswr m. a warrior, champion.* 199, 26; 29; 204, 16; 206, 18. CM. 1, 25; 2, 3.

*rythur*, see *ruthur*.

*ryw m. kind, sort; such; 167, 7. 174, 33. 186, 2. neb ryw any.* 140, 10.

*Sadwrn : duw S. on Saturday.* 223, 21.

*saer m. a craftsman, wright.*

*Saesneg f. the English language.*

*Saeson*, see *Seys*.

*saeth an arrow; pl. -eu.* 176, 23.

*saethu to shoot with arrows.* 164, 24.

*safant*, see *sefyll*.

*safedig (p. part. of sefyll) established, fixed, valid.* 218, 11.

*Salsbri n. l. Salisbury.*

*salwen vain, needless.* 201, 29.

*Samsun n. pr. m. Samson.*

*sant m. a saint; pl. seint.* 202, 32.

*sarff a serpent; pl. seirff.*

*sarhaed f. an insult, affront; pl. -eu.* 166, 1. 223, 21.

*sawdl a heel; pl. sodleu.* 159, 24, 183, 23.

*sawl a many, multitude; y s. those.* § 77.

*sef that is, this is.* § 47.

*sefir*, see *sefyll*.

*sefyll (trans. and intrans.) to stand, to stop, stand fast, fix.* pres. ind. sg.

3 *seif*, pass. *sefir*, pl. 1 *safwn*, pl. 3

*safant (sauahant)*, pret. sg. 3 *safawð*

*segur disengaged, idle.* 241, 18.

*seguryd m. ease.* 167, 7. 180, 13.

*seif*, see *sefyll*.

*seilaw to found, establish; remain?*  
 perf. sg. 3 *ry seilas*. 232, 3.  
*sein a sound*. 183, 8.  
*seint, see sant*.  
*seith seven. s.-lydyn seven young ones*. 203, 4. 15.  
*Seith Pedyr Saint Peter*. 228, 19.  
*Cf. Rhŷs, Lect. p. 371*.  
*sened f. a senate*. 166, 4. 15.  
*senedwr m. a senator*. 172, 11.  
*ser, see syr*.  
*serch love*.  
*Seys m. a Saxon, Englishman; pl. Saeson*. 146, 12.  
*Sibli f. the Sibyl*. 169, 17.  
*sodlau, see sawdl*.  
*son f. a sound, noise*. 183, 22.  
*sorri to be angry, frown*. 141, 19, 142, 32. pres. ind. sg. 3 *syr*. 226, 2.  
*sugraw to suck. imperf. ind. sg. 3 sucknei* 154, 19.  
*Sul-gwyn m. Whitsunday*. 160, 19.  
*swllt m. money, treasure*. 149, 12, 202, 24.  
*swyd an office*. 202, 19.  
*syberw stately, noble*. 143, 15.  
*syberwyd pride, arrogance*. 180, 17.  
*syched m. thirst*. 170, 15.  
*syllu to gaze, look*. 154, 1; 199, 26.  
*symudaw to change*. 143, 14.  
*syr (coll.) stars*. 161, 11. 197, 23, 227, 29.  
*syr, see sorri*.  
*syrthaw to fall*. 159, 10. pret. pl. 3 *syrthassant* 185, 21; 187, 25.

*tad m. a father; pl. -eu; hen-dad an ancestor*.  
*tafaw ? 230, 19 sqq.*  
*tafawd a tongue; pl. tafodeu*.  
*tafawd-leferyd spoken word, verbal evidence*. 139, 22; 220, 4.  
*tangnefed peace*. 201, 2.  
*tangnefedu to make peace, pacify, appease*.  
*tangnefedus peaceful*. 144, 16.  
 1. *tal m. forehead*. 159, 16.  
 2. *tal payment, value. tu a thal an equivalent ?* 221, 12.  
*talawr, pl. of tal ?* 228, 13.  
*Taliessin n. pr. m.*  
*talu to pay, give in return, requite, give, forfeit; reckon*. 209, 12.  
*talym m. a while, period. ar dalym for a time* 146, 2.  
 1. *tan, dan (voc.) prep. under; deni under her*. § 188.  
 2. *tan m. fire*.

*tanawl fiery*. 173, 4.  
*tannu to stretch. t. pebylleu tentoria figers*. 173, 17 v. 1.  
*taplas f. tables, backgammon*. 164, 25; 167, 4.  
*taraw to strike. t. lygad in the twinkling of an eye*. 203, 32.  
*tarðu to flee, run away, start, pres. ind. sg. 3 terðid; pres subj. sg. 3 tardho* 228, 13; 14. FB. 93, 18; 94, 27; 104, 29; 125, 6; 151, 5; 163, 16; 198, 21.  
*tarren f. a plot of uncultivated land*. 196, 3.  
 1. *taryan f. a shield; pl. -eu*.  
 2. *taryanthunder*. 227, 25; 229, 7. FB. 171 22; MA. 287 b 11.  
*taryanawg m. a shield-bearer; pl. -ogion*. 234, 15. 236, 7.  
*taryf, leg. toryf ?* 233, 17. 236, 7.  
*tawl, see toll*.  
*tebig similar, like*. 239, 11.  
*tebygu to deem, think, suppose*.  
*teccâu to adorn, decorate*.  
*tecced beauty*. 140, 26.  
*teg fair, pleasant*.  
*tegwch m. beauty*. 140, 22. 155, 25.  
*Teilaw n. pr. m.*  
*teilwng (y) worthy of, meet, fit for, deserving, acceptable*. 150, 17.  
*teilyng-dawd f. dignity*. 155, 22. 164, 7.  
*teir-gweith three times*.  
*Teir-gwaeð "Three-shouter" n. pr. m.* 201, 28.  
*teir-nossig three nights old*.  
*teithyawg moving, in motion*. 229, 8. *mal ton teithliawc llwyfenyd* FB. 192, 26.  
*Teithyon n. pr. m.* 204, 29.  
*telediw handsome, fair*. 140, 29.  
*telediwed fairness*. 140, 27 v. 1.  
*telyn a harp*. 147, 12.  
*telynawr a harper*. 147, 15.  
*temyl (temhyl) f. a temple; pl. temleu*. 144, 10. 12; 152, 27.  
*Temys the Thames*. 189, 27.  
*terfyn m. an end, limit, boundary, term; pl. -eu, -heu*. 166, 16. 20.  
*terfynu to end, finish*. 168, 27. 183, 24; p. part. *terfynedig appointed*. 171, 28.  
*terfysg m. trouble, conflict, uproar*. 141, 18; 167, 29; 225, 12; 233, 20.  
*terfysgu to disturb*. 141, 12.  
*tes heat, hot weather, sunshine*. 241, 16.

1. *teu thine*. § 55.  
 2. *teu silent?* 231, 2.  
*teu-lu* a household, retainers, community; pl. -oed.  
*tew thick, dense*. 151, 22; 241, 21.  
*tewhäu* to thicken, to close up the ranks. 151, 26; 176, 24; 187, 24.  
*teyrn* (teörn, teörn) a king, ruler; pl. *teernes*; *t.-fab* m. a king's son; *t.-walch* m. a royal hawk, hero; *t.-wialen* f. a sceptre.  
*teyrnas* m. and f. a kingdom; 144, 9. 162, 31. pl. -ssoed.  
*teyrn-ged* f. tribute. 166, 6.  
*ti* (di) thou, thee; emphat. *tydi*, conjunct. *tithen*. § 45 (a)  
*tino* a valley, vale. 240, 1. FB. 157, 7; 210, 8.  
*tir* m. land; pl. -ed.  
*tir-dirollawdr* a husbandman; pl. -odron. 149, 20.  
*tired*, see *tir* and *twr*.  
*tithen*, see *ti*.  
*tlws* m. a jewel; pl. *tlwsseu*.  
*toði* to melt. 228, 26.  
*töi* to cover; pres. ind. sg. 3 *töið*, *töið* 241, 5; 242, 1. FB. 157, 4.  
*toli* to curtail, diminish; pres. ind. sg. 3 *tawli* 233, 12.  
*ton* f. a wave. 229, 6. 241, 5.  
*tor* belly; ar eu t. against them. 181, 14. RB. II. 48, 12; 97, 30; 157, 23.  
*torri* to break, violate. 183, 12. 223, 4.  
*toryf* multitude, host; pl. *torfoed*. 151, 26. 233, 20. 234, 16. 23.  
*tost* hard, severe.  
*Totneis* n. l. Totness.  
 1. *tra* (spir.) prep. beyond, across, over. § 189.  
 2. *tra* (voc.) conj. while. § 230.  
*tra-chefyn* backwards, back, behind, again. § 189 N. See *cefyn*.  
*Trach-myr* n. pr. m. 204, 8.  
*traeth* m. a shore, coast; pl. -eu.  
*traethu* to utter, declare. 168, 29. 170, 7.  
*trafferth* trouble. 207, 27. 28.  
*tragywyð* eternal. 232, 13.  
*tragywyðawl* eternal. 150, 11.  
*trallawd* f. persecution, trial. 237, 18. LA. 19, 27; 21, 27; 28, 25.  
*tra-mor* over-sea. 156, 28.  
*trannoeth* (lit. over night) next day.  
*traws* transverse. ar t. across. 149, 3 v. l.  
*traws-brenneu* pl. lateral branches of a tree. 149, 3. Cf. *trauskeyg*, Anc. Laws I. 290, 3.  
*trayan* (traean) m. a third. 139, 17; 157, 5; 201, 31.  
*trebelid* swift, dexterous. 201, 22. RB. II. 56, 27. MA. 279a<sup>35</sup>  
*trechaf* (superl. of *tren*) strongest. 187, 19. § 37 (b).  
*tref* f. a dwelling-place, home.  
*tref-tadawg* m. an inheritor. 218, 18.  
*tref-tadawl* inherited. 146, 8.  
*trei ebb*. 209, 4; 216, 11.  
*treiaw* to ebb. 154, 14.  
*treiglaw* to travel; pres. ind. sg. 3 *treigyl*. 197, 18.  
*treigyl* m. a course, journey. 197, 26.  
*treis* f. violence, rapine, rape. 200, 28. 222, 17.  
*tremygu* to despise. 140, 8. 166, 9.  
*treth* f. a tribute. 188, 9.  
*trethawl* tributary. 168, 2. 186, 23.  
*treulaw* to spend, consume, wear.  
*tri* (spir.) m. *teir* f. three.  
*tri-dieu* three days. 149, 8. 164, 29. 209, 1.  
*triganed* a trumpet blast? 228, 29.  
*A thriganed* kyrn a gwerin trygar FB. 2117; Cf. 6 s; MA. 124b<sup>46</sup>.  
*triglaw* to dwell, remain. 162, 22. 240, 10. 13.  
*trindawd* f. the Trinity.  
*trist* sad. 179, 2.  
*tristän* to become sad, grieve. 142, 2.  
*tristaw* to become sad, grieve. 141, 21.  
*tristyd* m. grief. 147, 6.  
*Tro* Troy. 163, 24.  
*troed* m. a foot; pl. *traed*. ar *traed* on foot. 174, 18.  
*troed-noeth* bare-foot; pl. -on. 153, 27.  
*troed-feð* m. a foot (measure). 154, 6.  
*tröi* to turn (tr. and intr.).  
*tros, dros* (voc.) prep. across, over; *myned dros* to break through; *eneid dros* *eneid* a life for life struggle. §§ 53; 190.  
*trossi* to turn, move (tr. and intr.) 149, 18. 151, 4. 199, 24.  
*tru* sad, wretched. 230, 20.  
*truan* miserable, wretched; a wretch.  
*trueni* m. wretchedness, misery.  
*tru-gar* merciful. 225, 19.  
*trugareð* f. mercy. 227, 7.  
*trugarhäu* (wrth) to commiserate.  
*trugeint* (trugein) (nas.) siaty.  
*trwch* cut, broken. 241, 9.  
*trwm* m., *trwm* f. heavy, sad.  
*trws* 227, 21 = *trwst* noise? Cf. *yna byð mawdrwst* MA. 73a.

- trwssyad (trwssad) *m. one who arranges, or disposes.* 234, 7; 235, 28. Cf. trwssyaw, trwssa, Hg. I., 214, 87.
- trwy (drwy) (voc.) *prep. through.* § 191. drwy y hun *in his sleep* 172, 27.
- trwyded *to visit, pass, sojourn.* 237, 18. FB. 59<sup>12</sup>. MA. 844a, 21.
- try-chan (nas.) *three hundred.*
- trychu *to cut down.* 149, 1.
- trydyð *m. tredeð f. third, one of three; ar y d. with two others.* 142, 9. § 165.
- try-fer *a trident.* 197, 33. MA. 317b<sup>13</sup>.
- trym-der *m. gravity, seriousness.* 166, 14.
- try-wyr *three men.* 174, 7. 193, 3.
- tu *m. side, region, part; or tu yn eu hol from behind them; tu ac towards; pa du where?* 198, 32.
- tud *people, country.* 231, 9.
- twng, *see tyngu.*
- twll *perforated, pierced.* 205, 23.
- twr *m. a tower; pl. tyreu.* 156, 32; 166, 25. 27. tireð 181, 6.
- twrch *m. a boar.*
- twrwf *m. a host, multitude.* 234, 15.
- twyll *m. and f. deception, treachery.* 178, 9.
- twyllwr *m. a traitor.*
- twynpath *m. a mound.* 199, 14.
1. ty, *see ti.*
2. ty *m. a house; pl. tei.*
- tybygu, *see tebygu.*
- tybyaw *to suspect.* 177, 27.
- tyfu *to grow.*
- tynghedfen *f. fate, fortune; pl. -nneu.* 142, 10.
- tyngu *to swear, take an oath.* *pres. ind. act. sg. 3.* twng 220, 27. 233, 4.
- tyllu *to pierce, make a breach.* 183, 15.
- tyllweð (tellweð) *f. stillness.* 211, 2.
- tynnu *to pull, drag, draw, retreat;* 147, 18. 162, 25. 223, 9. t. pebylleu *to pitch tents.* 173, 17.
- tyreu, *see twr.*
- tyrnged, *see teyrn-ged.*
- tyst *a witness; pl. -on, -ion.*
- tywyð *a tempest, storm.* 228, 25.
- tywyll *darkness.* 229, 33.
- tywyssawg *m. a leader, prince, chief; pl. -ogion.*
- tywyssogaeth *leadership, domination.*
- uch (voc.) *prep. above; uch ben above, over.* § 193.
- uched height. 197, 24.
- uchel *high, tall, loud.* 150, 32; 186, 16; 234, 3.
- ucher *evening.* 196, 23. 197, 24.
- uchod *adv. above.* 187, 22; 198, 8.
- uð (uut, wut) *m. a lord, king, the Lord.* 235, 16; 236, 28.
- uðunt *to them, see l. y.*
- ufuð-häu *to obey.* 150, 23. 189, 22.
- uful-dawd *humility, lowliness.* 237, 22.
- uffern *hell.*
- ugeint (ugein) *m. twenty.* deg ar hu. *thirty.*
- Ugnach *n. pr. m.*
- Ul-Cessar *Julius Caesar.*
- un *one; same.* 163, 29. 221, 13. any. 164, 14. § 164 (4).
- un-ben *m. a chieftain.*
- un-fam *having the same mother.* 202, 18.
- un-ryw *of the same kind, similar.*
- un-tu: ar u. *at a stretch.* 156, 17. R.B. II. 308, 33.
- urðas *m. a rank, order, dignity; pl. urðasseu, urðasseoð.*
- urðasseið *dignified.* 161, 6.
- urðaw *to ordain.*
- urðawl *ordained.*
- Uryen *n. pr. m. Urbigenus.*
- Uthur *n. pr. m.*
- weithon, weithyon, *see gweith.*
- wrth, *see gwrth.*
- wut, *see uð.*
- wy (hwyl) *they, them; emphat. wyntwy, conjunct. wynteu.*
- wybyr *sky, heaven.* 159, 25. *See l. can.*
- wyf, *see bod.*
- wyneb *face; rac w. following, next.* 151, 9. 153, 6. 155, 27. w. yn w. *face to face.* 216, 27.
- wyth *eight.*
- whe, *see chwech.*
- whedleu, *see chwedyl.*
- whioryð, *see chwaer.*
1. y (voc.) *prep. (1) to, (2) from, of.* § 195.
2. y *def. art., see l. yr.*
3. y *verb. particle, see yð.*
4. y (voc.) *his, (spir.) her, their.* § 57.
- y-am (voc.) *(1) from off; (2) including.* § 164.
- y-ar *(1) from; (2) upon.* § 165.
1. ych *m. an ox; pl. -en.*
2. ych *your.* §§ 57, 58.

- ychydig *some, a little, a few.*  
y-dan (voc.) prep. *under.* § 188.  
ydys, ydyw, see bod.  
yð verb. particle, before consonants  
y. § 91.  
yfed *to drink.* 202, 14.  
yfelly, see felly.  
y-gan (voc.) prep. *from.* § 167.  
yng *a strait, difficulty, distress.*  
150, 29.  
ynghyd (ac) *together (with).*  
yll (ill, ell) before numerals, *all.*  
§ 67.  
1. ym, see yn.  
2. ym, see bod.  
yma *here, hither.*  
ym-adaw (ac) *to part with, leave,*  
*desert; past subj. pl. 3 ymedewynt.*  
ym-adrawð m. *to speak; speech,*  
*discourse; pl. ymadroðyon.* 142, 10.  
ym-aðassu (ac) *to adapt oneself.*  
y ar ðayar *to measure one's length on*  
*the ground.* 174, 26.  
ym-afael (yn) *to take hold of,*  
*grasp.* 202, 17. 206, 21. 207, 17. 19.  
yman *here, hwnt ac y. nunc hac*  
*nunc illac* 185, 25.  
ym-ar-ðisgwyl *to watch.* 199, 27.  
ym-ar-ðyrchafel *to exalt oneself.*  
157, 4.  
ym-baratði *to prepare oneself.*  
171, 19.  
ym-ben-tyr(r)-yaw *to rush together.*  
176, 17; 186, 10; Hg. II. 163, 1.  
ym-choelud (-chaelud) *to return,*  
*turn.* 189, 11. 206, 12. 229, 27. 29.  
y. ar *to turn upon, set upon.* 174, 29.  
207, 20. y. y arfeu yn y Gwyðyl *to*  
*attack the Irishmen.* pret. ind. sg. 3  
ymhoeles. 160, 17.  
ym-da, see ym-deith.  
ymdan (voc.) prep. *about.* § 164.  
ym-daraw (ac) *to contend (with).*  
201, 29.  
ym-deith *to go about, to go, go away.*  
141, 14. pres. ind. sg. 3 ym-da 199, 4.  
ym-dynnu (o) *to retreat (from).*  
174, 17.  
ym-ðianc *to escape.* 154, 18. 197, 30.  
ym-ðidan *to converse.* 147, 9.  
203, 18.  
ym-ðifad (o) *bereft (of); pl. -ðifeid.*  
176, 28.  
ym-ðifedi *destitution.* 145, 14.  
ym-ðiffyn, see am-ðiffyn.  
ym-ðired *to trust.* y. y 225, 4.  
y. yn 151, 7. 158, 20.  
ym-ðwyn *to carry about.* 202, 20.  
ym-ðywedyd *to discuss, argue.*  
211, 16.  
ymeith (o) *out (of), away (from).*  
174, 8.  
ym-eneinaw *to anoint oneself.*  
207, 9.  
ym-erbynyeid *to encounter, combat.*  
186, 6.  
ym-ffust m. *a conflict, struggle.*  
187, 20; RB. II. 84, 24; 90, 31;  
162, 10.  
ym-gaffel (ac) *to get hold of,*  
*engage in battle.* 185, 19. 186, 2.  
ym-garu *to caress one another.*  
147, 19. 148, 12.  
ym-geffelybu (ac) *to imitate.* 156, 25.  
Hg. II. 89, 14; 102, 2; LA. 44, 8;  
RB. II. 80, 12.  
ym-geis (ac) *to seek.* 202, 31.  
ym-gelu (rag) *to hide (from).*  
146, 27.  
ym-golli (ac) *to lose sight (of).*  
205, 1.  
ym-gribyaw (ac) *to wrangle (with).*  
207, 25.  
ym-gyf-ar-fod *to encounter.* 146, 14.  
169, 15. 170, 14. 174, 6.  
ym-gyffelybu (ac) *to compare one-*  
*self, vie (with).* 156, 25.  
ym-gynghor (ac) *to consult.* 148, 1.  
ym-gym-mysgu *to engage each*  
*other.* 183, 20. Hg. I. 55, 26; 282, 19.  
RB. II. 28, 12.  
ym-gynhal *to resist.* 151, 17. 192, 8.  
ym-gynull *to gather together.*  
148, 25.  
ym-gynullaw *to flock together.*  
145, 1. 152, 20. 173, 20. 192, 7.  
ym-gyrchu *to attack.* 173, 2.  
ym-gyweiraw (o) *to equip oneself*  
*(with).* 172, 16.  
ymhoeles, see ym-choelud.  
ym-lað m. *to fight; a fight; pl. -eu.*  
ym-lid *to pursue.* 148, 24. 188, 2.  
fut. sg. 1 ymlidyaf 206, 9.  
ym-lynu *to follow, pursue.* 152,  
7. 22. 191, 1.  
ym-o-glyd (rag) *to guard against.*  
176, 3; RB. II. 46, 34; Hg. I. 28, 5.  
ym-orðiwes (ac) *to overtake, come*  
*up with, touch.* 174, 20. 28. 202, 4.  
204, 3. 28. 207, 3.  
ym-rithaw *to transform oneself.*  
201, 33.  
ym-roði *to give oneself up, surrender,*  
*devote oneself.* 145, 22. 149, 5.  
150, 12. 156, 6. pres. ind. sg. 3  
ymryð 150, 17.

**ym-ryðhau** (o) *to free oneself (from)*. 147, 22.

**ym-tynnu**, see **ym-dynnu**.

**ym-wasgu** (ac) *to rejoin*. 174, 34; L.A. 100, 6; Hg II. 272, 29.

**ym-weled** *to see one another*; **y. ac** *to visit*. 147, 20. 203, 32. 205, 12.

**ym-wneuthur** *to effect mutually*. 164, 16 v. 1.

**ym-yrru** (gyt ac) *to concern oneself (with)*, *help*. 200, 20. RB. II. 19, 8; CM. 77, 17.

**ym-ysgydyaw** *to shake oneself*. 202, 4.

1. **yn** (nas.) prep. *in, into, upon*. 173, 5. § 196.

2. **yn** (voc.) forming adverbs and with predicative noun and adjective. § 16 (d).

3. **yn** (an) *our*. § 57.

**yna** *then, there, thither*.

**ynad** (O.W. *egnāt*) *m. a judge*. 209, 24; pl. **yneid**. 210, 5.

**ynfyd** *foolish*. 231, 33.

**ynni** *vigour*. 174, 19. 27. 186, 1.

**yno** *there, thither*.

**ynt**, see **bod**. **ynteu**, see **ef**.

**yny** (hynny) conj. *until*. § 234.

For **yny vyð** see 2. **gwyð**.

**ynyal** *desert, wild*. 228, 7.

**ynys** *f. an island*; pl. **ynysseð**. **Ynys Daned Thanet**.

**Ypolit** *Hippolytus*.

1. **yr**, before consonants **y** (voc. before fem.) def. art. *the*.

2. **yr** prep. *for the sake of; for; since*. §§ 53; 197. **yr na** *since not, though not*. § 234. **yr hynny** *nevertheless*; **yr pan** *since*; **pyr** (**py yr**) *why?* 193, 13.

**yrof**, see **ro**.

**y-ryngtunt**, see **rwng**.

1. **ys** *is*. §§ 152; 155; 159 N2.

2. **ys**: **ys** pump *mlyneð* *since five years*. **ys gwers** *for some time*. 194, 6.

**yr ys pell** *o amser long ago*. 197, 22.

**ysgar** (ac) *to leave, part with*. 205, 25.

**Ysgawd** *n. pr. m.* 204, 20.

**ysgawn** *light, slight, easy*. 180, 31. 202, 11.

**ysgithyr** *a fang, tusk*. 201, 23. **Y.-wynn** *white-tusked*. 201, 16.

**ysglyfyaw** *to snatch*. 202, 2; RB. II. 151, 8; Hg. I. 296, 22.

**ysgol** *a school*. 161, 10.

**ysgolheig** *m. a scholar, clerk, priest*; pl. **-on**. 147, 29. 153, 25. 160, 9.

**ysgrifenu** *to write*. 164, 6.

**ysgrybul** (coll.) *cattle*. 199, 4.

**ysgwyd** *a shield*. 241, 18. 22.

**ysgwyð** *f. a shoulder*. 174, 31. 198, 10. 241, 18. 22.

**ysgymun** (**ysgymyn**) *accursed*. 191, 16.

**ysgymun-dawd** *villany*. 149, 24.

**ysgymunedig** *accursed*; pl. **-yon**.

**ysgythredig** *chased, engraved*. 150, 26. CM. 34, 32; 104, 19.

**yslpanu** *to burnish, polish*. 194, 5. 12.

**yslpanwr** *m. a burnisher*. 193, 18.

**yspardun** *f. a spur*; pl. **-eu**.

**yspeid** *f. a while, a space of time, respite*.

**Yspaðaden** (*Hawthorn*) *n. pr. m.* 199, 18. Cf. Rhys, *Celt. H.*, p. 373.

**Yspæen** *Spain*. **yr Y**. 182, 23.

**yspeil** *spoil*; pl. **-eu** 177, 3.

**yspeilaw** *to despoil*. 176, 31. 188, 3.

**yssid** *there is*. 198, 15. 233, 5. pl.

**yssydynt**. 194, 2. § 154 (a); *ib. n. 1*.

**yssigaw** *to shatter*. 147, 4.

**yssu** *to eat, consume*. 200, 3. 31.

**yssyð** (**yssy**) *who, which is*. §§ 152.

154 (β); 155 (κ).

**ystandard** *a battle standard*. 183, 20.

**ystorya** *history, story*. 164, 7.

**ystrad** *a vale, valley*. 205, 32. 242, 1.

**ystryw** *device, stratagem*. 147, 22.

**ystwng** *to lower, overcome*. 233, 2.

**ystynu** *to extend, prolong*. 183, 7.

**ystyr** *story; meaning, import, reason*. 203, 11. **pwystyr** (**py y**) *why?* 193, 14.

**yswein** *m. esquire*. 143, 10.

**ysym** *there is to me, I have*. 233, 1. § 155 B, note 1.

1. **yw**, see **bod**.

2. **yw** *yew trees*. **Ystrad Yw** 205, 32.

3. **yw**, see 1. **y**.

1. **ywch**, see **bod**.

2. **ywch**, see 1. **y**.

## APPENDIX

---

### Additional Variants to "Lear and his Daughters" from MSS. at Peniarth.

P<sup>1</sup>, P<sup>2</sup>, P<sup>3</sup>, P<sup>4</sup> = MSS. No. 22, 44, 45, 46.

---

Ch. 1.—l. 2, thrugein mlyned : dev vgeŷn P<sup>2</sup>—l. 3, ef a adeilvs P<sup>2</sup>—a thri ugein mlyned y gŵledichŷs (gŵledychŷs P<sup>3</sup>) ef yn ŵraŵl ac yd adeilŷs (adeilŷs P<sup>3</sup>) dinas P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 4, leŷrcester P<sup>2</sup>.

Ch. 2.—l. 2, yd adaŵhei P<sup>4</sup>.

Ch. 3.—l. 4, leueryd *om.* P<sup>2</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 5, adaŵ y rodi hitheu yr gŵr P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 4.—l. 3, y rygaru : yr caru P<sup>3</sup>—l. 11, nas rodi hi P<sup>3</sup>—l. 12, damweinhei P<sup>4</sup>.

Ch. 5.—l. 2, yr Alban : e gogled P<sup>2</sup>—l. 8, y rodei . . . genti : ŷ rodeŷ heb tŷr na daŷar na ssvllt P<sup>2</sup>—l. 15, kadarnhawyt : gŵnaethpŷyt P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 6.—l. 12, ellvng er reŷ ereŷll ŷ emdeŷth P<sup>2</sup>.

Ch. 8.—l. 5, gellygassei y ŵrthaŵ P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 9.—l. 1, ydoed P<sup>3</sup>—l. 3, Or\* tŷghetven lŷtŷavc ep ef pa brŷd edav dŷd e gallwŷf ŷ talu vdvnt wŷ hŷn P<sup>2</sup>. O chwichwi yr tyghetueneu P<sup>3</sup>. Oiar teghetueneu py le, &c. P<sup>4</sup>—l. 4, pa achos y kyffroassoch uiui yar &c. P<sup>3</sup>—l. 7, gytdiodef P<sup>3</sup>—l. 14, traet P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—ib. Owi P<sup>3</sup>—l. 16, talu yny gŵrthŵneb yr gŷyr hyny P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 21, vy rodyon : vyn da P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 25, yn gam P<sup>3</sup>.

\* Strachan says : "I can't read the second letter except as r."

Ch. 10.—l. 1, aghyfnertth : trueni P<sup>3</sup>—l. 2, ef a doeth, &c. : dýnessav parth ar dýnas edoed ý ver (*sic*) endav P<sup>2</sup>—ib., ym Paris : ýg cariz P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 4, ar gyuaroed P<sup>3</sup>—l. 5, namýn vn marchavc ac essweýn P<sup>2</sup>; namyn ef ae yswein P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 7, mynet ae that, &c. : dwýn ý that hýt en dýnas arall ac eno dywedwýt ý vot en glaf P<sup>2</sup>—l. 16, wedy yr dehol P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 11.—l. 11, a ónaeth : re gwnathoed P<sup>2</sup>—a wnathoed P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 12, anryded Bifrontisiani : anrýded ýr devforvavl ianus P<sup>2</sup>—l. 13, delhei P<sup>4</sup>—ib. ac ena ed emkýnvlleý holl seýrý a chreffdwýr e dýnas P<sup>2</sup>—gredyfwyr (*sic*) P<sup>3</sup>—crefuydóyr P<sup>4</sup>.



# Index



## INDEX

The references are to paragraphs. n.=note.

- ā*, causing vowel-change 7 (a).  
*a*, rel. part. 82-83; with infixed pron. 49 (b), 50 (a); usage 83 (a); expressing subj. or obj. 86; gov. by prep. 87 (a); without antecedent 87 (b).  
*a*, infixing part. 50 (c); 94; 159 n. 2; superseded by *yd* 85 n.  
*u*, interrog. part. 239; lenat. after 18 (g).  
*a*, *ac*, conj. 198; mutat. after, 21 (d).  
*a*, *ac*, prep. 162; after adj. 34 (b); mutat. after, 21 (c).  
*α*, prep.=o 183.  
*a*, *ha*, interj. 243.  
 absolute ending *-sit* 132 n.  
 accent, 4; 11 n. 1; shifting of 8; vowel variation due to 8; secondary acc. 11 n. 1.  
 accusative 26; traces of 25; in poetry 26; of relative 51.  
*ach*, prep. 163  
*achaws*, conj. 199.  
 adjective, 30-39; lenat. of 16; lenat. after positive 16 (c) (a); after compar. 16 n. 4; endings of 27 (c); gender in 30; stems in *-i*, *-o*, *-u*, 30 note; plur. forms 31; attributive 32; predicative 32; number in 33; inflected adj. 34 (a); order in sentence 34 (a); foll. by prep. *o*, *u* 34 (b); concord 35; predicative adj. with *yn* 35; adj. phrases 36; comparison 37; construction of compar. and superl. 38; equative 39; with *mor* 39 n. 2; adv. use 40; poss. adj. 57; poss. adj. with prep. 58 (a), with conj. 58 (a), with *y* 58 (b), anticipating genit. 59 n.  
*abnabot*, paradigm of 144.  
 adverb 40; lenat. 16 (h); adv. phrases 16 (h); with demons. force 63.  
*-adwy*, verbal in 117.  
*ae*, interrog. of copula 155 (a)(η)  
*ae*, interrog. part. 239 (c).  
 agent, expression of with verb noun, 122  
*am*, prep. 164; lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; *yam* 164.  
*am* (*na*), conj. 200.  
*amal*, conj. 216.  
 analogy, in verb. conjugation 7 n. 1; in mutat. 12; 16 n. 7; 39 n. 1; in plural formations 27 (d); in pronouns 45 n. 2; in formation of subjunctive 110 n. 1.  
 answers, 241.  
 apodosis, imperfect in 107 (d)(β)(γ).  
 apposition, lenation in 16 n. 4; 17 (b).  
*ar*, prep. 166; lenat. after 16(i); with pron. end. 53; or *a*, *ar ny*, 87 (a); *yar*, 165.  
*arall*, use of 68.  
*arganvot*, paradigm of 160.  
 article, 23; lenat. after 16; fused with conj. or prep. 23; syntax of 24.  
*as*, *as* (*ys*) *oed* 159 n. 2.  
*-at*, ending of imperf. ind. 3 sg. 131 (b).  
*att*, prep. 166; lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53.  
 attributive adj. 32; 33.  
*awr*, *yr awr* conj. 201.  
*-awr*, *-iawr*, plur. suff. 28 B. (a).  
*-awt*, plur. suff. 28 B. (b).  
*behet*, prep. 177 n.  
*bot*, lenation after, 16(g)(β); paradigm of 152; usages of 153; *bydwn*, etc. 107 n. 3; special fut. form 152 n. 2; *bit*, consuetudinal 152 n. 3; *bydaf*, use of 156 (a); *bydwn*, use of 157; *bewn*, 158; past subj. 158; compounds of 160; *boet*, after *kyt* 205 n.

*caffael*, *cael*, paradigm of 145.

*can*, *gan*, prep., lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun 126 (c); use of 167; *y gan* 167.

*can*, conj. 202; not foll. by *yd* 93 (l).

*cantot*, paradigm of 160.

*cany*s, copula 155 (a)(a); 202 n.

*cany*s, conj. 202 n.

cardinals, see numerals.

*caru*, paradigm of 127.

case, 25; traces of lost case-endings 25; syntax of cases 26; expression of case in relative 86.

*cer*, *ger*, prep. 168.

clauses, subjunct. in main clauses 113; in subord. cl. 114; concessive cl. 114 (c); conditional cl. 114 (d); cl. of comparison 114 (e); temporal cl. 114 (f); final cl. 114 (g); relat. cl. 114 (h).

*clybot*, use of imperf. of 107 n. 2.

collective nouns, 29.

*com*-, Celt. prep. 39 n. 1.

command, subjunct. in 113 (b); in indirect speech 113 (b)(β).

comparison of adj. 37; lenat. after 16 n. 5; no plural 33; construction of compar. 38; foll. by *no* (c) 38 (a); clauses of comparison 114 (e).

composition, lenation in 16 n. 6.

concessive clauses, 114 (c).

concord, of vb. and subject 101; 103; of adj. with noun 32, 33; of adj. after *yn* 35.

conditional of *bot* 107 n. 3; impf. in conditional sentence 107 (d); plupf. in condit. 109 (b); subj. in condit. cl. 114 (d); impf. condit. 131.

conjugation of verb 98 sq.; analogy in 7 note 1.

conjunctions, 198-234; lenation after 16 (l); lenation of init. cons. 16 n. 13; spirant mutat. after 21 (d); with poss. adj. 58 (a).

consonants, classification of 3; graphic representation of 3 n.; orthog. variation 3 n.; consonantal changes 11; infl. of accent on cons. changes 11 n. 1; mediae > tenues 11 (g)(a); mutation of cons. 12; consonants vowel-flanked 12; table of cons. mutations 13.

consonantal stems, 27 (d).

consuetudinal present, 106 (b).

copula, 155; *ytti*w etc. 154 n. 4; *nat* 155 (a)(e); *nyt* 155 (a)(δ); position of 159; preceding pred. 159 n. 2; with *neu* 221; *os*, *onyt* ---.

customary action in past time, 107 (c).

*cwt*, *cw*, conj. 203; mutat. aft. 21 n. 1.

*cyvarvot*, paradigm of 160.

*cyvrwng*, prep. 169.

*cyn*-, in equative 39;

*cyn*, conj. 204; not foll. by *yd* 93.

*cyn*, prep. 170.

*cyt*, *cyn*, conj. 205; not foll. by *yd* 93 (l).

*cyt ac*, prep. 171; *y gyt ac*, conj. 206.

*chwech*, nas. mutation after 20 (c).

*darvot*, paradigm of 160.

dative, traces of 25; expressed by infixed pron. 51.

declension, in Old Celtic 25.

*deng*, usage of 41 n.

*delw*, nom. conj. 207.

denominative vb. 128 (b).

deponent, 99.

*di*, O.W. prep. 195; and n.

*diam*, O.W. prep. 164.

*diar*, O.W. prep. 165.

*dieithyr*, prep. 172.

*dim*, used as pron. 73.

diphthongs, 1 and n.

distributives, 43.

*diuch*, prep. 193.

*do*, in answers, 242.

dual, 25; 42 (a); lenation of adj. after dual noun, 16 (b)(a); lenat. of genit. after dual 16 (b)(β); traces of dual inflection 25.

*duch*, 110 n. 2; 138 n.

*dy-* before infixed pron. 50 f.

*dyvot*, paradigm of 141.

*dylyu*, with vb. noun 121.

-*e-* infixed pron. 48; use of 49 (b).

-*edic* part. end. 116.

-*ed*, pl. suffix 28 B (d).

*einom* etc. 55.

-*eint*, 3, plur. end. impf. ind. 131.

*eissoes*, conj. 208.

*eit*, -*ieit*, plur. suff. 28 B (e).

*eithyr*, prep. 172.

*eithyr na*, conj. 209.

*ell*, *ill*, *yll*, 67.

emphatic pronoun 45.

endings of verb, 3 sg. of simple vb. 129;

3 sg. conjunct. 129; 3 pl. primary

ending 129; see imperat. indicat. sub-

junct. vb. noun.

epenthetic vowel 10.

equative in comparison of adj. 39.

*erbyn*, prep. 173.

*et*, in *nocet* etc. 222 and n.

-*et*, pl. suffix. 28 B (c).

final clauses, 114 (g).

future 105; exp. by pres. tense 106 (e);

special future endings 130.

futurity, subj. of 113 (c).

*gallu*, to express passive with vb. noun 121.

gender, in nouns 25; in adjs. 30; 32;

genitive, lenation of noun in gen. 16

(b) (β); traces of gen. case 25; syntax

of gen. in prose 26; in poetry 26;

gen. of rel. pron. 88.

*ger*, see *cer*.

*gilyδ*, 72 and n.

*gorvot*, paradigm of 160.

*guar*, prep. 165 n. 3.

*gwares*, 110 n. 2; 138 n.

*gwedy*, *wedy*, prep. 174; with preverb.

*yd* 93 n. 3; with vb. noun=perf. part.

126 (b).

*gwedy*, conj. 210.

*gwelet*, use of imperf. of 107 n. 2.

*gweith*, with card. numbers 44.

*gwneuthur*, with vb. noun 123; paradigm of 142.

*gwrth*, O.W. prep. 194, see *wrth*.

*gwybot*, paradigm of 143.

*gyt*, see *cyt ac*.

*h*, sign of subjunctive 110; history of *h* in subj. 110 n. 2.

*h*, in sentence constr. 22; after infix.

pron. and possess. *m* 22 (a); after

infix. pron. *e* 22 (b); after 3 sg. f.

poss. *y* 22 (c); after 1 pl. poss. *an*

22 (d); after *eu* 22 (e); after *ar* bef.

*ugeint* 22 (f).

*ha*, interj. 243.

*hagen*, conj. 211.

*hanvot*, paradigm of 160.

-*hau*, denom. vb. end. 128 (b); spreading as -*a* to other vbs. 137.

-*haw*, 3 sg. fut. end. 130 (b).

-*haur*, ending of fut. pass. 130.

-*hawd*, -*hawt*, fut. end. 3 sg. 130.

-*hawnt*, fut. end. 3 pl. 130.

*heb*, prep. lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 175.

*heb*, verb 151.

*hevyt*, conj. 213.

*herwyd*, prep., usage of 176.

*herwyd*, conj., usage of 213.

historic infinitive, 125.

historic present, 106 (d).

*hollre*, 67 note.

*hun*, *hunan*, 60.

*hwde*, 149.

*hwnn*, etc. dem. pron. 61; usage of 62; *yr hwnn*, foll. by rel. clause, 62(c).

*hwnt*, 63.

*hwnnw*, *hynny*, 61; usage 62.

*hyt*, *prep.*, lenat. after 16(i); usage 177; *hyt pan* 226 2(a).

*hyt*, nominal conj. 214.

*i*, causing vowel infect. 6; 7 n. 2; 11 (b); 131; in pl. 27(a); in pron. prep. 52(b); infection due to lost *i* 7 b.

-*i* pl. suffix 28 B(f).

-*i*- stem in adj. 30 n.

-*i* ending of 3 sg. impf. 131(a).

*ie*, *ieu*, in answers 242 and n.

*igridu*, 53 n.

*ill*, *ell*, *yll*, 67.

imperat. mood, 115; pass. of 115; negat. of 115; endings of 137; infl. of denom. vbs. in *-hau* spreads to other verbs 137.

impf. tense, indic. 105; use of 107; in indirect speech 107(b); of repeated action 107(c); as sec. fut. or condit. 107(d); as sec. tense to a fut. 107(d)(a); in apod. of fut. or condit. clause 107(d)(β); in apod. of past clause 107(d)(γ); with negat. 107 n. 1; use of impf. of *clybot* 107 n. 2; use of impf. of *gwelet* 107 n. 2; endings of impf. 131.

indicative mood, with *ry* 96 A; pres. ind. with *ry* 97(c) 1; use of 105-109; pres. 106; plupf. 109(a); influence of ind. upon subjunct. form 110 n. 1; indic. stem in O.W. 110 n. 1; plupf. ind. replacing past subj. 111 and n.; ind. in consec. cl. 114 n. 4; end. of pres. and fut. 128; end. of plupf. 135; past ind. of *bot* used as subj. 152 n. 7; ind. with conj. *hyt* 214; ind. of

consequence with *hyt na* 214 2(a); ind. with *mal* 216; ind. of consequence with *mal na* 216 3(a).

indirect speech, impf. in 107(b); pret. in 108(b); command in 113(b)(β).

inflecting vowel, see *a*, *i*.

infection of vowel, 6; 7(b); 7 n. 2; 11(b); 27(a); 52(b).

infinitive, in Welsh 104; usage, 120; historic inf. 125; see verbal noun.

infixd pron. lenat. after 18(a); forms of 48; use of 49-51; after *yny* 49(b); after rel. *a* 50(a); with preverbal *yd* 50(b); 93 n. 2; after infixing part. *a* 50(c); after *ry*- 50(d); 93 n. 3; after *neu* 50(e); after *dy*- of cpd. vbs. 50(f); after *na*, *ny*, 50(g); after *tra*, 50(h); expr. accus. of relat. 51; infix. pron. with pass. vb. 102; with non-rel. vb. 102 n.; meaningless 159 n. 2; with *o* 224 n. 5.

inflected adj., position of 34 a.

inflection, noun 25.

interjection, lenat. after 16(m). forms of 243-4.

interrogative, lenat. after interrog. pron. 18(c); interrog. part. *a* 18(g); interrog. pron., forms of 79; *pwyl* 79; *peth*, *beth* 79; *pa*, *py* 80; and n. 1; *pa*, *py*, in earlier lit. 80 n. 2; *pathawr*, *pythawr* 80 n. 2; *pa*, *py* foll. by prep. 80 n. 3; *padiw*, *pydiw* 80 n. 4; *pwyl bynnac*, *pa*-, *py*- *bynnac* 81; indirect interrogation 114 B(b).

*is*, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage 178.

*issem*, *ysef* 47.

-*it*, imperat. end. 3 sg. 137.

*ithr*, prep. 179.

lenation, = vocalic mutation 12; table of 13; lenat. of *g*, 13 n. 1; of *d* 13 n. 2; exceptions to rules 15; usage 14-18;

- noun and adj. after *yr*, 16 (a); noun or adj. after noun, 16 (b); after dual 16 (b)(a); of noun in genit. 16 (b)(β); after prop. nouns 16 (b)(γ); of vb.-noun in genit. 16 (b)(δ); of noun aft. compar. adj. 16 (c)(a); of adj. repeated 16 (c)(β); after adv. *yn* 16 (d); aft. numerals 16 (e); aft. pron. 16 (f); after vb. 16 (g); after parts of *bot* 16 (g) (β); of adverbs 16 (h); aft. preps. 16 (i); after negat. 16 (k); after *mor*, *neu* 16 (l); aft. interj. 16 (m); of vocative 16 (m) (α); aft. superl. adj. 16 n. 5; in composit. 16 n. 6; of noun after adj. 16 n. 5; of noun prec. by depend. genit. 16 n. 7; in poetry 16 n. 7; post-verbal 16 n. 12; of prep. 16 n. 13; of pron. 17; after infixed pron. 18 a; after rel. part. *a* 18 (b); after interrog. 18 (c); of predicate after copula 18 (d); after *yt*, *yd* 18 (e); 91 n. 2; after *ry*-, 18 (f); after interrog. *a* 18 (g); after conj. 18 (h); after negat. 18 (i) and n.; in dual, 25; analogical lenat. 39 n. 1; after *ny*, relat 21 n. 2.
- llall*, pl. *lleill*, 70.  
*llas*, 134 (a).  
*lle*, nominal conj. 215.  
*y lleill*, 71.  
*llyma*, *llyna*, 244.
- m*-, infixed pron. 48.  
*m*, final, > *n* in Celtic 20 n.  
*mad*, not foll. by *yd* 93 (i).  
*mae*, use of 154 (a); copula 155 (a)(λ)  
*mal*, *val*, conj. 216.  
*med*, 'says,' form and use 150.  
*megys*, conj. 217.  
*meu*, etc. poss. pron. 55.  
*mi*, etc. simple pron. 45.  
*minheu*, etc. conj. pron. 45.  
*mivi*, etc. emph. pron. 45.
- moch*, not foll. by *yd* 93 (k).  
*moes*, imperat. 148.  
moods, 104; indic. 105-110; subj. 110-114; imperat. 115; see indicative, subjunct., imperat., infinitive.  
*mor*, lenat. after 16 (l), *mor* - *a* expr. equality with adjs. 39 n. 2.  
multiplicatives, 44.  
mutation of cons., table of 13; vocalic mut. see lenation; nasal mut. in Mid. W. MSS. 19; after *vyn* 20 (a); after *yn* 20 (b); origin of, after numerals 20 (c); spirant mut. 21; after numerals 21 (a); after 3 sg. f. poss. adj. 21 (b); after prep. 21 (c); after *a(c)* *no(c)* 21 (d); after *ny*, *na* 21 (e) after *kwt* 21 n. 1.  
*myn*, conj. 218.  
*mynet*, paradigm of 140.  
*mynn*, nominal prep. 180.  
*mywn*, nominal prep. 181.
- '*n*, poss. adj. 57.  
*n*, neut. stems in 27 (d).  
-*n*- infix. pron. 48.  
*na(c)*, mutat. after 21 (e); with infixed pron. 50 (g); with imperat. 115; with infixed pron., use of 237; disjunctive particle 238; in answers 241; *nac ef*, in answers 241 n.  
*na*, *nat*, negat. part., use of 236; in condit. sent. 236 n. 1; with infixed pron. 237.  
*nachaf*, interj. 244.  
*nado*, 242 and n.  
*nage*, 241.  
*namyn*, *namwyn*, 219.  
narrative tense, 108.  
nasal mutation, see mutation.  
*nat*, dependent neg. of copula 155 (a) (ε).  
*neb*, use of 64.

- negative particles, 235-238; special vb. form with negat. 130 (b).  
*y neill*, use of 69; *y neill* - *y lleill*, 71.  
*nem*, prep. with pron. end. 53.  
*nes*, prep., use of 182.  
*neu*, lenat. after 16 (l); with infixed pron. 50 (e); with vb. part. *ry* 95 n.; conj. 220.  
*neur*, 95 n.; 221.  
*neut*, not foll. by *yd*, 93 (h); as copula 155 (a)(i); conj. 221.  
 neuter, lost in Welsh 25; neuter -n stems 27 (d); of demons. pron. 61.  
*ni* etc. pers. pron. 45.  
*nini* etc. pers. pron. 45.  
*ninneu* etc. pers. pron. 45.  
*no*, *noc*, mutat. after 21 (d); after compar. adj. 38 (a); use as conj. 222.  
*nocet*, *nogyt* 222.  
 nominative, old nominat. 25; syntax of nom. 26.  
 nouns, lenat. of init. cons. 16; lenat. after proper nouns 16(b)(γ); art. with prop. nouns 24; cases of 25; formation of pl. 27-28; collective nouns 29 (c); noun predic. with *yn* 35; plurals with cardinal nos. 42 (a); see also verbal nouns.  
*nu*, conj. 223.  
 number, in nouns, 25; in adjs. 33; in vb. 100; express. of number in passive vb. 100; number of vb. in rel. clause 103.  
 numerals, lenat. after 16(e); nasal mutat. after 20(c); spirant mutat. after 21(a); cardinals 41; ordinals 41; syntax of 42; distributives with *pob* 43; multipl. with *gweith* 44.  
*nwy*, 49 (c).  
*ny*, mutation after 21 (e); mutat. aft. non-relative *ny* 21 n. 2; mutat. aft. relat. *ny* 21 n. 2; infixed pron. after non-rel. *ny* 49 c; special relat. form of *ny* 49 c; with infix. pron. 50 (g); in negat. of relat. 82; 86; gov. by prep. 87 (a); rel. *ny* without antec. 87 (b); usage 235.  
*nyr*=*ny ry* 95 n.  
*nys*, in later Mid. W. 50 n.  
*nyt*, negat. of copula 155 (a)(δ); (a)(κ).  
*nyw*, 49 c.  
*o*, prep., lenat. aft. 16(i); aft. adjs. 34 (b); aft. superl. adjs. 38 (b); with pron. end. 53; aft. vb. noun, 122; =of 183; with art. 183.  
*o*, conj., mutat. aft. 21 (d); with infixed pron. 50 (h); not foll. by *yd*, 93 (l); use of 224.  
 -o-, old pl. stems in, 27 n. 1; adj. stems in 30 n.  
 -o subjunct. end. 138.  
 object, position of 85.  
 oblique cases, traces of, 25.  
*oc*, prep. 183.  
*och*, interj. 243.  
*odieithyr*, prep. 172.  
*oduch*, prep. 193.  
*oed*, impf. of *bot*, use of 107 n. 3; 154 (b).  
 -oed, pl. suffix 28 B (h).  
*oed* ~~31~~ *eirmoet*, *eiryoet* 197 n.  
*oes*, use of 154 (a)(β).  
*oia*, interj. 243.  
*oian a*, interj. 243.  
*oll*, use of 67; with numerals 67.  
 -on pl. term. in adj. 31 (b).  
*ony*, *onyt*, conj. 224; 224 n. 2.  
*or*, conj 224; 224 n. 4.  
*ór a* 87 (a); *or ny* 87 (a); *or y*, 87 (a); *or pan* 226; 2 (b).  
 order of words, dependent genit. 26; adj. 34 (a); noun 34 (a); adverb 40; numerals 41; copula 159.  
 ordinals, see number.  
 orthography of Early W. 12 n.  
*os*, conj. 224 and n. 5.



*os*, (*bot*) 152; copula 155 (a)( $\zeta$ )  
*osit*, *ossit*, 152; use of 154 (a)( $\beta$ ); 154 n. 1.  
*ot*, conj 224.  
*-ot*, pl. suffix 28 B (g).  
*pa*, *py*, with *peth* 79; used adjct. 80; meaning of, 80 n. 1; without noun following 80 n. 2; followed by prep. 80 n. 3; *pa* - *bynac*, 81.  
*padiw*, *pydiw*, 80 n. 4.  
*paham*, 80 n. 3.  
*pahar*, 80 n. 3.  
*pan*, with infix. pron. 49 (b); foll. by *yd* 93 (l); with *yw* 154 (a)( $\beta$ ); *pan*= whence, 225; =when 226; *hyt pan* 226. 2 (a); or *pan* 226. 2 (b); *yr pan* 226. 2 (c).  
particles, preverbal 91-97; negat. 235 sqq.; disjunct. 238; interrog. 239; responsive 241.  
participle, passive 104; part. in *-edic* 116; pres. part. equiv. 126 (a); perf. part. equiv. 126 (b).  
*parth* (*ac*), prep. 184.  
passive, numb. exp. in pass. voice 100; pers. in pass. 102; 103; pass. part. 104; imperat. pass. 115; part. pass. in *-edic*, 116; old pass. end. 129; 130; pret. and perf. 134; periphr. pass. of plupf. 136 (b).  
*pawb*, use of 66.  
*pei*, conj. not foll. by *yd* 93 (l); uses of 227; origin of 227 n.  
periphrasis, verbal noun with *gwneuthur* 123; periphrastic plupf. with *-oed*, active 136 (a); passive 136 (b).  
perfect. indic. with *ry*. 96 A (a); perfect part. equiv. 126 (b); use of 105; v. preterite.  
person in verb, 102-103; in passive 102; in 1 and 2 pers. of pass. 102.  
personal pron. see pronoun.

*pettun*, 158.  
*peth*, as pron. 74; interrog. 79.  
*peun-*, old accus. 25.  
*pieu*, in rel. clause 83 (a)( $\beta$ ); paradigm 161; use of 161.  
pluperfect, with *ry* 96 A (b); use of 105, 109; plupf. indic. replacing subj. 109 c; types of plupf. ind. 135; periphr. plupf. act. and pass. 136 (a)(b).  
plural, old Celtic, 27; pl. of nouns 27; vowel change in pl. 27 (a); pl. endings *-eu*, *-ieu*, 27 (b); *-on*, *-ion*, 27 (c); old consonantal pls. 27 (d); pl. suffixes 28; pl. in adjs. 31; 33; pl. of nouns with card. numerals 42 (a); 3 pl. end. of impf. 131.  
*pob*, in distributives 43; used as adj. 66; *pob un* 66; *pob rei* 66.  
*pony*, interrog. 240.  
*ponyt*, copula 155 (a)( $\theta$ ).  
possessive, pronouns 55, 56; adjs. table of 57; prec. by prep. or conj. 58 (a).  
predicate, lenation of, after copula 18 (d); pred. before copula 159; after copula 159.  
predicative adj. 32; plural of 33; after *yn* 35; pred. noun with *yn* 35.  
preposition, lenat. after 16 (i); lenat. of 16 n. 13; nasal mut. after 20 (b); spirant mut. after 21 (c); with poss. adj. 58 (a); suffixed to *pa*, *py* 80 n. 3; forms and usage 162-197.  
present indic. 105; actual pres. 106 (a); as fut. 106 (e); pres. subj. endings 110.  
preterite with *ry*- 97 (a); use of 105; 108; in indir. speech 108 (b); =perfect 108 (c); endings of 132; absolute end. in 132 n.; *s*- pret. 133; *t*- pret. 133 (a); reduplic. in 133 (b); pret. pass. 134.  
pronoun, lenation of 17; lenat. after interrog. 18 (c); tables of 45-90; *mi*,

- etc. 45; *mivi* etc. 45; *minheu* etc. 45; weakening of, after vb. 45; construct. of indep. prons. 46; infix. pron. 48-51; after *pan* 49 (b); with *ry* 49 (c); with *ny* 49 (c); anticipat. obj. 49 n.; express dat. 51; with prepos. 52-53; simple pron. with pron.-prep. 54; conjunct. pron. with pron.-prep. 54; *meu*, etc. 55; poss. pron. syntax of 56; demonstr. pr. 61; syntax of 62; pronominal use of *dim* 73; *peth* 74; *rei* 75; *ryw*; *sawl* 77; *un* 78; interrog. 79; relat. 82, 84.
- prothetic vowel, 9.
- pryt* (na), conj. 228.
- pwv*, 79; *pwv* with noun, 79 n.
- pwv gilyd* 185.
- py*, see *pa*; prep. 185; with poss. pron. 185; *pyr* 229.
- pyynhac*, *pyynnac* 81.
- pyr*, 229.
- rac*, with pron. end. 53; usage 186;  
*y rac* 186.
- reduction of cons. 12; of prons. 45.
- reduplication 133 (b).
- rei* 62 (b); *y rei*, foll. by rel. 62 (c); *pob rei* 66; as pron. 75.
- relative, *ny* relat. and non-relat. 21 n. 2; express. of inflected rel. 62 (c); rel. pron. 82-84; rel. *a* with *yd* 84; expr. of genit. of rel. 88; Welsh equiv. to Eng. rel. gov. by prep. 89; substitutes for 90; verb in rel. clauses 103; subjunct. in rel. cl. 114 (h).
- repeated action, 107 (c).
- responsive particles, 241.
- ro*, prep. with pron. end. 53.
- rodi*, *roi*, paradigm of 146.
- rwng*, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage 187; *odyrwng* 187; *yrgwng* 187.
- rwv*, rel. form of *ry* 49 (c).
- ry*, verbal part. lenat. after 18 (f); with infix. pron. 49 (c); 50 (d); in rel. clause 83 (a)(γ); reduced to *r*, 95 n.; *y + ry* 95 n.; with indic. 96 A; with perf. indic. 96 A (a); with plupf. 96 A (b); with subj. 96 B; with pres. subj. 96 B (a); with past subj. 96 B (b); with vb. noun 96 C; in early W. poetry 97; with pret. indic. 97 (a); with subj. 97 (d); with fut. 97 (d); in later poetry 97 (d); with pres. indic. 97 C 1; in subord. cl. 97 C 2; with pres. and impf. of *darvot* 97 C n.; not found after neg.; *mad*; interrog. and rel. *a* 97'1; with infix. pron. 97. 3; with subj. of wish 97. 3 (b); with vb. noun 120 (b); with conj. *o* 224 n. 5.
- rydhau*, paradigm of 127.
- ryw*, rel. form of *ry* 49 (c).
- ryw*, pron. usage of 76.
- s, infix. pron. anticipating object 159 n. 2.
- s preterite 133.
- s stems in, 27 (d).
- s subjunctive 110 n. 2.
- sawl* used as pron. 77.
- secondary tense, impf. as, 107 (d) (a).
- sef*, *sséf*, 47.
- semivowels 3.
- sentence, sound changes within 12.
- singular formed from collect. nouns 29 c.
- sit, pret. and perf. end. 132 n.
- spirant mutat. 21, see mutation.
- stems in -s 27 (d); neut -n- 27 (d); in -o- 27 n. 1; in -u- 27 n. 1; -n- 27 n. 5; adj. stems in -i- 30 n.; in -u- 30 n.
- subject, position when emph. 85.
- subjunctive, with *ry* 96 B; pres. subj. with *ry* 96 B (a); past subj. with *ry* 96 B (b); subj. of wish with *ry* 97

- 3 (b); replaced by plupf. indic. 109 c.; ending of pres. subj. 110; formation of, 110; *h* as sign of, 110; new formation in Mid. W. 110 n. 1; subj. stem in O.W. 110 n. 1; stem of subj. and indic. 110 n. 1; influence of indic. upon 110 n. 1; confusion of subj. with indic. 110 n. 1; subj. in *h* 110 n. 1; history of subj. in *h* 110 n. 2; *s*-subj. 110 n. 2; early history of 110 n. 2; tenses of subj. 111; pres. 111; impf. 111; past 111; past subj. in later Mid. W. 111; replaced by plupf. ind. 111 and *n*; perf. in subj. 111; plupf. in subj. 111; subj. replaced by indicat. 111 *n.*; usage 112-114; in main clauses 113 A; of wish 113 A (a); of command 113 A (b); express futurity 113 (c); after vbs. of *thinking, swearing, etc.* 114 (a); in subord. cl. 114 B; in indirect interrog. 114 B (b); in concessive cl. 114 (c); in condit. cl. 114 (d); in cl. of comparison 114 (e); in temporal cl. 114 (f); after vbs. of *effecting, commanding, desiring* 114 (g); in final cl. 114 (g); in relat. cl. 114 (h); endings of pres. subj. 138; of pass. subj. 139; form of past subj. 139; subj. with *hyt* 214 (b); of purpose with *hyt na* 214. 2 (b); after *mal* 216. 1 (b); of purpose after *mal na* 216. 3 (b).
- substantive verb, forms and usage 154.
- suffixes, pl. 28; of comparat. 37 (a); of verbal noun 119.
- superlative adj., lenat. after 16 n. 5; no pl. forms 33; form of 37; foll. by prep. *o* 38 (b); construction 38.
- syllable, loss of final syll. 30 n.
- syntax, of the art. 24; of cases 26; of genit. in prose and poetry 26; of numerals 42; *o* poss. pron. 56.
- tan, dan*, prep. lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun, 126 (c); usage 188; *yndan* 164; *adan, ydan*, 188.
- tawr, dawr*, paradigm of 147.
- temporal clauses, 114 (f).
- tenses, see present etc.
- tor*, verbal ending 129.
- tra*, conj. with infix. pron. 50 (h); foll. by *yd* 93 (l); usage 230.
- tra, trag*, prep., mutation after 21 (c); usage 189.
- tri*, mutation after 21 (a).
- tras, dros, trus*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 190.
- trwy, drwy*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 191.
- tu (ac)*, prep. 192.
- u*, 3 pl. end. of pron.-prep. 52 (b).
- u-* stems in 27 n. 3; 30 n.
- ub* interj. 243.
- uch*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage, 193.
- ud*, 3 pl. end. of pron. prep. 52 (b).
- un*, as pron. 78.
- verb, end. 3 sg. pres. ind. act. 7 n. 1; 98; lenat. after, 16 (g) (a); lenat. of, 18; posit. in Celt. sent. 85; conjugation, 98-161; classes of, 98; deponent, 99; voice, 99; number, 100; concord with subj. 101; 103; person, 102; mood, 104; verbs of *thinking, swearing, etc.*, 114 (a); verbs of *effecting, commanding, etc.*, 114 (g); paradigm of reg. vb. 127; vowel infection in obj. 128 (a); denominative vb. 128 (b); verbs in *-hau* 128 (b); ending of 3 pl. 129; irreg. vb. 140-152; see indic. etc.
- verbal noun, lenat. of, 16 (b) (δ); with *ry*, 96 C; 120; formation, 118; suffixes, 119; usage, 120; voice in, 121;

- agent with, 122; with *gwneuthur*, 123; continuing finite vb. 124; as historic infin. 125; special use after *yn*, 126; with *gwedy*, 126 (b); with *tan*, 126 (c); with *can*, 126 (c).
- vocative, lenation in, 16 (m)(a).
- voice, in vb. noun, 121; see number, passive.
- vowels, vowel system, 1; orthog. variat. 1 n; quantity, 2; long, 2 (a); half-long 2 (b); accented, 2 A; unaccented 2 B; short, 2 B; changes, 5; infecting, 5; infecting vowel preserved, 6; lost, 7; vowel-infection in 3 sg. pr. ind. act. 7 n 1; variation of, due to accent, 8; weakening, 8; prothetic 9; epenthetic, 10; change in adj. 31 (a); infection in vb. 128 (a); irregular vowel infection, 128 n.
- wely dy*, interj. 244.
- wish, subjunctive of, 113 A (a).
- word groups, mutation of cons. in, 12.
- wrth*, prep., with pron. end. 53; usage 194.
- wrth*, conj. 231.
- wy*, usage of, 45 n 2; becoming *wynt*, 45 n 2.
- wyf*, etc., as copula, 155 (a)(μ).
- wynt*, usage, 45 n 2; history of, 45 n 2.
- wynteu*, usage, 46 n.
- y*, semi-vowel, 3 n (g).
- y*, prep. lenat. after, 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with poss. adj. 53; after vb. noun, 122; usage, 195.
- y* 'her,' mutat. aft. 21 b.
- yd*, *yt*, *yr*, *y*, verb. part., lenation after 18 (e); with infix. pron. 49 b; 50 (b); 93 n 2; with rel. *a* 84; superseding *a* 85 note; after or 87 (a); *yr* 91; *yr* for *yd* 91 n 2; *yt* 91 n 2; *y* not lenating 91 n 2; origin of non-lenat. *y* 91 n 2; *yt* lenat. 91 n 2; usage 92; 93; after *gwedy* 93 n 3; before *ry* 93 n 4; *yd*, use of in RB; in WB; and in later Mid. W, 94; infixing pron. 94.
- yd* pl. ending 28 B (i)
- ydoed*, etc., 154 n 3; usage, 154 (b).
- ydyw*, use of, 154, and n 3.
- yll*, see *ell*.
- yma*, adv. 63.
- yn*, prep. with vb. noun, 16 n 8; lenat. 16 n. 8; *yn* predic. 16 n 8; nasal mut. after, 20 (b); with predic. noun and adj. 35; with adj. 40; with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun, 126; usage, 196.
- yn*, conj., usage, 232.
- ynt*, copula, 155 (a)(γ).
- ynteu*, usage, 46 n.
- yny*, conj. with infix. pron. 49 (b); 50 (h); not foll. by *yd*, 93 (l); usage, 233.
- yon*, pl. ending 31 (c).
- yr*, see article.
- yr*, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage, 187; *yr pan*, 226 c; *yr na*, 234.
- yr* for *y + yr*, 87 note.
- yr* for *y + ry*, 91 n 3; 95 n.
- ys*, *ydys* 152
- ys*, copula, 155 (a)(α); *ys oed* 159 n 2.
- ysyd*, *syd*, in relat. cl. 83 (a)(α); usage, 154 (a)(β); 155 (a)(κ).
- yssit*, *yssydynt*, usage, 154 (a) n 1.
- yttoed*, usage, 154 (b).
- yttiaw*, usage, 154 (a)(α); copula, 154 n 4.
- yw*, copula, 155 (a)(β); *pan yw*, 155 (a)(β)

## CORRIGENDA

- P. 7, l. 15, *for* mynwgl *read* mwnwgl  
P. 20, l. 34, *for* Aften *read* After  
P. 37, l. 20, *for* thee *read* me  
P. 110, l. 21, *for* on *read* on  
P. 123, l. 31, *for* as *read* as  
P. 140, l. 28, *for* 19,707 *read* 19,709  
P. 141, l. 32, *for* 12 dianot *read* 13 dianot  
    ib., *for* 13 y rydunt *read* 14 y rydunt  
P. 145, l. 27, *for* 19,707 *read* 19,709  
    ib., l. 29, *for* dywyasavc *read* dywyssavc  
P. 151, l. 25, *for* can wr *read* canwr  
P. 152, l. 19, *for* ordiwed *read* or diwed  
P. 153, l. 27, *for* troet noethon *read* troetnoethon  
P. 154, l. 5, *for* yny *read* yn y  
P. 155, l. 2, *for* gyt gyghor *read* gytgyghor  
P. 162, l. 11, *add comma after* Gotlont  
    ib., *for* Gŷynw *read* Gŷynw[as]  
    ib., *for* Gerein *read* Gerein[t]  
P. 166, l. 28, *for* kadŵr *read* Kadŵr  
P. 167, l. 19, *add full stop after* hynn  
P. 169, l. 16, *for* vrytanyeit *read* Vrytanyeit  
P. 182, l. 21, *dele the full stop after* Les  
P. 184, l. 20, *for* ge ynyon *read* gelynyon  
    ib., l. 33, *read* a[c] Vryen  
P. 192, l. 18, *for* vililioed (*sic* MS.) *read* vilioed  
P. 195, l. 1, *for* allan. Dŷuot *read* allan dŷuot  
P. 198, l. 11, *for* ehaŵc. *read* ehaŵc,  
P. 199, l. 31, *for* Uarruaŵc (*sic* MS.) *read* Uaruawc  
P. 201, l. 20, *for* kyfuarch (*sic* MS.) *read* kyfarth  
    ib., l. 24, *for* Yspaden *read* Yspad[ad]en  
P. 202, l. 2, *for* yn *read* ny

- P. 210<sup>b</sup>, l. 4, *for idau read idaw*  
 ib., l. 20, *for rhingyll read ringyll*  
 ib., l. 33, *for nessat read nessaf*  
 ib., *for kyglaŷs read kyghaŷs*
- P. 211<sup>b</sup>, l. 15, *for dyvedut read dywedut*
- P. 212<sup>b</sup>, l. 5, *for savun read savwn*
- P. 212<sup>b</sup>, l. 11, *for ydau read idaw*
- P. 213<sup>b</sup>, l. 21, *for dylyaf read dylyaf fi*  
 ib., l. 24, *for ageidw read a geidw*
- P. 216<sup>a</sup>, l. 22, *for Neu<sup>5</sup> read Neu<sup>6</sup>*
- P. 216<sup>b</sup>, l. 23, *for Kynnybo read Kynny bo*
- P. 219<sup>b</sup>, l. 19, *for amdiffynnur vreint read amdiffynnwr breint*
- P. 220<sup>b</sup>, l. 12, *for testyon eneill read tystyon y neill*  
 ib., l. 20, *for ygneit read yneit*
- P. 223, l. 5 and 6, *for diethyr read dieithyr*  
 1b., l. 22, 25 and 33, *for Morgannuc read Morgannwc*  
 1b., l. 29, *for a digonher read digonher*
- P. 227, l. 21, *dele the comma after trŷs*
- P. 229, l. 1, *read dayargychwyn*
- P. 231, l. 26, *for ieuan read Ieuan*
- P. 234, l. 16, *for teern meibon read teernmeibon*
- P. 237, note 1, *for M.A. read MA. p. 268a.*
- P. 237<sup>b</sup>, l. 17, *for Daŷ read Duŷ*
- P. 239, l. 20, *for a metev read am etev*
- P. 241, l. 7, *for or seuir read orseuir*  
 1b., l. 31, *for di luyd read diluyd*

Publications  
OF THE  
University of Manchester.





**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.**

**ANATOMICAL SERIES.**

- No. I. **STUDIES IN ANATOMY** from the Anatomical Department of the University of Manchester. Vol. iii. Edited by ALFRED H. YOUNG, M.B. (Edin.), F.R.C.S., Professor of Anatomy. Demy 8vo, pp. ix. 289, 23 plates. 10s. net. (Publication No. 10, 1906.)

"All the papers contained in the volume are real additions to the knowledge of the subject with which they deal. For three of the studies Prof. Young is either in part or wholly responsible, and he is to be congratulated on the vigour shown by the Manchester School of Anatomists."—*Nature*.

"This work affords admirable evidence of the virility of our younger British Universities. It is a notable addition to an already notable series."—*Medical Review*.

"This forms the third volume of the Studies in Anatomy issued by the Council, and contains contributions of considerable interest. The volume is well printed and bound. It speaks well for the activity of investigation at Manchester."—*Lancet*.

"The volume is well got up and is evidence of the continuation of the excellent work which has been carried on for so long a period, under Professor A. H. Young's supervision, and has been encouraged and stimulated by his own work."—*British Medical Journal*.

"Throughout the papers, careful research and accurate observation are manifested, and they will repay careful perusal. To the Anatomist, as well as the practical physician or surgeon, they will prove valuable."

—*Edinburgh Medical Journal*.

**CLASSICAL SERIES.**

- No. I. **A STUDY OF THE BACCHAE OF EURIPIDES.** By G. NORWOOD, M.A., Assistant Lecturer in Classics. Demy 8vo, pp. xx. 188. 5s. net. (Publication No. 31, 1908.)

**ECONOMIC SERIES.**

- No. I. **THE LANCASHIRE COTTON INDUSTRY.** By S. J. CHAPMAN, M.A., M. Com., Stanley Jevons Professor of Political Economy and Dean of the Faculty of Commerce. Demy 8vo, pp. vii. 309. 7s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 4, 1904.)

"Such a book as this ought to be, and will be, read far beyond the bounds of the trade."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"There have been books dealing with various phases of the subject, but no other has so ably treated it from the economic as well as from the historical point of view."—*Manchester Courier*.

"The story of the evolution of the industry from small and insignificant beginnings up to its present imposing proportions and highly developed and specialised forms, is told in a way to rivet the attention of the reader . . . the book is a valuable and instructive treatise on a fascinating yet important subject."—*Cotton Factory Times*.

"Highly valuable to all close students." *Scotsman*.

---

34, Cross Street, Manchester

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.**  
**ECONOMIC SERIES.**

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 1.)

No. II. COTTON SPINNING AND MANUFACTURING IN THE  
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA. By T. W. UTTLEY, B.A.,  
Gartside Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. xii. 70. 1s. net.  
(Publication No. 8, 1905.)

"Mr. Uttley is to be congratulated on the performance of a not altogether easy task, and his book, in conception and execution, appears to fulfil admirably the intentions of the Trust."—*Manchester Courier*.

"The writer gives ample details concerning wages and other features connected with typical mills . . . and the information thus gathered is of interest and value to the factory operative as well as the student and economist."—*Cotton Factory Times*.

"Mr. Uttley describes how he visited the mills in various States in a very systematic and detailed manner. Altogether the report makes an admirable and welcome collection of information, and will be found on many occasions worthy of reference."—*Textile Mercury*.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 2.)

No. III. SOME MODERN CONDITIONS AND RECENT  
DEVELOPMENTS IN IRON AND STEEL PRODUCTIONS  
IN AMERICA, being a Report to the Gartside Electors, on the  
results of a Tour in the U.S.A. By FRANK POPPLEWELL, B.Sc.,  
Gartside Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. vi. 119. 1s. net.  
(Publication No. 21, 1906.)

"The author has employed his time well, and has given a clear idea of modern conditions."—*Nature*.

"The American methods of iron and steel production are described, from the practical as well as the statistical side."—*Manchester Courier*.

"Mr. Popplewell writes clearly and well, and he is to be congratulated upon having carried his task through in so entirely a satisfactory manner."—*Manchester City News*.

"America's progress in iron and steel is more wonderful than any bald statistics of production with which we are so familiar can indicate. How that progress has been effected—effected under labour, transport and other difficulties—Mr. Popplewell tells us in an interesting and keenly intelligent review."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"A minute observation of detail . . . characterises the whole work."  
—*Iron and Coal Trades Review*.

---

34, Cross Street, Manchester

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
ECONOMIC SERIES.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 3.)

No. IV. ENGINEERING AND INDUSTRIAL CONDITIONS  
IN THE UNITED STATES. By FRANK FOSTER, M.Sc., Gartside  
Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. ix. 106. 1s. net.

(Publication No. 22, 1906.)

"The report under review is of very great interest to those connected with the manufacturing branch of engineering in this country, many of whom will have to relinquish their preconceived notions regarding American methods, if Mr. Foster's conclusions are to be accepted."

—*Electrical Review*.

"The book altogether is very readable, and one we can heartily recommend to all interested in the economics of engineering."

—*The Practical Engineer*.

"Mr. Foster's observation of facts is fresh and interesting . . . the technical side of his report exhibits much care."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"The book is well worth reading."—*Iron and Coal Trades Review*.

"There is much in the book which will be new to English readers, even to those who have studied the reports of the Moseley and other recent 'commissions.'"—*Belfast News Letter*.

No. V. THE RATING OF LAND VALUES. By J. D.  
CHORLTON, M.Sc. Demy 8vo, pp. viii. 177. 3s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 23, 1907.)

"A timely and temperate treatise on a subject of growing interest."

—*Pall Mall Gazette*.

"The writer is learned, intelligent, progressive, fair and lucid."

—*Progress*.

"The facts and deductions are well put."—*Western Mail*.

"Chapters upon the scheme of the Royal Commission (minority report) — 'Building Land,' 'The Future Increase of Land Values,' 'The Municipal Bill,' and others . . . set forth with clearness and detail some of the many interesting and difficult subjects in connection with valuation, rates and rating."—*Estates Gazette*.

"Mr. Chorlton has made a contribution to this interesting controversy which is worthy of the serious attention of all persons interested in the subject."—*Local Government Chronicle*.

"The arguments for and against this proposed reform in the taxation of land have never been more fairly and freely stated."

—*Liverpool Daily Post and Mercury*.

"Mr. Chorlton deals clearly and concisely with the whole subject of rating and land values."—*The Standard*.

---

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
ECONOMIC SERIES.**

"The impartiality and candour of Mr. Chorlton's method are beyond dispute, and his book will repay careful study by all who are interested in the question, from whatever motive."—*Westminster Gazette*.

"The first half of this book deserves to become a classic . . . . . is one of the best books on a practical economic question that has appeared for many years. It is not only scientifically valuable, but so well written as to be interesting to a novice on the subject."—*The Nation*

"This thoughtful and judicially expressed treatise."

—*Manchester City News*.

"A very businesslike and serviceable collection of essays and notes on this intricate question."—*Manchester Guardian*.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 4.)

No. VI. DYEING IN GERMANY AND AMERICA. By SYDNEY H. HIGGINS, M.Sc., Gartside Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. xiii. 112. 1s. net. (Publication No. 24, 1907.)

"The book will . . . make a valuable addition to the technical literature of this country."—*Tribune*.

"The work is one which . . . should receive the attention of those who desire a general view of the German and American dyeing industries."—*Textile Manufacturer*.

"A perusal of the work leads us to the conclusion that much useful work is being done by the Gartside scholars, which will give these young men an excellent insight into the working conditions of various industries."—*Textile Recorder*.

No. VII. THE HOUSING PROBLEM IN ENGLAND. By ERNEST RITSON DEWSNUP, M.A., Professor of Railway Economics in the University of Chicago. Demy 8vo, pp. vii. 327. 5s. net.

(Publication No. 25, 1907.)

"Mr. Dewsnap's book is most valuable as it provides all essential information on the subject."—*Standard*.

"All those who are interested in this question, no matter what their economic predilections, may ponder with advantage Professor Dewsnap's pages."—*Newcastle Daily Chronicle*.

"The study brings together so weighty an array of facts and arguments that it cannot but prove instructive and suggestive to all classes of economists interested in its subject."—*Scotsman*.

"Professor Dewsnap's view of the whole problem was stated in 1903, in a form which won the Warburton Essay Prize at the Manchester University. Now revised and brought up to date, his valuable work has taken permanent form."—*Westminster Gazette*.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 5.)

No. VIII. AMERICAN BUSINESS ENTERPRISE. By DOUGLAS KNOOP M.A. Price 1s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 30, 1907.)

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
EDUCATIONAL SERIES.**

- No. I. CONTINUATION SCHOOLS IN ENGLAND & ELSEWHERE:  
Their place in the Educational System of an Industrial and Commercial State. By MICHAEL E. SADLER, M.A., LL.D., Professor of the History and Administration of Education. Demy 8vo, pp. xxvi 779. 8s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 29, 1907).  
This work is largely based on an enquiry made by past and present Students of the Educational Department of the University of Manchester. Chapters on Continuation Schools in the German Empire, Switzerland, Denmark, and France, have been contributed by other writers.
- No. II. THE DEMONSTRATION SCHOOL RECORD. No. I. Being Contributions to the Study of Education from the Department of Education in the University of Manchester. By Professor J. J. FINDLAY. 1s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 32, 1908.)

**HISTORICAL SERIES.**

- No. I. MEDIAEVAL MANCHESTER AND THE BEGINNINGS OF LANCASHIRE. By JAMES TAIT, M.A., Professor of Ancient and Mediaeval History. Demy 8vo, pp. x. 211. 7s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 3, 1904.)

"Patient and enlightened scholarship and a sense of style and proportion have enabled the writer to produce a work at once solid and readable."—*English Historical Review*.

"A welcome addition to the literature of English local history, not merely because it adds much to our knowledge of Manchester and Lancashire, but also because it displays a scientific method of treatment which is rare in this field of study in England."—Dr. Gross in *American Historical Review*.

"La collection ne pouvait débiter plus significativement et plus heureusement que par un ouvrage d'histoire du Moyen Age dû à M. Tait, car l'enseignement médiéviste est un de ceux qui font le plus d'honneur à la jeune Université de Manchester, et c'est à M. le Professeur Tait qu'il faut attribuer une bonne part de ce succès."—*Revue de Synthèse historique*.

"The two essays are models of their kind."—*Manchester Guardian*.

- No. II. INITIA OPERUM LATINORUM QUAE SAECULIS XIII., XIV., XV. ATTRIBUUNTUR. By A. G. LITTLE, M.A., Lecturer in Palaeography. Demy 8vo, pp. xiii. 273 (interleaved). 15s. net. (Publication No. 5, 1904.)

"Whoever has attempted to ascertain the contents of a Mediaeval miscellany in manuscript must often have been annoyed by the occurrence of a blank space where the title of the treatise ought to be. Mr. Little has therefore earned the gratitude of all such persons by making public a collection of some 6,000 incipits, which he arranged in the first instance for his private use, in compiling a catalogue of Franciscan MSS."—*English Historical Review*.

---

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
HISTORICAL SERIES.

No. III. THE OLD COLONIAL SYSTEM. By GERALD BERKELEY  
HERTZ, M.A., B.C.L., Lecturer in Constitutional Law. Demy 8vo,  
pp. xi. 232. 5s. net. (Publication No. 7, 1905.)

"Mr. Hertz gives us an elaborate historical study of the old colonial system, which disappeared with the American Revolution. . . . He shows a remarkable knowledge of contemporary literature, and his book may claim to be a true history of popular opinion."—*Spectator*.

"Mr. Hertz's book is one which no student of imperial developments can neglect. It is lucid, fair, thorough, and convincing."

—*Glasgow Herald*.

"Mr. Hertz's 'Old Colonial System' is based on a careful study of contemporary documents, with the result that several points of no small importance are put in a new light . . . it is careful, honest work . . . The story which he tells has its lesson for us."—*The Times*.

"Both the ordinary reader and the academic mind will get benefit from this well-informed and well-written book."—*Scotsman*.

No. IV. STUDIES OF ROMAN IMPERIALISM. By W. T. ARNOLD, M.A. Edited by EDWARD FIDDES, M.A., Lecturer in Ancient History, with Memoir of the Author by Mrs. HUMPHRY WARD and C. E. MONTAGUE. With a Photogravure of W. T. Arnold. Demy 8vo, 400 pp. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 16, 1906.)

"Mrs. Humphry Ward has used all her delicate and subtle art to draw a picture of her beloved brother; and his friend Mr. Montague's account of his middle life is also remarkable for its literary excellence."—*Athenæum*.

"The memoir . . . tenderly and skilfully written by the 'sister and friend,' tells a story, which well deserved to be told, of a life rich in aspirations, interests, and friendships, and not without its measure of actual achievement."—*Tribune*.

"This geographical sense and his feeling for politics give colour to all he wrote."—*Times*.

"Anyone who desires a general account of the Empire under Augustus which is freshly and clearly written and based on wide reading will find it here."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"Nothing could be better than the sympathetic tribute which Mrs. Humphry Ward pays to her brother, or the analysis of his work and method by his colleague Mr. Montague. The two together have more stuff in them than many big books of recent biography."

—*Westminster Gazette*.

The Memoir may be had separately, price 2s. 6d. net.

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
HISTORICAL SERIES.**

No. V. CANON PIETRO CASOLA'S PILGRIMAGE TO  
JERUSALEM IN THE YEAR 1494. By M. M. NEWETT,  
B.A., formerly Jones Fellow. Demy 8vo., pp. 427. 7s. 6d. net.  
(Publication No. 26, 1907.)

"Thoroughness is characteristic of introduction, the copious notes, appendix and index. . . . Miss Newett's translation is spirited and interesting. . . ."—*Manchester Courier*.

"Casola's narrative richly deserved the honours of print and translation. The book is a credit to its editor and to the historical school of Manchester University."—*Morning Leader*.

"His narrative is at once simple and dignified in style, convincing and interesting in its pictures of the conditions governing travel by sea and land four centuries ago."—*Daily Telegraph*.

"The book is like a gallery of mediæval paintings, full of movement and colouring, instinct with the vitality of the time."—*Birmingham Post*.

"Miss Newett's introduction is a contribution of considerable value to the history of European commerce."—*Spectator*.

"Forms a noteworthy addition to the number of books from which a knowledge can be gained of the itineraries of the pilgrims to Palestine."

—*Scotsman*.

"The whole volume is fascinating. It presents a lively picture of bygone times, abounds in curious facts and recalls quaint and pleasing ceremonies, and exhibits the ardent pilgrim of the past in his true light. Miss Newett is alike to be congratulated on her translation, her Introduction (which takes up a third of the volume), and her notes."

—*Manchester City News*.

"The work which Miss Margaret Newett has probably saved from oblivion is as intrinsically interesting as it should prove instructive to the student of history."—*Daily News*.

"One of the most delightful narratives that record the impressions of a pious pilgrim."—*Westminster Gazette*.

"One of the most comprehensive of the itineraries is that now translated, an important feature of it being its full description of the city of Venice."—*The Times*

No. VI. HISTORICAL ESSAYS. Edited by T. F. TOUT, M.A.,  
Professor of Mediæval and Modern History and JAMES TAIT, M.A.,  
Professor of Ancient and Mediæval History. Demy 8vo., pp. xv. 557.  
6s. net. Reissue of the Edition of 1902 with Index and New Preface  
(Publication No. 27, 1907.)

"Diese zwanzig chronologisch geordneten Aufsätze heissen in der Vorrede der Herausgeber *Festschrift*, behandeln zur Hälfte ausser-englische

---

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.

HISTORICAL SERIES.

Themata, benutzen reichlich festländische Literatur und verraten überall neben weiten Aushlicken eine methodische Schulung die der dortigen Facultät hohe Ehre macht." Professor Liebermann in *Deutsche Literaturzeitung*,

"Imperial history, local history, ecclesiastical history, economic history and the methods of historical teaching—all these are in one way or another touched upon by scholars who have collaborated in this volume. Men and women alike have devoted their time and pains to working out problems of importance and often of no slight difficulty. The result is one of which the university and city may be justly proud." The late Professor York Powell in the *Manchester Guardian*.

"Esso contiene venti lavori storici dettati, quattro da professori e sedici da licenziati del Collegio, e sono tutto scritti appositamente e condotti secondo le più rigorose norme della critica e su documenti." R. Predelli in *Nuovo Archivio Veneto*.

"La variété des sujets et l'érudition avec laquelle ils sont traités font grand honneur à la manière dont l'histoire est enseigné à Owens College." *Revue Historique*.

"No one who reads these essays will do so without acknowledging their ability, both in originality and research. They deal with historic subjects from the beginnings of Cæsar-worship to the detention of Napoleon at St. Helena, and they deal with them in a thoroughgoing fashion." *Guardian*.

"Par nature, c'est un recueil savant, qui témoigne du respect et de l'émulation que sait exercer pour les études historiques la jeune et déjà célèbre université." *Revue d'histoire ecclésiastique* (Louvain).

"All these essays reach a high level; they avoid the besetting sin of most of our present historical writing, which consists of serving up a hash of what other historians have written flavoured with an original spice of error. . . . They are all based on original research and written by specialists." Professor A. F. Pollard in the *English Historical Review*.

"Sie bilden einen schönen Beweis für die rationelle Art, mit der dort dieses Studium betrieben wird." Professor O. Weber in *Historische Zeitschrift*.

The Index can be purchased separately price 6d.

---

34, Cross Street, Manchester



**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
MEDICAL SERIES.**

- No. I. SKETCHES OF THE LIVES AND WORK OF THE  
HONORARY MEDICAL STAFF OF THE ROYAL INFIRMARY.  
From its foundation in 1752 to 1830, when it became the Royal  
Infirmary. By EDWARD MANSFIELD BROCKBANK, M.D., M.R.C.P.  
Crown 4to. (illustrated). Pp. vii. 311. 15s. net.

(Publication No. 1, 1904.)

"Dr. Brockbank's is a book of varied interest. It also deserves a welcome as one of the earliest of the 'Publications of the University of Manchester.'"—*Manchester Guardian*.

"We have a valuable contribution to local Medical Literature."

—*Daily Dispatch*.

- No. II. PRACTICAL PRESCRIBING AND DISPENSING. For  
Medical Students. By WILLIAM KIRKBY, sometime Lecturer in  
Pharmacognosy in the Owens College, Manchester. Crown 8vo,  
220 pp. 5s. net.

(Publication No. 2, 1904, Second edition, 1906.)

"The whole of the matter bears the impress of that technical skill and thoroughness with which Mr. Kirkby's name must invariably be associated, and the book must be welcomed as one of the most useful recent additions to the working library of prescribers and dispensers."

—*Pharmaceutical Journal*.

"Thoroughly practical text-books on the subject are so rare, that we welcome with pleasure Mr. William Kirkby's 'Practical Prescribing and Dispensing.' The book is written by a pharmacist expressly for medical students, and the author has been most happy in conceiving its scope and arrangement."—*British Medical Journal*.

"The work appears to be peculiarly free from blemishes and particularly full in practical detail. It is manifestly the work of one who is a skilled chemist, and an expert pharmacist, and who knows not only the requirements of the modern student but the best way in which his needs may be met."—*Medical Press*.

"This is a very sensible and useful manual."—*The Hospital*.

"The book will be found very useful to any students during a course of practical dispensing."—*St. Bartholomew's Hospital Journal*.

"The book is a model, being tutorial from beginning to end."

—*The Chemist and Druggist*.

- No. III. HANDBOOK OF SURGICAL ANATOMY. By G. A.  
WRIGHT, B.A., M.B. (Oxon.), F.R.C.S., Professor of Systematic  
Surgery, and C. H. PRESTON, M.D., F.R.C.S., L.D.S., Lecturer on  
Dental Anatomy; Assistant Dental Surgeon to the Victoria Dental  
Hospital of Manchester. Crown 8vo, pp. ix. 205. Second edition.  
5s. net.

(Publication No. 6, 1905.)

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.**  
**MEDICAL SERIES.**

"We can heartily recommend the volume to students, and especially to those preparing for a final examination in surgery."—*Hospital*.

"Dr. Wright and Dr. Preston have produced a concise and very readable little handbook of surgical applied anatomy. . . . The subject matter of the book is well arranged and the marginal notes in bold type facilitate reference to any desired point."—*Lancet*.

No. IV. A COURSE OF INSTRUCTION IN OPERATIVE SURGERY in the University of Manchester. By WILLIAM THORNBURN, M.D., B.S. (Lond.), F.R.C.S., Lecturer in Operative Surgery. Crown 8vo, pp. 75. 2s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 11, 1906.)

"This little book gives the junior student all that he wants, and nothing that he does not want. Its size is handy, and altogether for its purpose it is excellent."—*University Review*.

"As a working guide it is excellent."—*Edinburgh Medical Journal*.

No. V. A HANDBOOK OF LEGAL MEDICINE. By W. SELLARS, M.D. (London), of the Middle Temple and Northern Circuit, Barrister-at-law. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo, pp. vii. 233. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 14, 1906.)

"This is quite one of the best books of the kind we have come across."—*Law Times*.

No. VI. A CATALOGUE OF THE PATHOLOGICAL MUSEUM OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Edited by J. LORRAIN SMITH, M.A., M.D. (Edin.), Professor of Pathology. Crown 4to, 1260 pp. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 15, 1906.)

"The catalogue compares very favourably with others of a similar character, and, apart from its value for teaching purposes in an important medical school such as that of the University of Manchester, it is capable of being of great assistance to others as a work of reference."

—*Edinburgh Medical Journal*.

"In conclusion we need only say that Professor Lorrain Smith has performed the most essential part of his task—the description of the specimens—excellently, and an honourable mention must be made of the book as a publication."—*British Medical Journal*.

No. VII. HANDBOOK OF DISEASES OF THE HEART. By GRAHAM STEELL, M.D., F.R.C.P., Professor of Medicine, and Physician to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. Crown 8vo, pp. xii. 389, 11 plates (5 in colours), and 100 illustrations in the text. 7s. 6d. net.

Publication No. 20, 1906.)

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.**

**MEDICAL SERIES.**

"It more truly reflects modern ideas of heart disease than any book we are acquainted with, and therefore may be heartily recommended to our readers."—*Treatment*.

"We regard this volume as an extremely useful guide to the study of diseases of the heart, and consider that no better introduction to the subject could possibly have been written."—*Medical Times and Hospital Gazette*.

"We can cordially recommend Dr. Steell's book as giving an excellent and thoroughly practical account of the subject of which it treats."—*Edinburgh Medical Review*.

**PHYSICAL SERIES.**

No. I. THE PHYSICAL LABORATORIES OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. A record of 25 years' work. Demy 8vo, pp. 142, 10 Plates, 4 Plans. 5s. net. (Publication No. 13, 1906.)

This volume contains an illustrated description of the Physical, Electrical Engineering, and Electro-Chemistry Laboratories of the Manchester University, also a complete Biographical and Bibliographical Record of those who have worked in the Physics Department of the University during the past 25 years.

"The book is excellently got up, and contains a description of the department of physics and its equipment, a short biographical sketch of the Professor with a list of his scientific writings and a well-executed portrait and a record of the career of students and others who have passed through Dr. Schuster's hands. Alumni of Owens will welcome the volume as an interesting link with their alma mater."—*Glasgow Herald*.

"This interesting and valuable contribution to the history of the Manchester University also contains several illustrations, and forms the first of the "physical series" of the publications of the University of Manchester."—*The Times*

"A record of achievement of which no man need be ashamed"—*Westminster Gazette*.

"It is a memorial of which any man would be justly proud, and the University of which he is both an alumnus and a professor may well share that pride."—*Manchester Guardian*.

**PUBLIC HEALTH SERIES.**

No. I. ARCHIVES OF THE PUBLIC HEALTH LABORATORY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Edited by A. SHERIDAN DELÉPINE, M.Sc., M.B., Ch.M., Director of the Laboratory and Procter Professor of Comparative Pathology and Bacteriology. Crown 4to, pp. iv. 451. £1. 1s. net. (Publication No. 12, 1906.)

---

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS**  
**PUBLIC HEALTH SERIES.**

"The University of Manchester has taken the important and highly commendable step of commencing the publication of the archives of its Public Health Laboratory, and has issued, under the able and judicious editorship of Professor Sheridan Delépine, the first volume of a series that promises to be of no small interest and value alike to members of the medical profession and to those of the laity. . . . Original communications bearing upon diseases which are prevalent in the districts surrounding Manchester, or dealing with food- and water-supplies, air, disposal of refuse, sterilisation and disinfection and kindred subjects, will be published in future volumes; and it is manifest that these, as they successively appear, will form a constantly increasing body of trustworthy information upon subjects which are not only of the highest interest to the profession but of supreme importance to the public."—

*The Lancet.*

"It is safe to say that as these volumes accumulate they will form one of the most important works of reference on questions of public health, and ought, at all events, to be in the library of every public authority."—*Manchester Guardian.*

"The volume . . . speaks well for the activity of investigation in Manchester."—*Lancet.*

**THEOLOGICAL SERIES.**

No. I. INAUGURAL LECTURES delivered during the Session 1904-5, by the Professors and Lecturers of the Faculty of Theology, viz. :—

Prof. T. F. Tout, M.A.; Prof. A. S. Peake, B.D.; Prof. H. W. Hogg, M.A.; Prof. T. W. Rhys Davids, LL.D.; Rev. W. F. Adeney, D.D.; Rev. A. Gordon, M.A.; Rev. L. Hassé, B.D.; Rev. Canon E. L. HICKS, M.A.; Rev. H. D. Lockett, M.A.; Rev. R. Mackintosh, D.D.; Rev. J. T. Marshall, D.D.; Rev. J. H. Moulton, D.Litt.

Edited by A. S. 'PEAKE, B.D., Dean of the Faculty.

Demy 8vo, pp. xi. 296. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 9, 1905.)

"The lectures, while scholarly, are at the same time popular, and will be found interesting and instructive by those who are not theologians. . . . The entire series is excellent, and the volume deserves a wide circulation."—*Scotsman.*

"This is a very welcome volume . . . All these lectures were delivered to popular audiences, yet they are far from superficial, and will be found of great value to busy pastors and teachers."—*Christian World.*

"We welcome the volume as a most auspicious sign of the times."

—*Spectator.*

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
THEOLOGICAL SERIES.

"The lectures themselves give a valuable conspectus of the present position of Theological research. . . . They are, of course, not addressed to experts, but they are exceedingly valuable, even when allowance is made for their more or less popular form."—*Examiner*.

"The whole volume forms a very important and valuable contribution to the cause of Theological learning."—*Record*.

"This is a most interesting and valuable book, the appearance of which at the present moment is singularly significant. . . . But it is impossible in a brief review to indicate all the treasures of this rich volume, to read which carefully is to be introduced to the varied wealth of modern Biblical scholarship."—*Baptist*.

"This volume is of the most exceptional value and interest."

—*Expository Times*.

"This is a book of more than common interest."

—*Review of Theology and Philosophy*.

"The writers of these lectures do not attempt to offer more than samples of their wares: but what is given is good, and it may be seen that theology without tests is destitute neither of scientific value nor of human interests."—*Athenæum*.

LECTURES.

- No. I. GARDEN CITIES (Warburton Lecture). By RALPH NEVILLE, K.C. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 1, 1905.)
- No. II. THE BANK OF ENGLAND AND THE STATE (A Lecture). By Sir FELIX SCHUSTER. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 2, 1905.)
- No. III. BEARING AND IMPORTANCE OF COMMERCIAL TREATIES IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY. By Sir THOMAS BARCLAY. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 3, 1906.)
- No. IV. THE SCIENCE OF LANGUAGE AND THE STUDY OF THE GREEK TESTAMENT (A Lecture). By JAMES HOPE MOULTON, M.A., Litt.D. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 4, 1906.)
- No. V. THE GENERAL MEDICAL COUNCIL: ITS POWERS AND ITS WORK (A Lecture). By DONALD MACALISTER, M.A., M.D., B.Sc., D.C.L., LL.D. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 5, 1906.)
- No. VI. THE CONTRASTS IN DANTE (A Lecture). By the Hon. WILLIAM WARREN VERNON, M.A. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 6, 1906.)
- No. VII. THE PRESERVATION OF PLACES OF INTEREST OR BEAUTY (A Lecture). By Sir ROBERT HUNTER. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 7, 1907.)
-

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.**

**CALENDARS.**

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1904-5. Demy 8vo, 1100 pp. 3s. net.  
(Publication No. 17.)

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1905-6. Demy 8vo, 1200 pp. 3s. net.  
(Publication No. 18.)

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1906-7. Demy 8vo, 1300 pp. 3s. net.  
(Publication No. 19.)

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1907-8. Demy 8vo, 1400 pp. 3s. net.  
(Publication No. 28.)

---

The following are in preparation and will be issued shortly :—

**Celtic Series. No. I.**

AN INTRODUCTION TO EARLY WELSH. By the late Prof. J. STRACHAN, M.A., LL.D. Demy 8vo.

This work will comprise a Grammar of Early Welsh with special reference to Middle-Welsh prose. To the grammar will be added selected passages from Early Welsh texts in prose and verse, together with notes and a vocabulary.  
*[In the Press.]*

A GLOSSARY TO THE BLACK BOOK OF CHIRK MANUSCRIPT OF THE WELSH LAWS. By TIMOTHY LEWIS, B.A. Demy 8vo.

This will include the oldest copy of a complete glossary to the "Laws of Howel Dda," contained in the "Black Book of Chirk," and will be based on the photographic facsimile of that manuscript which is about to be published by Dr. J. Gwenogvryn Evans in his collection of Welsh texts.  
*[In Preparation.]*

**Educational Series.**

THE TEACHING OF HISTORY IN GIRLS' SCHOOLS IN NORTH AND CENTRAL GERMANY. A Report by E. DODGE, M.A.  
*[In the Press.]*

---

34, Cross Street, Manchester

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.

Historical Series.

HANES GRUFFYDD AP CYNAN. The Welsh text with translation, introduction, and notes by ARTHUR JONES, M.A., Jones Fellow in History. Demy 8vo. *[In Preparation.]*

THE CROMWELLIAN CONQUEST AND SETTLEMENT OF IRELAND. By ROBERT DUNLOP, M.A., formerly Berkeley Fellow. Demy 8vo.

This work will consist of a series of unpublished documents relating to the History of Ireland from 1651 to 1659, arranged, modernized, and edited, with introduction, notes, etc., by Mr. DUNLOP.

*[In Preparation.]*

Medical Series.

DISEASES OF THE EAR. By W. MILLIGAN, M.D., Lecturer on Diseases of the Ear and Nasal Surgeon to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. *[In Preparation.]*

DISEASES OF THE EYE. By C. E. GLASCOTT, M.D., Lecturer on Ophthalmology, and A. HILL GRIFFITH, M.D., Ophthalmic Surgeon to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. *[In Preparation.]*

HANDBOOK OF NERVOUS DISEASES. By JUDSON S. BURY, M.D., Lecturer on Clinical Neurology and Physician to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. *[In Preparation.]*

---

The following works, though not technically Publications of the University of Manchester, are also issued from the University Press :—

MELANDRA CASTLE, being the Report of the Manchester and District Branch of the Classical Association for 1905. Edited by R. S. CONWAY, Litt.D. Introduction by Rev. E. L. HICKS, M.A. Demy 8vo. Illustrated. 5s. net.

TRANSACTIONS OF THE INTERNATIONAL UNION FOR CO-OPERATION IN SOLAR RESEARCH (Vol. i., First and Second Conferences). Demy 8vo, 260 pp. and plate. 7s. 6d. net.

THE BOOK OF RUTH (Unpointed Text). 6d. net.

SCENES FROM THE *RUDENS* OF PLAUTUS, with a Translation into English Verse. Edited by R. S. CONWAY, Litt.D., Professor of Latin in the University. 6d. net.

---

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

## SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

THE TEACHING OF HISTORY AND OTHER PAPERS. By H. L. WITHERS. Edited by J. H. FOWLER. Crown 8vo, 270 pp. 4s. 6d. net.

"An interesting memorial of a teacher who was a real enthusiast for education."—*The Times*..

"We can cordially commend this little book to the somewhat limited but slowly widening circle who are likely to be interested in educational principles and organization."—*The Guardian*.

A TARDINESS IN NATURE AND OTHER PAPERS. By MARY CHRISTIE. Edited, with Introductory Note and Memoir, by MAUD WITHERS. Crown 8vo, 331 pp. 3s. net.

"The essays upon Thackeray, George Eliot, and R. L. Stevenson in this volume could scarcely be bettered."—*The Guardian*.

"The life-story of a quite remarkable woman—of a woman who used her gifts always to the furthering of all that is sweetest and noblest in life."—*Tribune*.

MUSICAL CRITICISMS. By ARTHUR JOHNSTONE. With a Memoir of the Author by HENRY REECE and OLIVER ELTON. Crown 8vo, 225 pp. 5s. net.

"Without the smallest affectation or laboured attempts at smartness, Mr. Johnstone contrived always to throw fresh light on the matter in hand, and at the same time to present his opinions in a form which could be understood and enjoyed by the non-musical reader."—*Westminster Gazette*.

"Everyone who welcomes guidance as to what is best in music, everyone who watches with some degree of fascination the power of analysis, everyone who reads with a sense of satisfaction English, as it may be written by a master of the craft, should read this book."—*The Musical World*.

MANCHESTER BOYS. By C. E. B. RUSSELL. With an Introduction by E. T. CAMPAGNAC. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

"Mr. Charles E. B. Russell has written a most interesting and thought-compelling book on a subject of almost vital importance."—*Yorkshire Post*.

"Altogether it is an inspiring book."—*Liverpool Daily Post and Mercury*.

---

34, Cross Street, Manchester



This preservation photocopy was made and hand bound at  
BookLab, Inc., in compliance with copyright law.  
The paper is Weyerhaeuser Cougar Opaque  
Natural, which exceeds ANSI  
Standard Z39.48-1984.  
1993



















